BIBLIOTECA NAZIONALE CENTRALE
RB 90
ROMA

RB 90.

R.B.90

THE HISTORY OF ITALY.

A booke exceding profitable to be red: because it intreateth of the affaire of many and diuers common weales, how they haue bene, and now be gouerned.

Imprinted at London in Fletestrete nere to Saint Dunstons Church by Thomas Marshe.

¶ The contentes of this booke.

The description of Italye.

Of the estate of Italie in general.

Abbrigement of the estate of Italye, from the beginnyng vntyl the Romayne empire was vtterly diuided.

¶ The description of Rome, and of the meruayloule antiquitees there.

¶ Of the present estate of Rome.

¶ Abbrigement of the liues of the Romaine bysshoppes

¶ The Venetian estate, and the order of their common weale.

¶ The description of Naples.

¶ The Hystorie of Naples.

¶ The description of Florence.

¶ The estate of Florence.

¶ The description of Genoa.

¶ The estate of Genoa.

¶ The description of Millayne.

¶ The estate of Millayne.

¶ The estate of Mantua.

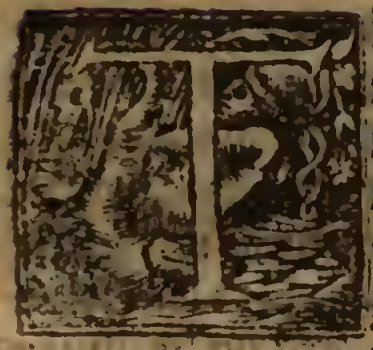
¶ The estate of Ferrara.

¶ The estate of Placentia and Parma.

¶ The estate of Urbine.

BIBLIOTECA NAZ. ROMA

¶ To the righte honourable and myne especiall good lord, John Erle of Warrewike, Vysconte Lisle, knight of the moste noble order of the Garter, lorde great chamberlaine, and highe admyrall of Englande,



Thoughe many wise and learned men have so substancially set forthe the infinite commodities that growe of the readyng of hystoryes, that my wyttes can not attayne to a small parte of the due commendacyon thereof: Yet seinge my travayle at this present hath ben to publish unto our owne nacion in our mother tounge the doynges of straungers, and specially of the Italian nacion, whiche semeth to flourysshe in ciuilitee moste of all other at this daye; me thought I coulde no lesse doe for the incouragyng of theim that shall take this boke in hande, than parcelye reherse what profyte they maye gather by travaylyng therein. First they shall see, upon what litle beginning many great affaires have risen, and how they that have had the power to rule, by usyng their auctorytees well and prudently, have merited immortal fame of honour and preise: and usyng tyrannye and ill gouernaunce, have contrarywyse borne eternall sklander and shame. It encourageth the vertuouse men, by the exaumples that they reade, to encreace in vertue and nobilitee: and

sheweth the beestiale, what the fruyte of their abuses are, and how naughtie doynges haue most commonlye naughtie endyng. It moueth the noble prince to maintaigne peace and iustice, and sheweth the tyranne, what plagues folow of warre and cruelitie: and that thoughe hys tyrannye passe vnplagued in thys worlde (whyche hapned seldome) yet shall his name be hated and cursed in al ages and amongest al nacions, as Nero, Heliogabalus and suche other tyrannes be. It sheweth also howe mutable fortune is, and howe that, whyche hathe ben gotten with extreeme peines, vnmeasurable expences, and vnreasonable effusion of bloudde, hathe ben lost in a moment: and that commonly he that hathe conquered most in warre, at the beste is yet a loser, and finallye, that of diuision, either amongest the nobilytes or the commons, there ensueth bitter destruction of realmes, and subuersion of common wealthes. Where vnto there is none so great a minister as the alteration of auncient lawes and customes.

¶ All these thynges, with infinyte moe, hystories doe so set forthe to the eyes of princes (if they reade theim well) that their hertes shalbe more enclined with peace and iustice to enriche their subiects, and therby procure them selfes glorie, than by murtheryng of innocentes, rauishyng of honest wiues and maidens, burning, spoilyng and destruction of countreis (which are the effectes of warre) to make theim selfes conquerours of that they can not long enioye. For surelye, more praise shall that prince deserue, that leaueth hys realme quiete and wealthie vnto his successoure, than he that for the conquest of other countreis impouerisheth and disturbeth hys owne.

And

¶ And because this lytle worke declareth bothe these extremitees, aswell what a number of beautifull cities haue been edified, and what great countreis haue been enriched by peace and concord, as also how many goodly thynges and wonderful regions haue been destroied by strife and warre: Therefore woulde I wyshe all noble men to reade it, to the ende they may hereof take occasion so honourablye to spende their life tyme, that after their death, they maye shyne in fame for euer.

¶ And knowyng your lordshyp for your excellente feates of chyualrie, bothe by sea and lande, to be suche a one as is hable to iudge, whether mine opinion be good or not, like as your wonderfull knowlage in ciuile orders hathe made you worthy to be no lesse esteemed excellent in counsayle, than as you haue ben tried a most valiaunte capytayne in the warres I therefore coulde finde none, to whom I might so worthilye dedycate my little trauaile as to you: Most humbly beseching your lordshyp to accept it at my poore handes, as the giste of him that wisheth you all health and honour. At London the .xx. daye of September. 1549.

Your good Lordshippes humble at commaundment.

VVylliam Thomas.

The Table of this present Booke, by letter.

Abridgemente of the estate of Italye, from the begynnyng vntyll the Romayne empyre was vtterlye diuyded. folio. 8

Abbridgemente of the lyues of the Romaine Bysshoppes. fol. 41

Abbridgement of the Venetian histories from the edification of the citye to thys daye. 85

Acadaimye in Florence 139
Adoaldus 18
Adrianus. 12
Agiulphus 18
Agostino Barbarico, 110
Agrippa 9
Alaricus king of Gothes. 15
Alba Siluius. 8
Albinus 18
Alberto. 210
Aldeprandus. 20
Aldobrandino. 208
Alfonse kyng of Naples. 66
Alfons adopted heire to quene Johan. 131
Alfonse the seconde. 134
Alfonso. 212
Alexandre Seuerus. 12
Amalasuntha 17
Amulius 9
Ancus Martius 10
Andrea Dandolo. 102
Andrea Contarini 104
Andrea Vendramino 109
Andrea Gritti. 111
Andrea Doria, 185. 186, 187.
Angelo Bartelaco 90
Annates. 63
Antonio Veniero 105
Antonio Grimani 111
Antonio di Leua 200
Antonius Pius 12
Antonius Caracalla. 12
Antharis Flauius 18
Arches of tryumphe. 29
Archadius. 14
Arrigo Dandolo 96
Arno the riuer. 137
Artificers of Italye, 5
Ariolbus. 18
Aristolphus 20
Arthpertus. 19, 20
Ascanius 8
Asprandus. 20
Estate of Mantua 200
Estate of Ferrara 207
Estate of Placentia and Parma. 212
Athalphus 16
Athis or Egiptus Siluius. 9
Attila 16. and 190
Auentinus 9
Augustus. 50
Auogadori. 61
Aurelianus. 13
Azone 191
azo the first and seconde 208
azo the. iii. 209

B.

Bagelardo. 117
Bartholomeo Gradenico. 101
Beginnynge and succesſe of the

of the estate of Millaine. 189.
Belles. 91
Berengarius. 48
Bernabo. 191
Bysshoppes palaice, with Belvedere. 40
Bysshoppe of Rome beseged. 113.
Burgus. 16
Boccatius. 127
Borso. 211.
Bouciquart. 177.
Bridges in Rome. 23
Bridges in Florence. 137
Buildynges in Rome. 41
Buildynges of Venice. 74
Buildyng of Genoa. 163

C.

Cesar. fol. 50
Catus Caligula. 61
Cesar Fregoso. 188
Capi Stilus. 9
Cardinall hattes. 56
Cardynalles sacked and baked. 62
Cardinall Sault. 185
Carlo duca de Angio. 125
Carlo. ii. 126
Carlo. iii. 129
Carpentus. 9
Carus. 13
Castel sante Angelo. 41
Castell Nouo. 113
Carocchio. 122
Castel of Millaine. 189
Cercles. 31
Charles Martell. 45
Charles sonne taken prysoner 126.
Charles the. v. emperour. 16.
Chilperike deposed. 45
Christofore Moro. 108
Circuite of Italye. 1
Citee of Naples gotten by the Normanes. 120
Citee of Urbine. 214
Citta della. 159
Claudius. 11. 13
Colosses and Images. 34.
Cenodus. 12
Commodities of Italy. 1
Common prouision and Charitable deedes in Venice. 82.
Common people. 149
Conrade. 124
Constantius. 14
Constantinus. eodem
Consules. 10
Conduytes of water in Rome 27.
Counsaile of Venice. 78
Corradino. 124. beheaded. 125.
Cortogoli. 184
Cosmo di Medici. 152
Couetousnesse. 134
Crucifee. 96. 98. 124. 125. 126. 208. 209.
Customes in theyr buynge in Venice. 83
Cyprus wonne. 109

D.

Dipho. fol. 18
Decius. 13.
Deodata. 89
Descripcio of Italy. 1.
Descripcion of Rome. 12
Descripcion of Naples. 113.
Descripcion of Florence. 137
Descripcion of Millaine. 187.
Despoertus. 18. 20.
Didius Julius. 12
Dignitees and offyces in Venice. 77

Diocles-

Diocleſianus. 11
Diuidyng of the Empire. 15
Diuiſion. 141
Diſcende. 131
Dominion of Venice. 76
Domenico Leone. 89
Domenico Menicaccio. eo.
Domenico Diſcolo. 93
Domenico Flabenico. eodem.
Domenico Contarini. eod.
Domenico Siluio. eod.
Domenico Michele. 94
Domenico Morosini. 45
Dominion and gouernaunce of Genoa. 161
Domitianus. 11.
Don Ferraudo Gonzaga. 188.200.213.
Donacion of Conſtantine. 14.43.
Doucheimens hault in Venice 111.
Drogone. 116
Duke of Florence dominyon and reuenew. 139
Duke Coſmo. 159

E.

EDificacion of Rome. 9.
Edificacyon and ſucceſſe of the citee of Florence 140.
Edifices in Florence. 137
Election of the Emperoure, whan and by whome it was ordeined. 21
Electours of the empire. 50
Empire deuided. 15.46
Empire chaunged. 48
Ende of the Romaine kynges. 10.
Ende of the Lumbardes reigne. 20.
Ende of the houſe of Normans in Sicile. 121
Ende of the houſe of Sueuia in the dominyon of Naples. 125.
Ende of the hous of Durazza 132.
Ende of the houſe of Arragon in Naples. 135
Emanuel emperoure. 96
Eneas. 8
Eneas Siluius. eod.
Ercole. 221.212.
Ezelino di Romano. 98.

F.

FAcion of Italy. fol. 1
Faunus. 8
Federico. 206.215
Federike. 122. Kynge of Sicilie. 117.135
Feedyng in Italy. 2.
Ferdinando. 133.
Ferdinando Kyng of Spayne 136.
Ferrandino. 135
Fertilitee of Naples. 113
Fier breakyng out of the earth 17.
Florence deſtroyed and redyfyed. 140
Florentines cuſtomes. 138.
Florentynes common wealth conſtituted. 141
Franceſco Maria. 215
Franceſco 204.206.
Franceſco Donato. 112
Francis Petrarcha. 60.127
Francis dandolo. 101
Francis Foſcaro. 106
Francis Sforza. 181,196 108.
Freſco. 209.

Galba Sergius. 11
Galcasso di Montefeltro. 214.
Galeazzo 181.191 193.197.
Galerius 14.
Galienus. 13
Gormaldus 19
Gasparo di Vicomercato. 181
Gates of Rome, 24.
Genfericus 16.
Genfualdus 19
Gentlemen of Italye. 3
Giofrancesco. 205
Giangaleazo 193
Giouanni. 89.91
Giouanni Dandolo 99
Giouanna prima. 127
Giouanna.ii. 130
Giouanni Torrigiant 190
Giouanni 192.197
Giouanni Maria 194
Giustiniano 90
Giudice di ginarcha 169
Godfrey. 117
Gonzaga. 203
Gordianus 13
Gothes 15
Graners and arsenales 36
Gratianus. 14
Grimoaldus. 19
Guelfes and gybelynes faction 141
Guglielmo Ferrabach 116
Guglielmo. 119.120.121. 123.
Guido. 204
Guido conte di Vrbino. 214.
Guido Vbaldo. 215.216.
Gundebalde. 16
Gundibertus 19

Head of Tyber. 23
Helius Pertinax 12
Henrico imperatore. 121.
Hylles in Rome 25
Hyll Testacchio 35
Hippodromus. 36
Hystorye of Naples. 214.
Honorius 14
Hospitalles in Venyce. 82
Hospytalles in florence. 138
Hotte baynes. 113
Hugo Conte de arli. 48
Hunes. fol.15
Hunfredo. 117
Husbandmen of Italye. fol.5.

I.

Iacopo Contarini. 99
Iames Tiopolo. 97
Iano kynge of Cyprus. 177.
Iano fregoso. 184
Ianus 8
Images put out of churches. 44.46.
Ingratitude of people. 175
Iohn Acton. 62
Iohn Gozanza 100
Iohn Gradenico 103
Iohn Delfino eodem
Iohn Mocenigo 109
Iohn Sharpe 149.210.
Iouinianus. 14.
Italyans custoumes and nature fol.6.7.
Iubilye 58.60.
Iulius Cesar fyrst emperoure 105
Iuliano di Medici. 215
Iulius Philippus. 13

Julianus.

Iulianus apostata. 14
Iunipertus, 20

K.

Kindes of marble. 37
Kynges of Naples instituted kynges of Ierusaleu. 122
Kyng alfonse taken pryſoner. 132.

L.

Lwes of Uenyce. 81.88
Ladiſlaus. 103
Laurence di Medici. 155 215
Latinus. 8
Latinus Siluius. 8
Latmpertus. 26
Lewes the.12.kyng of fraunce 135.
Leather coyned for money. 110
Libertee of straungers in Uenyce. 85.
Liberalitie 107
Lionello. 210
Lodouico Moro. 198
Lozenzo Tiepolo. 99
Lozenzo Teiſo. 101
Lucchino. 192
Lucius Tarquinius. 10
Luigi gonzaga. 103
Luigi. 204.205
Luitprandus. 20
Lumbardes. fol.15

M.

Manfredo. 56.124.
Mercinus 12.
Marcello. 88
Marino Morosini. 97
Marino giorgio. 100
Marino faleio. 102
Marco Coznario. 103
Marco Barbarico. 110
Marye. 129
Marcus aurelius antonius. 13.
Martino Torrigiani 190
Matilda. 52.101
Mattea magno. 161
Maurio. 89
Maximus. 12
Maximianus. 16
Merchandiſe of Italye. 2
Merchantes of Italy. 4
Michele Morosini. 105
Michele Steno. 106
Mylayne ſituate 188
Mylaynes naine. 108
Moyza. 208
Morbus gallicus. 135
Murder. 129
Mutio, father to Frauncys Sforza.

N.

Napoleone. 190
Narſes. 17
Naumachie 29.
Nero 11
Nerua. 11
Nicene counſayle 43
Nicolo Trono. 108
Nicolo marcello 109
Nico. 210.211
Nobilitee ſuppreſſed 149
Numitor 9
Numa Pompilius. 10

Obe-

Obelisques. fo.33
Obelerio. 90.
Obietto Fliſco. 182
Obizone. 209
Octauianus Auguſtus. 10
Odo. 215
Odoacrus. 16
Odolasso Falero. 94
Oſo. 88.91
Oſo Baduaro. 92
Oſo Oſcolo. 93
Oto Malipiero. 96
Originall of Mantua. 201
Originall and ſucceſſe of the cites of Ferrara 208.
Otho the firſt. 115
Otho the.ii. eodem.
Otho Lucius. 11
Ottone Oſcolo. 93
Ottone. 199
Ottone Viſconti, eodem.

P.

Paolo Lucio. 87
Paſſerino. 202.
Paſquale Maſpiero. 108.
Patriarke Vitelleſco. 132.
Partharus. 20
Peter kyng of Aragon. 126
Peter Fregoſo. 180
Philippo Torrig. 190.
Philippo Maria. 194. deſcriued. 195
Pietro Gredenico. 91,99.
Pietro Candiano. 92
Pietro Tribuno. eodem.
Pietro Baduaro. 92
Pietro Oſeglo. eodem, 93
Pietro Barbolano. 93
Pietro Polano. 95
Pietro ziani. 97
Pietro Mocenigo. 109
Pietro Lando. 112
Pietro Vnigi. 213.
Picus. 8
Pinamonte. 202
Plegue of peſtilence. 60
Pleaſures of Italie. folio, 2
Plinies death. 113
Policie. 65.164.
Poyches in Rome. 31.
Poore people. 82.
Poyſon that worketh not till a tyme. 185
Practiſe of a prelate. 153
Preſent eſtate of Rome. 37
Prieſtes mariage. 52
Prince Edwarde of Englande 126.
Priſoners in Venice. 81
Probus. 13
Proca. 9.
Practours and treaſure of Venice. 80
Pyllers in Rome. 32
Pyraundes. 34

Q.

Queene Johans huſband ſtrangled. 127
Queene Johan hanged. 129

R.

Rachis or Lachis. 20
Rafael Idorno. 180.
Raumpertas. 20
Raynoldes comming to Naples. 132.
Raufe Duke of Burgoyne. 48.
Rebellion on Sicile. 125.
Realme of Naples. 6.
Remulus. 9

Resorte of straungers into Italia. 1
Reuenew of Uenice. 76.
Richarde kynge of Englande. 163.
Rinaldo. 109.
Rinerizeno. 93
Ruer of Tyber. 21.
Robert. 127
Roberto Guiscardo created Duke. 117
Rodoaldus. 19
Roger. 119. intytled kynge of Sicile. 110
Rome destroied. viii. tymes. 17.
Rome gotten. 130
Romoaldus. 19.
Romulus. 9.
Romulus, firste kynge of Romayns. 9.
Rotharius. 18.

S.

Saincte Peters church. 40.
Sainge of Fuluius. eod.
Saralines comynge into Italye firste. 115.
Saturnus. 8
Sebastian Ziani. 95
Sepulchrum Bacchi. 36
Seruius Tullius. 10
Seuerus. 12
Sicile conquered by the Normayns. 118.
Siluius Posthumius. 8.
Site of Italy. fol. 1
Site of Uenice. 73
Sozdello. 202
Sophia. 17
Supremitee of the Church. 44.
Systrynge and poysonynge of Romayne bysshoppes. 50
slaughter of frenchymen. 125
states of Italy. 6
state of Genoa. 160

T.

Tacitus. 13
Tancredi the nozmain 116.
Tancredi. 113
Tarquinus Priscus. 10.
Teia. 17.
Temperature of Italy. fol. 1
Temperature of Naples. 113
Temple in Rome. 31
Testament broken. 195
Theatres. 36
Thermes in Rome. 28
Theodolinda. 18
Theodoricus. 16
Theodotius. 14. 16
Thomas Beckette. 55.
Thomas Mocenico. 106
Title of the kyngedome of Ierusalem. 126
Title of the seconde lyne of the house of Angio. 128
Titus. 11
Tullus Hostilius. 10
Turke conquered in Italye. 134.
Trade and customes of Genoa. 161
Tratanus. 11
Treasure founde vnder the grounde. 118
Tribuno Veinmo. 93
Tyberinus. 9
Tyberius. 11
Tyrannie. 190

V.

Valla. 43
Valentine Borgia. 215
Valentinianus. 14
Valens. 14
Valerianus 13
Vandales. 15
Varius Heliogabalus. 11
Venetian astate. 73
Vespasianus 11
Vyage into the holy land. 53
Vytale Candiano. 93
Vitale Falero. 94
Vitale michaele. eodem. 95
Viring gallus. 13
Visconti 190
Vitellius. 11
Walles of Rome. 23
Warres of Venice. 81
Wild beastes in florence. 138
Wiues of florence 139
Wiues of mytilyne. 188
Women of Italye. fol. 6
Wonder. 263

Thus endeth the table of this present Booke sette out by Letter.

The Discripcion of Italie.

ITALIE CONTEIGneth in length from Augusta Prestoria vnto Otranto.1020.miles: and in bredth from the ryuer Varo in Prouance, to the riuer Arsia in Friuli (whiche is the brodest place) 410. miles: and in the narowe places, as from the mouthe of Pescara to the mouthe of Tyber.126.miles. So that to compasse it by sea from Varo to Arsia, are.3078. miles, which with the.410.miles by lande, maketh the whole circuite to be.3448. miles. Thus it appeareth, that it is almost an Iland, closed on the east side with the sea Adriaticum and on the southe and weaste with the sea Trirhenum, which is a part of the great sea Mediterraneum. And from the Northe it hathe the mightiest mountaines of al Europe called Alpes, which diuideth it from all other regions.

The circuite of Italye

The facyon of Italye

¶ The facion (as Plinie descryueth it) is lyke vnto an oken leefe with the stalke, but it endeth in maner of the Amazones targatte.

temperature of Italye

¶ It hathe a verye temperate and wholesome ayre, fertile fieldes, pleasaunt vylles, bateful pastures, shadowyng woodes, plentie of all kinde of trees and grenes, haboundaunce of corne, vines, and oliues: and welles,

fayre cattayle, and so many spryngs, fountaines, lakes, ryuers, and hauens, that it is an open lappe to receyue the trade of all countreys: and as it were to offer al men helpe it semeth willingly to put it selfe into the sea.

The cytee of Italye.

¶ It lyeth betwene the fyrste houre and the fyrste of the wynter in maner halfe way betwene the Equinoctiall and the Pole: betwene (I saye) the heate of the Sonne and the colde of the Northe. For the cittee of Venonia, (where the great resort of scholers from all nacions is wonte to be) standeth almost in the herte of Italye, and hath his elenacion .44. degrees: so that deuydynge the quarter from the Equinoctial to the Septemtrion into 90. according to the rule of Cosmographie, and takyng the one halfe therof, which is .45. the difference is lytle to proue that Italie is in the middest betwene the extremitees of hote and colde. And seing than, that temperature is it that most of all other comforteth, nourissheth and mainteineth nature, it must nedes folow, that this being one of the most indifferent regions, must be very pleasaunt delicate and aboundant.

¶ This lyttell discourse I haue made to the intente the wise may the better vnderstand the cause of those thinges, that to my purpose I must hereafter treate vpon.

¶ The commodytees of Italye.

IF I shoulde goe about to discriue vnto you particularly howe commodious the countrey is, aswel to the trafficque of them that lyue by marchaundyse, as to the good lyfe of theim that loue their rest, it shoulde be enough

enough alone to occupie an whole volume, but because I woulde seeme no more tedious in this, than I coueit to doe in all the rest, I saye:

¶ First for merchaundise, Italie as an hert or knotte of these partes on our halfe of the worlde, is the principall place of recourse of all nations that occupie any thinge of importaunce farre from home. For lyke as with vs in England the most merchauntes of the realme resort to London, to vtter their owne wares, and to bye suche other as make for their purposes, euen so they of France of Spaine, of Germanie, and of all other westerlye places, that couet the merchandise of Soria, Ægipt, Cyprus, Candia, Constantinople, and those other easterly partes, as iewelles, drugges, spices, perfumes, sylkes, cotten, suger, malmeseis, and other lyke: resorte moost commonly into Italye with their woulles, clothes, lynnen, lether, metalles, and suche other, to Genoa, Myalaine, Venice, Ancona, Millena, Naples, or to some of those places where as trafficque is vsed: and there meetyng with Iewes, Turkes, Greekes, Moores, and other easterlye merchauntes, sellynge the one they bye the other. Merchaundyse.

¶ Than for pleasure, he that hath money to paye for that he taketh, shall haue in Italye what he can reasonablye deuyse, fyne breade, syngular good wines both stronge and small, flesshe of all sortes bothe wilde and tame, foule of all kindes bothe of water and land, fisshe aswell of the sea as of the freshe water, but especyally suche plentie of delycate fruites, as woulde make a man leaue flesshe, foule and fisshe to eate them: namelye in the sommer. I meane the Melons, Pepons, Pomegra-

nettes, Orenges, Lymmans, Citrõs, and swete grapes: besides theyr sygges, apples, peares, peaches, plommes, and olives, with a thousande other of that sorte. And it is not to be mervailled at, thoughe (as the same goeth) the Italian be a small eater of flesshe. For though here before I have commended the temperature of Italy to be comparable with any other countrey: yet must you understand, that in sommer the sonne is somwhat fervente, and in tyme of that heate, the lyghtnesse of those swete freshe fruites is better to be dygested, than the heavynesse of flesshe or fysshe, whiche woulde not there be so lyghtlye dygested. As I myselfe have proved, that before time I could in maner broke no fruite, and yet after I had bene a whyle in Italie. I fell so in love withall, that as longe as I was there, I desired no meates more, because me thought nothing more wholesome, specially in sommer. And all be it, the heate be (as I have sayde) somewhat fervent, yet it exceedeth not so muche as the hotnesse, as the colde wynter is temperate at the coldest. For at the most the colde there endureth not .iii. monethes of the .xii. and some yeares in maner you shal feele no winter at all.

Fedyng in Italye

Resort of strangers into Italy

The rehersed commodites, with infinite other, to longe here to treate of, together with the bouynge company of the Italyans (who in maner make more of straungers than of theyr owne) doe cause the infinite resort of all nations that continually is sene there. And I thinke verily, that in one region of all the world againe, are not halfe so many straungers as in Italye: specially of gentilmen, whose resorte thither is principally under pretence of studye. For there are diverse famouse

famouse cities, that be priuileged with great liberties for all scholars that come: as Padoa, Bononia, Pauia, Ferrara, Pisa, and others: in euerye one of the whyche, are excellente learned men, waged for the readynge of Philosophye, of the ciuile lawes, and of all the liberall sciences. Besides excellent maisters of musicke to singe and playe on all maner of instrumentes, and the beste maisters of fence at all weapons that can be founde. So that all kindes of vertue maye there be learned: and therfore are those places accordingly furnished, not of suche studentes alone, as most commonly are brought vp in our vniuersities (meane mens children set to schole in hope to lyue vpon hyred learninge) but for the more parte of noble mens sonnes, and of the best gentlemen, that studye more for knowlage and pleasure, than for curiositee or luker. For lightlye there passeth no shrifetide without renninge at the tilte, tourneying, fighting at the barciers, and other lyke feates of armes, handled and furnished after the beste sorte: the greatest doers wherof are scholers.

¶ This last winter lyng in Padoa, with diligente serche I learned, that the noumber of scholers there was little lesse than fiftene hundreth, wherof I dare saye, a thousand at the lest were gentlemen.

Of the Italian customes and nature.

THe inheritance of landes in Italie goth by Cauell kynde, that is to witte, one brother as good parte as an other. So that yf a Conte, (whyche

is as muche to saye as an Earle(haue.xx.sonnes,euery one of theim is called Conte, and the youngeste hathe as good parte in his fathers landes and goodes, as the eldest: vnlesse it be the estates of prynces, as of Mantua, Ferrara, Vrbino, and suche others, which theldest euermore enioyeth. And by this meane it is come to passe, that in processe of time with chaunge from welth to powertee, there be diuers Erles and Marqueses without lande or goodes, reteigning neuertheless the glory of that name to them and theirs for euer.

Gentlmen. What to speake of the gentylmen, that haue whereof worshyppfully to lyue(whyche for the moste parte doe commonly profesle armes) me seemeth that none other nacion is lyke them in maiestie.

Fyrst, to reherse the conformitee of speeche that is amongest theim selues(consyderyng what a number of dyuersitees they haue in their tounge) it is a meruaile, that in maner all gentylmen do speake the courtisane. For notwithstanding that betwene the Florentine and Venetian is great diuersitee in speeche, as with vs betwene a Londoner and a Yorkeshyreman, and likewise betwene the Mylaynese and the Romayne, the Napolitane and the Genouese: yet by the tounge you shall not lyghtlye dyscerne of what parte of the countreye anye gentylman is, because that beynge Chyldren they are broughte vp in the courtisane onely. And generally (a fewe cities excepted) in maners and condicions they are no lesse agreable than in their speache, so honourable, so courteise, so prudente, and so graue withall, that it shoulde seeme eche one of them to haue had a princelye byngyng vp. To his superiour obediente, to his equall

humble

humble, and to his inferiour gentle and courteyse, amiable to a straunger, and desyrous with curtesy to winne his loue.

¶ I graunte, that in the expense or lone of hys money to a straunger he is ware, and would be at no more cost than he is sure either to saue by, or to haue thanke for, wherein I rather can commende hym than otherwyse. But this is out of doubte, a straunger cannot be better entertey gned, nor more honourably entreated than amongest the Italians.

¶ They are verye modest in their apparel, fine in trimmyng of their houses, and exceedyng nete at their table. But aboue all other they are sober of speche, ennemies of yll report, and so tender ouer their owne good name (whyche they call their honoure) that whosoeuer speaketh euyll of one of theim, shall dye for it, yf the partye slaundered may know it, and finde tyme and place to doe it. Whereof there is a vse growen amongest them, that few gentilmen goe abroade vnarmed. And though some in this case doe discommende theym, yet myne opinyon dooeth rather allowe than blame them. For the feare of suche daungers maketh men so ware of theyr tounges, that a man may goe .xx. yeares through Italie without findynge reproche or villanie, vnlesse he prouoke it hym selfe.

¶ And if one gentilman happen to defame another, many times the defamed maketh his defiaunce by a writte called Cartello, and openlye chalengeth the defamer to fight in campe, so that there are seen sometime worthy tryalles betwene them.

¶ And it is true, that many yeares agoe, such contencion hath

on hath growen amongest them, that almoste the whole nation hath been diuided into partakynges, as Guelfi and Ghibellini: imperiall and frenche, with other like: whiche hath bene occasion of much manslaughter, and consequentlye of theyr forsayde continuall vse in wearyng of armure. But at this daye those open contencions are wonderfullye abated, whether it procede of weerinesse or of wysedome I cannot tell.

¶ Finally in one thing I can singlerly commend them, that they woull not lightlye meddle with other mennes matters, and that whan they heare ill reporte, they doe theyr best to couer the slaunder, saying that no man liueth without faulte: or with some other suche reason. But like as I could recken in the Italians commendacion many thinges more than are here rehersed, euen so on the other syde if I were disposed to speake of vice, I might happen to fynde a number as ill as in anye other men: whyche are better vntouched than spoken of. For whereas temperance, modestye, and other ciuile vertues excell in the number of the Italian nobilitee, more than in the nobilitee of anye other nation that I knowe: so vndoubtedly the fleshely appetite with vnnatural heate and other thinges in them that be vicious, dooe passe all the termes of reason or honestye.

¶ And yet it is not to be forgotten, that these gentilmen generallye professe three thynges: the fyrste is armes, to maintesgne withall his honour, the seconde is loue, to shewe him selfe gentil and not cruel of nature: and the thyrde is learning, to be hable to know, to vnderstande, and to vtter his opinion in matters of weight.

Merchantes

¶ The principall merchantes are for the most part gentilmen.

tilmen . For whan there be of one house. iii. or. iiii. bretherne: lyghtly one or two of theim dispose them selfes to merchaundyse. And if they happen not to deuide theyr fathers patrimony and substaunce (as manye tymes they dooe not) than doe the Merchauntes trauayle aswell for the wealth of theyr bretherne as theyr owne: for all renneth in common, be it gayne or losse. In deede theyr outwarde profession agreeth not wyth the gentylmen before rehersed. For they carye nother weapon nor armure, but doe what they can to liue in peace: not onely serching the trades of al countreis with their merchaundise, but also occupying at home the most substancyall fermes and possessyons by theyr factours, as hereafter more plainely it followeth. And because these merchauntes haue nothing the lesse reputacion of nobilitee, for theyr trade of merchaundise, therfore it followeth that there be suche numbers of wealthy men in that countrey, as the like is not to be found any other where. For in dyuers cyties of Italye it is no meruaile to see. xx. persones in a Citee woorthe. 100000. crownes a peece and vpwardes.

¶ As for the artificers I haue nothyng to saye: sauyng that for the most part thei are the finest woorkemen and best inuentours of all other, and are so wel payed for it, that many of theim lyue as well as they that haue standyng lyuinges: and grow sometimes vnto great wealth and richesse, but not lightly in two or thre descentes vnto any reputacyon of nobylitee. Artificers.

¶ The husbandmen are of all handes oppressed. For in the countrey there dwelleth no man of substaunce. All the gentilmen and other that are wealthy, dwell in Husbandmen

the walled cytees and townes, leauynge the villayges, fyeldes and pastures in theyr tenauntes handes, not to ferme at certaine rent as we doo in Englande, but to the halfes, or to the thyrde of all grayne and fruyte as the grounde is fertile or barayne. And the poore tenaunt is bound to tyll, sow and housbande the grounde at hys owne coste and charge. So that the Landlordes parte cometh clere wythout dysbursyng of a penye. And at the harueste and vintaige the Landlorde sendeth a man of his for his parte, who fyrste taketh hys choyse of the grayne, wyne, oyle, and fruyte, and than leaueth the reste to the tenaunte as hys parte aryseth to. And manye tymes yf the landelorde be cruell, whan he cannot sell hys thynges at hys owne pryce, than forceth he his tenaunt to bryer it for hym, and to pay for it, not as he can sell it, but as the landelorde woull. By reason wherof the poore man is brought so low, that he is not hable sometyme to fynde breade of Zorgo (a very vyle grayne) to feede hys poore chyldren wythal.

¶ And because I haue here named Zorgo, me thinketh it meete to tell, that in Italie groweth manye sortes of graine, as this Zorgo, Meglio, Segala, and .xx. suche other, whyche cannot be expressed by any Englyshe names, because in Englande there is no kynde of suche grayne. All whych serue to make course breadde for the poore people, and also for the staple of vytayles in stronge holdes. For the breadde made therof (specially of Meglio) woull endure a neumber of yeres vncorrupted. And in lyke maner they haue certaine kindes of other graine, that in generall are called Legumi (as we were wonte to call peasen, lenten stuffe) where-

of they

of they vse all the yere longe to make theyr potages.

¶ Finally in the vyllages are many faire houses made onely for the owners passetime against the heate of the sommer. For than dooe they habandon the cities and goe vnto those houses for a moneth two or three, where vnder the freshe herbes, hedges and boowes, amongest the delicate fruites they triumph in as muche pleasure as maye be imagined. And for the most part eche man hath his make: with some instrumentes of musicke, and suche other thynges as serue for hys recreacyon. And yf euer the tenaunt haue good daye, than lycketh he his lyppes of hys maysters leanynges.

Women.

¶ As for the women,
Some be wonders gaie,
And some goe as they maye.
Some at libertee doe swymme a flote,
And some woul' faine but they cannot.
Some be meerie, I wote wel why,
And some begyle the housbande, with finger in the eie.
Some be maryed agaynst theyr will,
And therfore some abyde Paydens skyll.
In effect they are women all,
Euer haue been and euer shall.

¶ But in good earnest the gentilwomen generally, for gorgeouse atyre, apparayle and Jewelles, exceede (I thynke) all other women of oure knowen worlde. I meane as well the courtisanes as the maryed women. For in some places of Italye, speciallie where churchemen doe reigne, you shall fynde of that sorte of women in riche apparaile, in furniture of household, in seruice, in horse and hackeney, and in all thinges that apper-

¶ The present names.	¶ The auncient.
Abruzzo,	Frentani,
	Pelligni.
	Marrucini.
	Vestini.
	Precutii.
	Marsi.
Valle Beneuentana.	Samnites.

¶ As for that part of the Duchie of Mylaine that the emperour hath, it lieth in Lumbardie auncientlye called Gallia Cisalpina, for the most parte on that syde of the riuer Pó, that was called Transpadana.

The bisshop of Rome hath for his parte, the cytee of Rome, wyth these countreys folowynge.

¶ The present names.	¶ The auncient.
Parte of (Campagnia.)	Latium,
Parte of (Maremma.)	
Parte of Tuscane.	Hetruria.
The Duchie of Spolett.	Vmbria,
Marca D'Ancona.	Piceni.
Romagnia.	Flaminia,
	Emilia,

The Citee of Bononia.

The Venetians for theyr parte haue the Citee of Venice with those townes in and about their marish called la Contrada di venetia, la Marca Triuigiana, and a great part of Lumbardy, auncietly called Gallia Cisalpina on the same syde of the Pó, that was called Trans-

padana. And parte of the countrey Iſtria.

The common wealthe of Genoa, haue the countrey about theim nowe called, Il Genoueſato and auncyentlye Liguria.

Tuſcane, auncientlie called, Hetruria, is deuided into diuers dominions, whereof a ſmall parte the byſhop of Rome hathe, but the greateſt is the Duke of Florence, who hath .vii. citees vnder him: And than there be two common wealthes, Siena and Lucca, whoſe territories are not greate.

The Duke of Ferrare hath parte of Romagnia, and parte of Lumbardie.

The Duke of Mantua is all in Lumbardie.

And the Duke of Vrbine is betweene Marca d'Ancona and Tuſcane, whoſe people are called of Plinie Metaurenſi.

The Citees of Parma and Placentia in Lumbardy haue bene of late tranſpoſed from the churche vnto the eſtate of a Duchye, but nowe it is deuyded agayne; as hereafter you ſhal perceiue.

Now here is to be noted, that euery perticuler prince and common wealthe of Italye, within hys owne dominion, accompteth him ſelfe abſolute lorde and kyng, and lyueth vpon the cuſtomes, tares and tallaiges that he raiſeth of hys ſubiectes. For lightlye they haue littell or no landes at all of theyr owne. And generallye they procede all together by the ciuile lawes, and are ſo diligent in the adminiſtracion of iuſtice, ſpecially againſt murderers and theues, that I thinke no countrey more quiete than it: the Realme of Naples, and ſome part of the Romaine territory excepted, where many times

nye tymes happeneth muche robbyng by the wales.

An abbridgemente of the state of Italie, from the beginninge vntill the Romaine Empire was vtterly deuided.

After the generall floudde remaygned no moe but Noe, hys iii. Sonnes and theyr wyfes, betwene whom it should seeme the whole worlde was deuided. Sem toke the Easte parte, Cham, the south, and Iafet the weast. Some write that Iafet was the same Ianus that fyrst reigned in Italie, and some that Janus was Iafettes Sonne. But whether so it be, this Janus was euer taken for father of the gods, and was peinted with two faces, either because he was father of two nacions, the Greekes and Italians, or els because the moneth of January (whiche hath two respectes, one to the beginninge, and an other to the ende of the yeare) toke name of hym. While this Ianus reygned in Italie, Saturne beyng chased out of the realme of Candia by his soonne Jupiter, came in a maner naked vnto him, and Janus not onely receiued hym: But also gaue hym the halfe of his dominion. For memorie wherof either of theim builded a Cytee to hys owne name, that is to wete Ianicula and Saturnia. From Janus vnto Numitor

mitor were.xvi.kynges of the Latines, whose names, with the yeres of theyr reygne, hereafter folow.

1 Ianus.

2 Saturnus.

3 Picus, beyng a great talker, was therfore feygned of the poetes to be conuerted into a pie.

4 Faunus, was after worshypped for a God of the woodes.

5 Latinus chaunged the name of his people from Laurentini to Latini, and gaue hys daughter Lauinia to Eneas the Troyane, promysed before vnto Turnus, sonne of kynge Daunus.

6 These.b. kynges reigned about.200. yeres.

Eneas maryed the daughter of Latinus, and after hys death, reygned.iii. yeres, and buylded the cytee Lauinia.

7 Ascanius, sonne of Eneas and of Creusa, kinge priamus daughter, reygned.38. yeares, and buylded Albalonga, to the whych he brought his fathers idolles called the gods Penates, but they of them selfes tourned, iii. tymes backe agayne to Lauinia.

Siluius Posthumius second son of Eneas, and begotten on Lauinia, reigned.xvix. yeares. Of whom all the latine kynges afterwardes surnamed theym selfes Siluij: & after some authours he was father to Brutus, that firste named this Realme Britayne, and that slewe his owne father by mischaunce, which thynge Polidorus Virgilius doeth not graunt.

9 Eneas Siluius reigned.31. yeares.

10 Latinus Siluius reigned.50. yeres.

11 Alba Siluius, reigned.39. yeres. and builded Alba,

whyche

whiche he made hys royall Citee: but after it was destroyed by Tullus Hostilius. Of that citee descended those that to this day are called Albanesi, though they of their owne original holde diuers opinions.

Athis or Egiptus Siluius, reigned. 24. yeres. 12

Capi Siluius reigned. 28. yeres, and builded the ci- 13
tee of Capua.

Carpentus reigned. 13. yeres. 14

Tyberinus reigned. 9. yeres, of whom the riuer that 15
renneth through Rome was first named tyber: by reason he was drowned in the same: for before it was called Albula.

Agrippa reignsd. 40. yeres. 16

Remulus reigned 19. yeres, and was slaine with a 17
thunderbolte.

Auentinus, reigned. 38. yeares, and was slayne in 18
battaile on the hill Auentine, and buried there: wherof that hill toke his name, thoughe Varro sayeth that the name proceded of the sight of certaine birdes.

Proca reigned 23. yeres, and ordeined by testament, 19
that of his two sonnes the one should haue his realme, and the other his treasure, so that theldest toke the treasure, and the yongest the dominion.

Amulius reigned. 24. yeres, and chased his elder bro- 20
ther Numitor out of his realme, because he had learned by diuination, that one of his brothers descente shoulde expel him out of his astate. Wherefore he slewe hys nephew Sergistus, & put his neece Rhea into a religion of virgines called Vestales, where at the end of. vii yere she was gotten with childe by an vnknowen man, and brought forth at one burden two sonnes Romulus

and Remus with the which Amulius was so offended that he not onely caused the mother to be buried quicke accordynge to the lawe, but also commaunded the two childzen to be throwē into Tyber, so that they were left on the banke, and there fed by a she woulfe (as the poetes feigne) but the trouth of the hystorie is, that they were founde by a shepherde, whose wife (for hir beauty and licencious liuinge) was called Lupa, and so taken and nourysshed til they grew vnto suche yeres, that they reuenged theim selfes, slew Amulius, and made theyr graundefather Numitor kynge.

21 Numitor reigned not fully one yere til Romulus and Remus together found the meane to slea him, and than builded the citee of Rome. Before whyche tyme these Latine kynges had reigned in all about. 620. yeres.

The edyfication of rome. 4450

After the Citie was buylded, the two bzetherne so contended for geuyng the name, and for the dominion, that Remus was slayne.

The fyrste kynge of the Romaynes.

1 Romulus than reigned. 38. yeres, and created. 100. senatours for the rule of the common wealth. And within 4. yeres after the edification of the citee, because the inhabytauntes (beynge men assembled of dyuers nacions) had no women to mainteine succession, he deuised sacrifices and plaies, to the whyche the Sabines aswel men as women resorted. So that by order of Romulus all the Sabine maydens, that came to the feast, were taken and maryed amonge the Romaynes. Wherupō the Sabines made warre against Romulus and procured diuers other of theyr neighbours to doo the lyke, but the Romaine preuailed againste them all. Finally as he perused his souldiers on a day in a great

tempest

tempest, he was stricken wyth a thunderbolte, and because he could neuer more be heärde of, the Romaynes imagined, he was ascended to heauen, and therfore worshypped hym as a God.

¶ Numa Pompilius reigned.41.yeres, and kepte the citee in peace, and because the people thorowghe theyr passed continual warres were become in maner wilde, he therfore entroduced religion and gods among them, and so brought theym to ciuilytee. 2

Tullus Hostilius reigned.33.yeres, and conquered the citee of Alba, whych he rased to the earthe, and at laste bothe he and his house were burned with thunder. 3

Ancus Martius reigned.xxiiii.yeares, and subdued the Latines, with dyuers other people about Rome. 4

Tarquinius Priscus reigned.37.yeares, he doubled the noumber of senatours, and after he had vāquisshed the Sabines, entred triumphauntly into Rome, but at last he was slayne by the sonnes of Ancus Martius. 5

¶ Seruius Tullius reigned.34.yeres, he ordeined firste the paiment of tares, and thereby founde that he had at that tyme in Rome fourescore and foure thousand persons, and was slayne at last by the procurement of hys sonne in law Tarquine the proude. 6

¶ Lucius Tarquinius reigned.35. yeares, he was the fyrst that inuented prisons and tourmentes, and by reason of the odious acte that his sonne dyde in enforsyng the chast Lucretia, wyfe of Collatinus (who therfore slew hir selfe) he and all hys were exiled oute of Rome, and the astate chaunged from kynges to consules, after that the kynges had reigned aboue.230.yeres. 7

The ende of the Romaine kings.

Than dyd the Romains ordeine two Consules remo- Consules.

ueable from yere to yere. The fyrſt were Lucius Iunius Brutus, & Lucius Tarquinius Collatinus, houſband to the dead Lucretia: vnder whych order of Conſules (a few chaunges excepted) the Romaynes maintaigned theyr common wealth, well nere. 500. yeares: and ſo preuailed in conqueſtes ouer the worlde, that none other monarchie is to be compared vnto theyrs: nor almoſt ſo many other wooꝛthy men to be read of in al the hiſtories wꝛytten, as were founde in that Citee for the time: as he that readeth Liuie ſhall ſee. But becauſe the onely wꝛiting of their names wold occupie a greater part of my boke than ſhould be requiſite to my purpoſe, I ſhall beſeche all gentill readers to be contented that I referre theim ouer vnto the Romaine hiſtories, whych are common to the whole worlde.

¶ Finally, aboute. 700. yeares after the edifficacyon of Rome, and. 47. before the comyng of Chꝛiſte, the libertee of the Romaine common wealth ceaſed, by reaſon that Iulius Cæſar, after the death of Pompeius, hauyng quieted the cyuile contencions, tooke on hym by force the whole Empyre, and had at hys commaundement the greateſt part of all the worlde. From whom vnto the tyme of Conſtantine the fyrſte, there reigned, 38. Emperours, as by theyr names hereafter it appeareth, and they all kepte theyr principall ſeate in Rome, as the head citee of theyr monarchie.

The firſte Emperoure.

1 Iulius Cæſar, reigned in all not fullye. v. yeares, for Brutus & Caſſius, with diuers other ſenatours con-
2 ſpired againſt him, and ſlew him in the ſenate houſe.

¶ Octauianus Auguſtus reigned. 56. yeares, and vi. moncthes, but the firſt. xii. yeres he had Marcus Anto-

nius

nius & Lepidus as parteners of the empire, till by force, with consente of the senate, he subdued them bothe: and because he was happie in his enterprises, the senatours surnamed him Augustus. In the. 42. yere of his reigne, our Sauiour Christ was borne.

¶ Tyberius, son in lawe vnto Octauian, reigned. xxiii. yeares. In the. xviii. yere whereof Christe suffred hys passion, and Pilate wrote vnto Tyberius of the miracles that he had doen, wherfore Tiberius commaunded he shoulde be worshipped as a God: but the senatours woulde not graunte vnto it, because he had proclaimed it without theyr consentes. 3

¶ Caius Caligula reigned. iii. yeres and. x. monethes. A man of so vil liuynge, that he shamed not to companye fleshely with his owne sisters, and was slayne by hys owne souldiours. 4

¶ Claudius reigned. xiii. yeres and. viii. monethes, and was poysoned. Some write, that the seconde yere of Claudius reigne, Peter the apostle came to Rome, and there continued. xxv. yeares after. Whyche other some doe disallow, groundyng them vpon Peters age, that reckenyng the time, it was impossible Peter should liue so longe after Christes passion. 5

¶ Neroe reigned. xiiii. yeres and. vii. monethes, whose customes were odiouse to the whole worlde. He kylled his mother, hys wyfe, his mayster Seneca, and dyuers other excellent men: so that his owne souldiers rebelled agaynste hym and the whole Senate condemned him: wherefore he fledde, and because he coulde not escape, desperately slewe hym selfe. 6

¶ Galba Sergius reigned but. vii. monethes, by reason 7

that his nert ſucceſſour laye in waite for hym, and ſlew him in the baines.

8 Otho Lucius reigned ſcarſely.iii.monethes, tyll he was ouercome by his nexte ſucceſſour, ſo that throughe deſpayre he ſlew hym ſelfe.

9 ¶ Uitellius reygned but.viii. Monethes. For the Romaine armie, that than was in the eaſt parties, elected Ueſpaſian emperoure. So that in deſpite therof Uitellius chaſed Sabinus Ueſpaſians brother with diuers into the capitol, and there ſet fyre on theim. Wherefore Ueſpaſian came ſtreight to Rome, toke Vitellius, made hym to be drawē through the ſtretes, & hewen to peces.

10 Ueſpaſianus reigned.x.yeares, and reduced the cuſtomes and lawes into a better order amonge the people, whiche by Nero and the other Emperours after hym were muche corrupted, and beganne the Amphiater, now called Colliſeo. And this was he that deſtroyed Jeruſalem in fulfillyng of Chriſtes prophecie.

11 Titus, ſonne to Ueſpaſianus, reygned.ii. yeres and ii.monethes after his father, and was a verye gracious Prynce.

12 Domitianus reigned.xv.yeres & .v.monethes, he was brother vnto Titus, but lyke Nero in condicyons, for he delited in vnnatural vices, and in cruel death of men, ſo that he ſlew diuers ſenatours, perſecuted lerned men and Chriſtians, had ill ſucceſſe in his warres, and finally through conſpiracie was ſlayne.

13 Nerua reigned one yere and.iiii.monethes, and was the fyrſt ſtraunger (that is to wete no romayne borne) that euer was made Emperour.

14 Traianus adopted ſon vnto Nerua and a Spaniard borne,

borne, reigned.xi.yeres and.vi. Monethes, so benigne and courteise a prynce, that for a prouerbe, men vsed to say, God make the happier than auguſt, and better thã traiane. For being sometime aduertiſed of his frẽds, that he vsed him selfe to much familiarly, he answered, that a prince ought to be vnto his subiectes such as they should be to hym: and geuyng the swoorde to a Pretor, that he had newly made, he sayde, vse this against mine enemies, but see the cause be iuſt, and if I deale vniuſtly, than spare not me: He prospered muche in hys warres, and greatly augmented the Romaine empyre.

Adrianus reigned.xxi.yeres, the moſt parte in peace, 15
for that was his ſtudie. He was wel learned, and perely wrote a pronoſticacion, he builded a notable sepulchre: wherupon Caſtel. S. Angelo nowe ſtandeth. And in his time there arose vppe a falſe Meſſias among the Iewes, whyche Adrian ouercame with muche a doe.

Antonius Pius adopted sonne vnto Adrian reygned 16
xxiii.yeres, so gentyl a prince, that all the worlde loued hym. For he was wonte to saye, he had rather preſerue one of his citesins, than deſtroy a.1000. of his enemies

Marcus Aurelius Antonius reigned.xix.yeares and 17
one moneth. At the firſt his brother Lucius Uerus was ioigned with hym, but he lyued not longe. This Marcus was an excellente Philoſopher, wrote dyuers good bokes, & prospered in the warres, where finally he died.

Commodus, son to Marcus Aurelius reigned.13.yeres 18
more lyke in condicions vnto Nero, than to his father, so that at laſt he was both poyſoned and ſtrangled.

Helius was surnamed Pertinax, because he toke the 19
empire on him in maner againſt his wyl, & reigned not vi. mone-

bi.monethes, but that hys nexte succeſſour cauſed him to be ſlaine.

20 ¶Didius Julianus reigned not fullye .bii. monethes, for his next ſucceſſour came againſt him dyſcoumfyted his armie, toke him, and cauſed him to be beheaded.

21 ¶Seuerus reigned .xbiii. yeres, and reſtored muche the Romaine Empyre from the decay that it was fallen in by his predeceſſours tyme, proſpered much in his warres, and dyed in the citee of Yorke: where (it is wryten) he made a dyche wyth a walle full of toures and baſtilions from one ſea to the other. 132. miles of length

22 Antonius Caracalla reigned .bi. yeres, he cauſed his brother Geta to be ſlaine, maried his ſtepmother Iulia, vſed muche tyrannye, and was at laſte ſlaine by one of his owne ſouldiours.

23 Macrinus with his ſon reygned one yere, and were both ſlayne.

24 Marius Heliogabalus reigned .iiii. yeres, ſo abhominable a man of liuynge, that after he had tryed all the waies of carnall vice, he cauſed hys owne members to be cut of, in hope to chaunge hys kynde. Wherfore hys owne ſouldiours ſlewe him, drewe his carcaſſe a longe the ſtretes, tyed a ſtone aboute his necke, and ſo threwe him into Tyber.

25 Alexander Seuerus reigned .xiii. yeres, ful of vertue and good gouernaunce: but becauſe he was ſeuere in punyſshynge hys ſouldyours offences, they rebelled agaynſte him, and ſlewe him.

26 Maximinus reygned .iii. yeres, and becauſe he was created of the armie, without the Senatours conſente, therfore did the ſenate ordeine new emperours againſt

hym

hym, so that his owne soudiours slewe him.

Gordianus reigned. vi. yeres, and prospered much in 27
his warres, but at last for lacke of vittayles, the armie rebelled against him, and elected his nexte successoure Emperour, by whose order Gordianus was slayne.

Iulius Philippus with his sonne reigned. vii. yeres 28
and were bothe christened, but finally they were slayne by procurement of theyr next successour.

Decius with his sonne reigned. ii. yeres and. iii. mo-
nethes, a great persecutour of the christian religion. In 29
his time the Gothes first assailed the Romaine empire, and passed the riuer of Danubie, where Decius and hys sonne mette with theym, and in the battayle were bothe slayne.

¶ Hirtus Gallus with his sonne reigned. ii. yeares and 30
were slaine both of theyr owne army, as they were go-
yng against Emilianus, that than woulde haue vsur-
ped the Empyre.

Valerianus with his sonne Galienus, reigned. xb. ye-
res. But Valerian in the. b. yere was taken in battaile 31
against Sapor kynge of Persia, who put oute his eies, and vsed hym alwayes for his foote stole whan he went to horsebacke: and Galienus became so vicious, that he was faine to flee from Rome, and finally was slaine of hys owne men.

¶ Claudius elected by the senate, reigned one yere and
ix. monethes, fought against the Gothes and Germai- 32
nes, and discoumfited bothe theyr powers, but he sicke-
ned shortly and dyed: Wherupon the armie elected hys brother Quintillianus Emperoure, who within. xvii. dayes after was slayne.

¶ Aurelianus reigned.v.yeres and.vi.monethes, reco-
33 uered a noumber of regions that his predeceſſours had
loſt, and was ſo proſperouſe in the warres, that Eutro-
pius compareth him vnto Alexander the great, or Cæ-
ſar . But at laſt he was ſlaine through craſte of one
of hys owne ſouldiours.

¶ Tacitus reigned not fully.vi.monethes, but dyed of
34 the feuer. And than was his brother Florianus elected,
but he liued lytle more than.ii.monethes.

Probus reigned.vi.yeres.iiii.monethes, he recou-
35 red France, ouercame Saturninus and Proculus, that
had made theim ſelfes Emperours, and fynallye was
ſlayne of hys owne ſouldiours.

¶ Carus with his two ſonnes reigned.ii.yeares, and
36 achieued diuers worthy enterpryſes. But his ſon Cari-
nus became ſo great a tyranne, and ſo vicious withal,
that he was compared to Nero, and at laſt ſlayne of his
owne ſouldyours.

¶ Diocleſianus reigned.xx.yeres, a greate perſecutour
37 of the chriſtian religion, becauſe reaſon perſuaded him,
that where as diuerſitee of opinions contynued, there
coulde be no peace, but perill of commocyons . And
becauſe he thought not him ſelfe able to rule the whole
empire alone, he ioygned Maximianus with hym: and
either of theim made a deputie, Diocleſianus toke Ga-
lerius, and Maximianus toke Conſtantius. Finally
whan they had brought the empire to a good ſtay. Dio-
cleſian & Maximian both renounced their eſtates and
became priuate, though Maximian would gladly haue
taken it vpon him againe, to haue exalted his ſon Max-
entius. Wherfore his ſonne in law Conſtantine cauſed

hym

hym to be slayne.

Galerius with Constantius reigned together.ii. yeres,and deuided the empire betwene theym: Galerius had the east parte,and Constantius the west.Constantius,husband to the Queene Eleyn,died in Boyke,and Galerius,beynge fallen sicke,slew hym selfe. Neuertheles er he dyed Maxentius had gotten the Romaine souldiours called Pretoriani on hys parte,and so blurped the name of Emperoure.Against whom Galerius first sent his capitaine Seuerus, and afterwards Licinius,but they preuailed not,for Maxentius contynued til the commyng of Constantine to Rome, who foughte with him,and so discomfited him,that in fleing he was drowned in Tyber. 38

CONstantitinus the fyrste, reduced the Romaine astate to tranquillitee,and toke Licinius as compagnion in the empire:to whom he gaue hys owne syster in maryage. But as discorde is common amonge princes,so it happened, that Licinius rebelled against Costantine,and being ouercome,was deposed, and(as some write)slayne. So that Constantine reygned alone,the tyme of whose reygne in all was .xxx. yeres and.x.monethes. He was conuerted to the Christian fayth by bisshoppe Siluester,vnto whome (as the clergie holde opinion)he gaue his royal seate in Rome, with auctoritee to vse all the imperyall rytes and honours,and made him head of the Christian church:and therupon remoued his imperiall seate from Rome to Constantinople:whych citee he than had newly reedified. And though authours agree that he in deede builded Constantinople,and chaunged it from the auncient 309. 318

name, which was Bizantium, yet many allow not Cõstantines donacion to Siluester to be true, but say, that some one of those bisshops of Rome longe after Siluester, that vsurped the name of Peters successour, to enlarge theyr creadite and auctoritee, and to maintaigne theyr pompe, inuented this donacion. So that though the Constantine or his successours remoued theyr dwelling from Rome to Constantinople, yet did thei neuertheles reteigne continually bothe the dominion of Rome and also the name of the Romaine empyre, vntil the takyng of Rome by Alaricus kynge of the Gothes, betweene whose commynge and the reigne of Constantine were these.ix. emperours folowynge.

Donacyon of constantine.

1 339 COnstantinus, Constantius, & Constans sons of the first Constãtine, and had the empire deuided betwene thẽ. But Constantine, not cõtented with his parte, moued warre to Constans, & was slaine, and Constans at length was also slaine by treasõ of one of his owne capitaines named Magnẽtius: who vsurped the empire, and after many battailes, beyng ouercome by Conctantius, at last slewe him selfe. So that Constantius remaigned emperour alone, the time of whose reigne, with his bretherne togethers, was. xxiiii. yeres.

2 363 CIulianus surnamed Apostata, because being borne a Christian he became a paynem, reigned. ii. yeres. First he rebelled agaynst ẽ hys vncle Constantius, that had made hym Cæsar, and after his death (beyng made emperour) he persecuted cruelly the christian religion, and at length was slayne in battaile againste the Persians.

3 365 CIouintanus reigned. vii. monethes, restored the faith of Christ, and was constreigned of necessitee to graunt

vnto

vnto the king of Persia a great part of Mesopotamia. Whych was the fyrst tyme that euer the Romaynes or any Emperoure consented to diminisshe the Romayne dominion.

Valentinianus reigned.xii. yeares, and was a good Christian. 4 366

Valens reigned.iiii.yeres, fauoured muche the Arrian secte, and makyng warre agaynste the Gothes in Thracia, was discoumfyted, besieged, and burned. 5 378

Gratianus reigned.vi.yeres, and he with hys sonne were both slaine by treason of Maximus and Arbogastus theyr owne cappytaynes. 6 382

Theodosius reigned.xi.yeares, subdued the Gothes, and discoumfited the traitours Maximus and Arbogastus, that vsurped the Empyre, the fyrste of theim was slayne in the fyelde, the other for despayre slewe hym selfe: and so he reuenged hys predecessours death. 7 388

Archadius and Honorius reigned together.xiii.yeres, and than dyed Archadius. 8 407.

Honorius after his brothers death reigned.xv.yeres, in whose time Alaricꝰ, before named king of ꝑ Gothes, prouoked through treasō of Stillicoh themperours capitaine a Vandale borne, tourned his armie, that than was goyng into Fraunce, against the Emperour, & so ouerrennyng all Italie, at length besieged Rome, and toke it rather by famyne than force. And here beganne the manifest decaye of the Romayne empyre. For from this daye forward those Septentrional nacions, that is to wete, the Gothes, the Vãdales, the Hunes & Lumbardes, with dyuers others, triumphed not onely ouer Italy, but also ouer Fraunce, Spayne and parte of Af- 9 411 412

Gothes. Vandales Hunes Lumbardes.

frike, in suche wyse, that though many of theyr armyes were discoumfited by diuers of the emperours capitaines and others: yet in processe of tyme they myngled theim selfes so with the other nacions, that they were no more knowen for strangers, but became Italians, Spanyardes, Frenchemen, and so forthe.

After this first destruction of Italy, wyth the takyng and spoylyng of Rome, the common people beganne to crie out, saiyng: that syns they lefte the worshyppynge of theyr auncient gods, and had embraced the new faith of Christ, all these afflictions through vengeance of the gods were fallen on theim: so that many doubted whether it were good to beleue or not. But surely, the remouyng of the imperyal seate from rome to Constantinople, was the greatest occasion of the Romaine empyres decaye. For whan the emperours beganne to dwel in Greece, and to leaue Italy, now and than deuiding the empyre, one to rule in the orient, and an other in the occident, theyr auncient reputacio declined so much, that theyr owne priuate capitaines enterprysed many times not onely to rebel, but also to vsurpe the name of emperours. By reason whereof it came to passe, that within the space of .80. yeres there entred .vii. straunge kinges into Italie, with so puissaunt armies, that they put eyther the whole countrey, or at least a great part thereof to sworde and fyre.

Deuyding of the empyre.

1 412 FYrst Alaricus, kynge of the Gothes before named, after he had gotten rome by such kaunyne, that many mothers did eate theyr owne children, ouerrane all Campaigne, the realme of Naples, and the lande of Brutii, and finally dyed in the citee of Cosenza.

After

¶After whom succeded his kynsman Athaulfus, that marted Placidia sister of the emperour Honorius, taken amonge the prisoners of Rome. so wise a woman, that whan hir husbande folowyng the trade of Alaricus, determined to goe to Rome, and to rase it to the earth, she with faire wordes dissuaded hym, and broughte hym to accorde with hir brother, in suche wyse that throughe the emperours procurement, he with all his nacyon of Gothes lefte Italye, and went to conquere Spayne, where in the citee of Barcelona he was of hys owne folke traiterously slayne.

The second was Auila kyng of the Hunes, who with an infinite number of people entred into Italy, and put tynge all to fyre and swoorde, passed ouer the countrey now called Lumbardy vnto the Appenine hilles, and as farre as Florence, whiche he rased to the earth, not withstandynge it was yelded vnto hym wythoute resistence. But finally as he was goynge to Rome, entendyng to do likewise there: Leo the firste, than bysshop of the same, met him by the way, and so entreated him, that ceasyng from further crueltee, he wythdrewe hym and all his into Hungarye, where not longe after he died of a sodeine death. 2 447

¶Thirdlie Gensericus entred into Italie with a great number of Vandales throughe this occasyon. 3 458

Theodosius the.ii. assigned his cousen Valentinian to rule the weast parte of the empire, who died wythin fewe yeares: so that Maximianus a Romayne, by force toke on him the occidētal empire, and marted Eudossa late wife of the same Valētinian: who disdeinyng hys Maximian, practised secretly with Genseritus then reisgnyng

gning in Affrica, & did so muche, that he came to Rome, toke it by force, slewe Maximian, spoyled and burned the citee, and finallie for a worthy reward, led Eudoxia and hir doughter prysoners wyth hym at hys retourne into Affrike.

¶ The fourth was Biorgus kyng of the Alani, afterwardes called Alemani, who entred into Italie by the way of Trent, & ouerranne all Istria, La Marca Triuisana, and a greate parte of Lumbardye, till at last by Seuerianus one of the Emperours capitaines, he was fought withall, slayne and his host discomfyted.

4 463

¶ The.v. was Odoacrus kyng of the Eruli, that sometime were of the coūtrey of Valachia beyond the riuer of Danubie, who with an infinite number of mē twise in.xiiii. yere ouerran all Italie, callyng him selfe kynge therof, tyl the Emperoure Zenon sente Theodoricus king of the Gothes against him, who fought with him, dyscomfited all his hoste, and finally slewe hym.

5 471

The.vi. was this Theodoricus hym selfe, who by the Emperoure Zenon was inuested kynge of Italye, in the title wherof he caused muche slaughter and destruction er euer he vanquished Odoacrus, but at laste he establisshed his royall seate in Rauenna, where he reigned.25. yeres, and dyed of the flure, leauynge behynde hym a perpetuall fame of his worthynesse and vertue.

6 481

The.vii. was Gundebalde kynge of Borgoyne, who with a great multytude passed the Alpes, ouerranne a great parte of Lumbardie, and wyth an infinyte number of prisoners, and a wonderfull praye of richesse returned into his owne countrey.

7 486

Nowe ye shall vnderstande, that after Theodoriche

was

was made kyng of Italy by the emperours consent, his doughter Amalasuntha folowed in succession of the dominion, who after the death of hir owne son Atalaricus, accepted hir cousin Theodat⁹ for companiõ in hir kyngdome, but he rendring yll for good, found meanes not onelye to exile hir, but also to make hir dye: to the entente he myght reygne alone. Which unkind dealyng so muche offended his owne Gothish nacion, that they elected another kynge in Rome, named Vitigius, who shortlie caused Theodatus to be slaine by treason, and yet he hym selfe prospered not longe after. For er he had fully reigned .v. yeres, Bellisarius, a captaine sent by the emperour Iustinian, recouered al Italy, besieged Vitigius in Rauenna, and finally toke him prisoner, and so led him to Constantinople.

Whan the Gothes had a litel renewed their strength, they made Totila their king, ouerranne all Italy, and twise toke the citee of rome by force, reigning ouer the whole countrey .xi. yeares, till Narses, an other of the emperours captaines came puissãtly into Lumbardy, and in a sore foughten battayle slewe Totila, wyth a greate number of hys nacyon. 542

Notwithstandinge that dyscoumfiture the Gothes a fresshe chose theim another kyng, called Teia, a verais valiaunt man, that wonderfully defended his dominion againste the power of Narses: but finally in playne battaile Narses slew hym, and so discounfited hys armye, that the Gothes were constreigned to submytte theim selfes vnto the emperours obeissaunce, and from that tyme forth (beynge borne of two or three descentes in Italye) they were no more knowen for Gothes, 553

but taken for Italians, and there ended the Gothishe name: Whiche from the comyng of Theodoricus, before named, had reigned in Italy the space of. 72. yeres ¶ A meruailouse matter to see the instabilitee of these worldely thynges: that the Romaine empyre, whyche so many yeres before had triumphed in ryches & welth ouer the whole worlde, should now be subiecte vnto all calamitee and affliction . Rome it selfe . iiii. tymes taken by force within the space of. 140. yeares, the walles in many places throwē to the earth, the inestimable goodly buildinges of temples and palaices burned and spoyled, the infinite treasures of money, iewelles, and other ornamentz put to sacke, or hidde vnder the groūd by the owners, where it could neuer be founde: neither man woman nor childe spared of the enemyes furiouse swoorde, and finallye brought to that case, that it was more than an whole yere desolate without any creature to dwel in it, other then the wylde beastes . And not Rome alone, but also the moste parte of all the notable cities of Italie were thus afflicted for the tyme.

Rome destroyed. iiii. tymes.

¶ But whan the Gothish nacion was thus subdued, Italie returned to the obedience of the empyre, and was gouerned by the forenamed Narses, by the space of. 17. yeres, til after the death of the emperour Iustinian, Iustine the secounde of that name succeded, whose wyfe
566 Sophia, thorough instigatiō of some gentilmen of the court (that enuied the vertue & glory of Narces) kendled hir housband the emperour so muche, that he reuoked Narses from the rule of Italy, with iniurious wordes of the empresse, that had bosted, she would set hym amongest hir women to spinne and to make cloth, whi-

che she sayde was meeter for hym than to rule suche a countrey. But the noble hert of Narses conceiued so greate an vnkyndnesse of this, that (after he had answeared hir) he woulde spinne suche a clothe, as nother she nor hir vile housbande should be hable to weare out, he secretly sét into Pannonia to Alboinus king of the Longobardi, now called Lumbardes, exhortinge him to come into Italie: howe be it, ere he came, Narses repented hym, and did what he could to haue letted it: but as he trauailed therin (being come to Rome) with John the thyrde bisshop of the same, hauyng now delayed the Lumbardes coming a fewe yeres, he died, had his body caried to Constantinople, & there was honorably buried.

¶ This Narses with Belisarius before named, were two of the noblest capitaines that euer serued the Romayne Emperours.

¶ Incontinently after the death of Narses, the forenamed Alboinus, with an infynite number of men women and children, entred into Italy, & occupyed all the countrey betwene the Alpes & the Appenine hylles, nampng it after they? name Lumbardy. And notwithstanding that the emperours for the space of .80. yeres made continuall warres agaynst theym by they? generalles, whom thei called Exarkes, yet could they neuer so abate and banquisshe the glorie of those Lumbardes, but that sometimes they wolde right wel be reuenged, so that in effecte they reigned ouer Lumbardye abone. 200. yeres, tyl the coming of Charlemaine, who in fauour of the Romayne bisshops, warred against Desiderius last kyng of the sayde Lumbardes, toke and ledde him prisoner into Fraunce. 569 Desyderius.

In all whych tyme of the Lumbardes prosperitee, there reigned amongest them .23. kinges, whose names hereafter folowe.

1 Alboinus, slaine by procurement of his wife Ro, samunda.

2 Dapho, slayne of hys owne people for hys tyrannie. After whose death the Lumbardes wolde haue no kyng, but in maner of a common wealth elected .30. Dukes, who occupied all Italie, Rome and Naples excepted, and so contynued the space of .xii. yeares, till the Lumbardes, being weery of theyr gouernaunce, returned againe to the election of a kynge.

3 ¶ Antharis surnamed Flauius, toke to wife Theodolinda, the kynges doughter of Bauarie, a woman that by persuasion of Gregorye the firste, bisshop of Rome, secretly embraced the christian faith, and after conuerted hir nexte housband to the same.

4 ¶ Agilulphus Duke of Turine, maried Theodolinda after the death of hir other housbande, and so beynge made kyng, through his wifes procurement, he became a Christian.

5 ¶ Adoaldus, sonne of Agilulphus, beyng very young, reigned about .x. yeares, vnder the gouernaunce of hys mother Theodolinda, and after hir death, was driuen oute of his realme.

6 ¶ Arioldus, of whom I fynde nothing notable.

7 ¶ Rotharius, a valiaunt warriour, and so wel learned withal, that he prescribed lawes vnto the Lumbardes, who from theyr coming into Italy tyl that time (whyche was about .70. yeres) had no written law.

8 Rodoaldus sonne of Rotharius was slaine by one that

founde

founde hym in adoultrie with his wife.

Arithpertus, through feigned flight obteyned a no- 9
table victorie againſt the frenchemen.

Gundibertus, ſonne vnto Arithpertus, contended ſo 10
long with his brother for the dominion, that at laſt thei
were bothe chaſed awaye.

Grimoaldus, tooke the eſtate from the children of A- 11
rithpert, and held long warre wyth the emperour Cõ-
ſtantine the third, & ſo ouercame Theodorus the Ex-
arke, that the emperour in a great rage came him ſelfe
with a myghtye armie into Italye, and after he had o-
uerranne the countrey of Puglia, and taken the citee
of Luceria, which he put to fyre and ſwoorde, at laſt he
beſieged Beneuento, where hapned one notable thing
worthy the reherſal.

Romoaldus ſonne to the king Grimoaldus was than
within Beneuento, and valiauntly defended the citee a-
gainſt the Greekes, ſending woorde by a foſter father of
his named Genſualdus, vnto hys father, that vnleſſe
he wolde ſhortly ſende ſuccours, the citee muſt needes
be taken. Genſualde did his meſſage, and returnyng
wyth anſweare was taken of the enemies, and brought
before the emperour. Where beynge ſtraightly eramy-
ned, he confeſſed, that Grimoalde withal the power of
Lumbardy was departed from Pauia, & came to reyſe
the ſiege: and that he hym ſelfe was the meſſenger of
hys commyng. Wherfore the emperour hoping incon-
tinently to haue the towne, and ſo to departe before the
comyng of Grimoalde, partely with threatenynge, and
partly with fayre offers, perſuaded Genſualde, that be-
yng brought before the towne, he ſhould ſhewe Romo-

alde, how his father through other businesse of importaunce could not than succoure hym. Gensualde promissinge so to doe, was brought to the walles, and called for Romoalde, who forthwyth appeared. Romoalde (sayd he) thy father is here at hand, with a puissaunt armye to succour the. I lefte hym passynge the riuer of Sanguine: be good to my wyfe and children, for I am but dead, and so it proued, for hys head was striken of, and for despite with an engine throwen into the towne. Wherupon Constantine with his armie retyred to Naples, and from thense to Rome, where he was mosse honourable receyued of Bysshop Vitellian, with all the clergy and nobilitee. But he in recompence of that honour, fell to robbyng and spoylynge of all the goodlye thynges that he founde there, aswell marble, brasse and peinture, as other richesse, insomuch that he toke the tile of brasse, wherwith the temple of Pantheon was couered, and shipped all that he gotte. So that Rome in a maner suffered more hurt and spoyle in .vii. dales that he remaigned there, than it did by any ouerthrow from the fyrst comyng of the Lumbardes. And yet he enioyed not, for returning towardes Greece he was slaine by hys owne men in the citee of Syracusa: and all those precious thynges taken afterwardes by the Sarasines, and caried to Alexandria in Aegypt, where manye of theim maye be seen at this daye. But to retourne vnto my purpose. Grimoaldus dyed of to muche sreygnyng his arme after he had been letten blouode.

12 ¶ Garmaldus, sonne of Grimoaldus, reigned .iii. monethes onely and dyed.

Partha-

¶Partharus, soonne of Arithpert before named, that from his youthe had been in continuall exile, retour- 13
ned home and was restored to the kyngdome.
Iunipertus or Compertus, sonne of Partharus succe- 14
ded after the death of his father.
Laimpertus, or Luitpertus, sonne of Iunipertus, be- 15
ynge a childe, had not reigned vnder the tuicion of A-
sprandus fullye. viii. monethes, but that Raimpertus
Duke of Turine rebelled, and in plaine battayle ouer-
came Asprandus, and so vsurped the kyngdome. 16
¶Raimpertus reigned not fully a yere. 17
¶Arithpertus, son of Raimpertus, was much dis-
turbed by the forenamed Luitpertus, but at lasse he slewe
him in plaine battaile, & in maner destroyed the whole
house of Asprandus. Neuertheless in the. xi. yeare of
his reigne Asprandus, with helpe of the kyng of Baua-
rie, retourned puissantly into Italy, fought with Arith
pert, and so discomfited him, that in his flight passynge
the riuer of Tesino, he was drowned, by reason he had
ouerladen him selfe with golde. 18
Asprandus reigned but. iii. monethes and dyed. 19
¶Luitprandus, son of Asprandus, was a great warri-
our, insomuch that after he had gotten Rauenna, and
many other cities from the emperours Exarke, at last
he besieged Rome. Neuertheless at the intercession
of his gossippe the frenche kynge, he leuied his syege,
and restored to the Romains those castels and townes
that he before had taken from theim.
Aldeprandus, nephewe of Luitprandus, lyued not 20
fully. v. monethes, and dyed without issue.
Rachis or Lachis, as some cal him, Duke of Turine, 21
was

was nexte kynge, who after manye gyftes made to the churche of Rome, whan he had reigned. vi. yeares, lefte his crowne, and became a monke.

22 Artifolphus, brother to Rachis, contrarie to his brothers maners, made so sharpe warre to the Churche of Rome, that Stephen then bishop, called Pepine the French king twise into Italy against him, & constreyned him to obey the Romayne See, and at last beynge on a day a huntyng, he died sodeinelye of an appoplexi.

23 Desiderius laste kynge of the Lumbardes, prospered longe tyme in hys warres, and specyally agaynste the church of Rome, which he so constreigned, that Adryan the first than bishop there, was faine to cal king Charlemaine of Fraunce into Italie to succoure hym: who
779 at his comyng not onelie restored vnto the churche all those citees that were taken away, but also led Desiderius, his wyfe and Children prysoners wyth hym into Fraunce, furnyshinge the whole regyon of Lumbardy with officers and rulers of his owne nacion.

The ende of the Lumbardes reigne. Thus ended the reigne of the Lumbardes, which had continued more than. 200. yeres.

It is nowe to be vnderstanded, that shortly vpon the comyng of Alboinus into Italy, diuers citees and prouinces of the same (as theyr strengthe & tyme did serue theim) vsed theyr owne libertees, and leauyng the imperial lawes, made newe orders and officers amongest them selfes. Wherefore the emperour Iustinus sent a generall of his into Italie, named Longinus, ordeining him to be called Exarke, whiche should be chiefe ouer all other officers.

This Exarke passing by Rome, came to Rauenna, and there

there kept his affate, appoynctyng the gouernaunce of Rome to a Duke: so that many yeres after there were no mo Conſulles made: whych office together with the moſt parte of all the other Romayne magiſtrates, kept theyr auncient forme vnto that tyme, notwithſtanding that the emperours had taken from theym al maner of auctoritee, except the onely gouernaunce of the citee.

¶ From Longinus vnto the comyng of kyng Pepine into Italie, the emperours helde in maner contynuall warre with the kinges of Lũbardy by theyr Exarkes: but after Pepine had ouercome the kinge Ariſtolphe (who before had ſubdued the Exarke of Rauenna) he gaue the lands of that Exarcate to the church: A great part wherof the biſchoppe of Rome holdeth to this day.

¶ And becauſe that from the tyme of Honorius hitherwardes I cannot finde that any emperoure had quyet dominion ouer Italy, or was at any time reſidẽt there, I therfore omitte to reherſe the emperours names that haue reigned syns, and woull conclude, how by Charlemaines time, the empire that before had none other title than of Rome. (wherof it toke originall) was vtterlye deuided in two: Oriental and Occidental, the occaſion wherof was this.

¶ Leo the .iii. ſucceſſour vnto Adrian byſchop of Rome, was chaſed away by the Romaines, and fledde to kyng Charlemaine for ſuccour, who not onely reſtored hym to his biſchoprziche, but alſo for a more terroure to the Romaines, with a greate power came to Rome in hys owne perſon: where on Chriſtmas day, for a reward of 801
his trauaile, the biſchoppe and clergie proclaymed him Emperour.

BIBLIOTECA NAZ. ROMA

Some wryte, that Charlemayne was very loth to take it vpon him, till he had practised first with Hirena, thã Empresse of Constãtinople, and after with Nicefozus nexte emperour folowynge, and obteyned bothe theyr consentes.

In effect Charlemayne was crowned, toke on him the empire: and his son Pepine was entitled king of Italye. And after they had attempted to chase the greekes cleane out of the same, they accozded with Nicefozus to diuide the east empyze from the west, limittinge the Duchie of Beneuento to be as a confine oz bound betwene them both.

Election of the Emperour.

¶ And thus, sens Charlemaine, the occidentall empire continued vnder the frenche dominion, till Gregozye the. v. bishop of Rome, transpozted the election of the emperour vnto the pzinces of Germanie, whiche to this day endureth. Like as on the other side the Dzientall empire continued in Constantinople in the handes of Chzystyans, till Machomet the seconde of that name emperour of the Turkes, toke the citee by fozce, slewe the emperour Sigismonde, and consequently enioyed the whole Greekish empyze, as his successours doe vnto thys daye.

The

The description of Rome.

THynkynge to fynde a greate contentacion in the syght of Rome, because that amõgest all the cittees of the worlde none hath bene more famous then it, I disposed my selfe to go thyther. But whan I came there and beheld the wonderfull maiestie of buildinges that the onely rootes thereof do yet representhe huge temples, the infinite great palaices, the vnmeasurable pillers, moste parte of one peece, fine marble, and well wrought, the goodlye arches of triumphe, the baynes, the conductes of water, the Images as well of brasse as of marble, the Obeliskes, and a noumber of other lyke thinges, not to be founde agayne throughoute an whole worlde: imaginynge wythall, what maiestee the citee might be of, whan all these thynges flourysshed, Than dyde it greeue me to see the onelye iewel, myrrour, maystres, and beautye of this worlde, that neuer had her lyke, nor (as I thinke) neuer shall, lye so desolate and disfigured, that there is no lamentable case to be hearde, or lothesome thinge to be seene, that maye be compared to a small parte of it. Neuertheles, when I remembred agayne the occasions, whereof these glorious thinges haue growen, what noumbers of warres the Romaynes haue mayntayned, with infinite bloudshedding, destructions of whole countreys, rauishmentes of chast womẽ, sacke, spoile, tributes, oppression

So that all the merchandise, vittails, and other thinges that come by shippe, are discharged at Ostia into certaine smal vessels, and so brought to Rome, either drawen by corde, or rowed vp by force of ores.

¶ The head or first spring of Tyber is in the Appenine hilles, somewhat higher than the heade of the riuer Arno, that renneth through Florence: and er euer it come at Rome, it receiueth .42. other riuers: So that it is no meruaile, thoughe it be depe, specially in Rome and to the seawardes, where it appeareth, that the naturall bredth of it is restreigned: & by force of stronge bankes made much narower than his aũcient course hath ben. The heade of Tyber.

¶ Of the Brydges.

VPon this ryuer of Tyber in Rome be. iiii. brydges, the first and fairest is it that passeth from the citee vnto castel. S. Angelo, vnder the which the riuer comyng from the North towardes the south, entreth into the citee. And is commonly called Ponte di Sant'Angelo, or del Castello. Ponte di S. Angelo Ponte del Castello

The second is Ponte Sisto otherwyse called Ponterotto, a very goodly bridge, that leadeth from the strete now called Iulia, vnto the foote of the hylle auncientely called Janiculus in Transtyberim. Ponte Sisto Ponte rotto,

The thirde is called Ponte de l'isola, Ponte di San Bartholomeo, or Ponte di quatuor Capora, which passeth from the herte of the citee throughe the Iland Tyberina into Transtyberim. Ponte de l'isola Ponte di S. Bertholomeo Ponte di quatuor Capora

The fourth next to the goyng forth of the ryuer out of the citee at the South is called Ponte di Santa Maria Ponte di S. Maria

¶But to ſatiſfye them that be learned, I thinke meete to rehearſe here the names of the.viii. bridges Sublicius, Palatinus, Fabricius, Ceſtius Ianuclenſis, Vaticanus, Elius, & Miluius: & to declare where they ſtode.

Sublicius. Firſt Sublicius, whiche Horatius alone defended in the warres of Porſena, was at the foote of the hill Auentine, where nowe is no bridge at all, & firſt it was made of timber, afterwardes of ſtone by Emilius lepidus, for the whiche he was ſurnamed Lapideus, but finally it was made of marble by Antonius Pius, and nowe decayed to the foundations: wherof parte are yet to be ſeene.

Palatinus The ſecond palatinus, is now called di ſanta maria.

Fabritius Ceſtius ¶The thirde and fourth, fabricius, nere the citee ſide, and Ceſtius, on the ſide of Tranſtyberim, are the two bridges that paſſe through the Iſlande Tyberina.

¶The.v. Ianuclenſis, is nowe called ponte ſiſto.

Ianuclenſis Vaticanus. The.vi. Vaticanus, is decaied to the foundacion, parte whereof is ſeene againſt the hoſpitall di ſan ſpirito.

Elius ¶The.vii. Elius, is now called del Caſtello.

Miluius ¶The.viii. Miluius, is.ii. mile northewardes oute at the gate called del popolo, in the way to Tuſcane: and is called at this daye ponte molle.

¶Of the walles.

The circuite of ỹ citee about by the walles, as Plinie writeth, was in his time, xx. miles: and Flauius Vopiſcus ſayeth, that the emperour Aurelius. 200. yeres before the coming of the Gothes, enlarged the circuite of Rome to. 50. miles: whether theſe

authours

authours included the suburbes I can not tel: but once there can be seene no signe or token of any walles, that shuld conteine so much compasse: nor yet of the walles that Liuie mentioneth, should be made of square stone For the walles now about Rome are of bricke, & in my iudgement passe not. xiiii. miles in compasse. Nor I can not perceiue, either by mine owne eye, or by writing of authours, or yet by reporte, that euer the walles were of greater circuite then they be at this present. It is euident, that manye partes of the same wall haue been throwen to the earth by diuers enemies, & repayred agayne. For notwythstandynge it be builded of bricke, yet dooeth it shewe such an antike maiestie (hauinge. 365. towres agreable with the noumbre of dayes in the yeare) that he who seeth it, must needes confesse, it could neuer be buylded but in time of the Romaines glory. Perchaunce some will meruayle, howe bricke shoulde so longe continue: but their bricke, whether it be longe of good makynge, or of the heate of the sonne that dryeth muche better than wyth vs, is wonderfull durable. For there be manye buyldinges in Rome of bricke, that haue continued these. 1000. yeares and more and yet to this houre are nothing worne or decayed. In deede manye gates of the citee are of square stone, wrought after the moste antike facion: so that it is not incredible, as Liuie writeth, that ỹ walles haue bene of square stone, but it should not seeme so, because that in making of a newe wall in the same place, it is to be supposed, the builders would haue vsed the olde square stone, rather than bricke.

Of the

¶ Of the gates.

PLinie writeth, that in his time were.xxx. gates open, and.viii. closed, but because he hathe not written theyr names, I woull not trauaile to trie what they were. For I can finde but.xvi. that are vsed: Of whiche.iiii. are in the Vaticane, that many yeares after Plinie, was walled by Leo the.iiii. byshop of Rome, for defence of hys owne palaice and of Sainct Peters churche.

Porta del popolo. Flumentana. Flaminia. P. Pinciana. Collatina. P. Salaria. Quirinalis. Aegonalis. P. di sant' Agnese. Viminalis Figulensis Numentana. P. di San Lorenzo Tiburtina Exquilina P. Maggiore. Neuia Labicana Prenestina P. di. San Hioanni Celimontana. Asinaria P. Latina

Fyrst nexte vnto the comyng downe of Tyber on the northside, is the gate called Porta del popolo, whych auncientlye hathe had diuers names, as Flumentana & Flaminia of the way Flaminia that wēt out therat.

Than coming about towardes the East, the next gate is called Pinciana, sometime Collatina.

The.iii. Salaria, auncientlye called Quirinalis, or Aegonalis.

The.iiii. Porta di Sant' Agnese, sometime Viminalis, Figulensis and Numentana.

The.v. Porta di San Lorenzo, sometyme called Tybertina after some authours, and after other Exquilina, though Andreas Fuluius affirmeth playnely Exquilina to be betwene this and the nexte gate.

The.vi. Porta maggiore was sometyme called Neula, Labicana and Prenestina.

The.vii. Porta di San Hioanni hath ben called Celimontana, and Asinaria, by reason it lyeth towardes the realme of Naples, that bredeth many asses.

The.viii. Porta Latina hath not chaunged name, or if it be chaunged, the auncient name cannot be knowen nowe.

The

The.x. Porta di San Sebastiano, was somtime called Appia and Capena, and after most opinions was also called Triumphalis. P. di S. Sebastiano Appia. Capena Triumphalis.

¶ The.x. Porta di San Paolo, was sometyme called Trigemina. All whiche.x. gates are on the Champaigne side of the riuer. P. di San Paolo Trigemina.

The.xi. Porta portese, or Porta di Ripa. P. Portese di Ripa

The.xii. Porta di San Pancratio, sometime called Aurelia. P. di S. Pancratio Aurelia

¶ The.xiii. Porta del Torrione. P. del Torrione

¶ The.xiiii. Porta portusa, on the toppe of the hill behynde sainct Peters. P. Portusa.

The.xv. hathe diuers names, as Porta di Beluedere, di San Piero, del Giardino, or di Santo Peregrino and is hard vnder the bishops palaice. P. di Beluedere di San Piero. del Giardino. di S. Peregrino

The.xvi. porta del Castello, somtime Posterula. lieth vnder Castel Sant' Angelo, and serueth to go into the medowes. As for those auncient names, Carmentalis, Pãdana, Mugonia, Queruetulana, Iauernalis, Rudusculana, Rhuttumena, Carthularia, and diuers others, which as I suppose were old gates, that lost their places as the walles were enlarged: I could neuer learne where they should be, and therfore doe beleue they haue bene conuerted to the vse of other buildynges. P. del Castello Posterula

These gates and walles about Rome are not stronge, nor yet fortified with rampiers of earth or otherwise to defende shotte of artillerie, and in manye places are so decayed, that to assaute there needeth not muche batterye. Many of the gates haue ben excedynge fayre, but like as moste notable thynges there be decayed: so are these rather a figure of their antiquytee, thanne anye

thynge elles.

☞ Of the .vii. hilles.

THe .vii. hilles, whereon rome standeth, are but of a smal height, standing a rewe vpon the riuer side.

Auentinus. The greatest of theim Eastwardes is called Auentinus, wherin was the caue of Cacus the giaũt that Hercules slewe: and the fountaine, where the Goddes Picus & Faunus were taken by the policye of Numa, who geuyng theim wine in stede of water, made theim dronke, and so toke theim a slepe. And albeit, that on this hill haue ben many goodly edifices, as the temples of Matuta, Diana, Minerua, Lucina, Liberta, wyth diuers others, yet at this daye there is nothynge to be seen, not so much as a token of Claudius notable conducte, that Frontinus & Cassiodorus treate so muche vpon. For there is nowe none other buildynge, but the monasteries of Santa Sabina, and Sant' Alesso, with a fewe other litle churches. The reste is either couered with rubbel, or occupyed with vines.

Capitolinus. The next hille, fyrst called Tarpeius, after Capitolinus, and nowe Campidoglio, was the principal place of the citee, such as for example the yelde haul is in london. For thither came all they that happened to be receyued with triumphe: and amongest all the buildynges of the worlde Capitolium was compted the goodliest. For Cassiodorus sayeth. It is a greate wonder to » beholde the market place of Traiane: But to clymbe » vp into the capitoll, O there is the excellencie of all hu» maine wyttes to be regarded. Cicero calleth it in

many

many places the habitacion of the goddes: and Virgile the golden Capitoline. Wherof at this day remayneth no moze but an olde house called the Senate, & the churche of Araceli. They say, that the temple of Iupiter optimus maximus was there, where the churche of San Saluator in maisimi is now: and the temple of Ianus custos, where the pzisons be now called La Cãcellaria. But of theyz antiquitee appeareth at thys daye not so much as the bare foundacions.

Palatinus.

Nexte vnto Campidoglio is the hil Palatinus, on the whiche the emperours, kings, consuls, and other chiefe officers had theyz palaices, besides many famous temples that haue been built ther, wherof remaineth none other now but the olde ruines, and a churche of saincte Nicolas not yet finished.

Here is to be noted, that these. iii. hilles Auentinus, Capitolinus, and Palatinus were onelys closed wyth walles by Romulus: so that Rome was nothinge so great in circuite at the fyrste as it is nowe. But as the people multiplied, so the other hilles were taken in: as he that readeth Liuie shall well perceiue. In effecte, settynge the rubbel and olde monstruouse foundacions aparte, Rome (as touchyng these. iii. hilles) is retourned deserte, pasture, and vineyardes, as it was before the fyrst foundacions.

Celius.

Nert is the hil Celius, wherin is seen vnto this daye a part of the auncient Romaine maseree, by the meruailouse buildynges that yet remaigne, not whole, but so that the magnificence thereof maye be comprehended: as the Amphitheatrum, now called Colliseo, the conduites and baines, the great palaice, and a nounber of

fayre churches, tranſlated from olde temples.

Exquilius

NExt vnto this Exquilius, which as Varro ſayeth, are two hylles, but they ſeme not ſo to me. In this part are Therme Dioclesiani, the pilier of Adrian the toure de i Conti, Trofei de Caio Mario, the gardeine and toure of Mecenates ſo muche renoumed, wyth diuers other thinges, and is well enhabited.

Viminalis Quirinalis

Finally the hilles, Viminalis and Quirinalis, lye ſo together, that I coulde not deuide theim: But by eſtymacion and repoꝛt they begin at the gate of S. Agnes, and ſtretche downe by Monte Cauallo vnto Tyber, in which are fewe notable thynges to be ſeene, excepte Monte Cauallo, Therme Conſtantiniane, Torre delle militie, and a fewe others.

Tranſtyberim

NOw that parte of the citee that is called Tranſtyberim, is diuided in two, that is to wete the Vaticane and Ianiculum.

Vaticane

The Vaticane was walled aboute by Leo the .iiii. byſhop, and called Citta Leonia after hys owne name, and is wel knowē from Ianiculum, becauſe that going from the one to the other, it behoueth to paſſe thꝛoughe the gate called Septimiana, ſometymes called Subtus Ianū, oꝛ Fontinalis: wherby it is euident, that the Vaticane oꝛ Borgo San Piero (as they now cal it) was neuer any part of Rome vntil Leos time. But Ianiculum in Tranſtiberim was aſsigned vnto Rome by Ancus Martius .iiii. kynge of the Romaynes, and is eſtymed to be the ſame citee, that the god Ianus builded and dwelled in, like as many wꝛite Saturnia, that Saturne builded, was againſte it on the other ſide of the water, in the place that we call nowe Campidoglio: thoughe

Porta Septimiana. Subtus Ianum. Fontinalis Janiculum

ſome

some holde opinion it shoulde be at Sutri.

¶ Of the conduites of water.

FRontinus writeth, that for the space of 441. yeres after the edification of Rome, the Romaines used none other but the water of Tyber, or of such welles and springes as were founde within the citee. But from the tyme of Appius Claudius they haue had so much water brought by cõduites upon arches, through the mountaines, and some under ground, that no citee of all the worlde coulde be better serued. And the maner was this. When they had taken a spring, and had brought the water of it to the citee, than was there a place made to receiue it, closed about with walles like a castell: from the whiche, pypes were laied to serue aswell the common people in the open stretes, as also the nobility, and such as were hable to haue water in their owne houses. And so (as Strabo writeth) it semed that riuers ranne haboundauntly through the citee, and almost euery house had chanelles and conduites with cesternes to preserue the water. For Marcus Agrippa in one yere caused. 700. pondes. 105. fountaignes, and 130. castels to be made, besides a number of other goodly edifices for the maintenaunce of these fresh waters: amongest which I shal recite the principalles.

¶ First the water called Appia was conueyghed upon high arches of stone out of the Lucullane territory the space of. viii. miles, and brought in betwene the hill Auentine and the hill Celius: but now there remayneth nothing of theim that can be seen. Aqua Appia.

Aqua Martia. Anfeia. Traiana

An other, Aqua Martia, sometime called Anfeia, lastly Traiana, came out of ỹ lake Fucinus, & serued principally to drinke, where most part of the rest serued for other vses: and this was brought by mine through the mountaines and by arches aboue ground .xvIII. miles.

Claudia.

Aqua Claudia was brought .35. miles from .II. fountaines Ceruleus, and Curtius, part of the waye vpon wonderful arches of square stone, whiche are yet to be seene bothe within and many miles without the citee.

Plin li. 36 nat. histor.

Plinie saieth, that the conueighaunce of this water did cost .555. thousande Sextertia, whiche make aboue, Ir. thousand talentes, and reckenyng euery talent at .130. li. sterlyng (whiche I thinke was the least) the summe amounteth to .vII. millions and .vIII. hundred thousande pounde of pure money: whiche as it seemeth a summe impossible to be gathered together, and more incredible to be spent in one worke, so is the maiestee of that buildyng wonderful, that in maner I am abasshed to write the trouth thereof, for I wolde not haue beleued it my selfe, if I had not seene it. And Frontinus writeth, that these arches in some places were .109. foote high.

Than was there the olde and the new Auiena, the one whereof was brought .xII. miles of, and at length the conueyghed with the water Claudia, and is receiued vppon those arches before mencioned.

Auiena.

Diuers other waters there were, to long here to reckon, because of all these waters that were wont to come to Rome, can be found no moe at this day but one, called Triuiana, and auncientlye named Virginia, which renneth vnder the groũd by the gate Pinciana, & sourgeth vnder ỹ hill called Mõte degli hortuli: frõ whẽce it is

Triuiana, Virginia

it is cõueighed abrode to serue al parties of the cite, because in rome ther is none other good water to drinke.

Opinions of the decay of the antiquitees.

¶ Of the decay not onely of these conduites, but also of the other antiquitees be dyuers opinions. Some affyrme, that the Gothes, the Vandales, and the other barbarouse nacions, that so often destroied Rome, were causers and doers of it. Some other ascribe the faulte to tyme, mother and consumer of all thynges. Other saye, that nother the barbarouse nacions, nor yet tyme ought to be blamed for it, but rather the gridy beastlynesse of theim, that bothe within the citee and without, regarded not to spoyle those noble antiquitees, to garnisshe and beautifie therwith theyr priuate buildinges.

¶ Of the Thermes.

YOu shall vnderstande, that the Romaynes vsed oftentimes to bathe theim selfes, wherfore at the first, priuate men made them stewes or hotehouse of theyr owne: But afterwardes (as a thyng necessarye for the common wealthe) the Emperours gaue them selfes to the makynge of these Therme. Of whyche Blondus reckeneth .11. Fluuius saieth .viii. namyng them Agrippine, Neroniane, Alexandrine, Titiane Diocleſiane, and the reste. These were not onelye common baines for washing, but also sumptuouse haules, goodly chaumbers, faire walkyng places, & euerye other gallaunt buildyng, that mighte serue for the commoditee of theym that thither resorted. The pauementes were of fyne marble wrought in colours, the vaultes sustayned on riche pillers of porfirie and fines

mar-

marble of one peece, A noumber of hotehouses in euery Therme, some seuerall, & some common, with lodgyng? accordyng, and offices assigned for the seruice of theim that would eate there, besides all other pleasures that were to be imagined. Insomuche that the emperours them selfes many tymes woulde come thither openly, and be washed in the common houses. For it is writ= ten that the emperour Adrian entred on a day into one of the baynes, and findyng an olde souldioure there rub= binge him selfe againste the marble stones, asked hym why he dyd so? The souldioure aunswered, because he had no seruaunt. This aunsweare so much pleased the Emperoure, that streight waye he not onely gaue thys souldioure a seruaunte, but also honestlye wherwith to mainteigne hym. Throughe the fame wherof the nexte day whan the emperour came to the same baine, diuers olde men were gotten in before, and were likewise rub= byng theim selfes: who beyng demaunded why they did so, aunsweared, because they had no seruauntes. But Adrian perceiuyng they? entent, called theym to hym, and shewed them howe they mighte well enoughe one rubbe an other.

adrians curtesie, and wyse= dome.

¶ Of all these goodlie Thermes, there remaineth none other but the broken walles, and the olde monstruous ruines, specially of those two that were the greateste, Antoniane, and Diocleſiane, whose hugenes may be reckened as a wonder amongest the buildynges of the worlde.

Of the

Of the Naumachie.

There were certaine pondes of water called Naumachie, made of purpose so large, that smal shippes myghte mete in them. For lyke as the Romaynes were diligent in bryngyng vp theyr youthe in feates of chevalrie. So also they exercised them in practise of the water, to make them no lesse experte by sea than by lande. For the which these Naumachie were made, specially for the triumphynge dayes, whan they vsed to fight ship with ship, and whan also on the lande the horsemen shoulde be prouynge of theyr strengthes. So that in one spectacle you shoulde behold the feates of armes both by sea and lande, as most commonlye in Circulo maximo it was wont to be. But at this daye there scarcelye appeareth anye signe or token of those pondes, saue that euery man there can tell where some of them haue ben: as that before the fronte of Palazzo maggiore, an other vnder Monte de glihortuli, and one of Neros in the Vatican. For now thorough lacke of water, sens the decaie of the conduites, they are become drie ground, and conuerted into gardeins, pastures, and other vses.

Of the arches of triumphe.

The Romaines vsed to edifie certaine arches, and to dedicate theim vnto the names and memory of suche as had conquered straunge countreis, or returned victoriously from daungerous battailes.

For the whiche they were receiued triumphantlye into the citee, sittyng on a riche charlotte, drawen with .iiii. white steedes, and their notable prisoners and spoile before them, with goodlye representacyons of the gotten cities, townes, countreis and other thyngs: and so passyng throughe the citee, shoulde ride vnto the temple of Iupiter in Capitolio.

¶ There haue been many of these arches, but at thys date .iiii. onely are to be knowen, that is to wete of Cõstantine, of Titus, of Severus, and of Domitian.

Arcus Constantini. The first of Constantine standeth on the corner of the hil Palatinus, a little beside Coliseo, and is yet metely fayre to beholde, were it not that the fine carued figures on both sides wrought in the harde marble, are battered, and almost defaced by the weather.

Arcus Titi. The nexte of Titus and Vespasianus, is in the middest of the way called Sacra, wherein maye be seene the representacion of the charlotte of triumphe, with the .xii. sergeauntes on the one syde, & on the other the spoyles of Ierusalem, that is to wete the golden candelsticke of seuen braunches, the two tables of Moyses, the golden table and vessell of the Temple, with dyuers other thynges: whiche as Ioseph writeth, were laied vppe in the temple of peace.

Arcus Severi. The arche of Septimius Severus standeth in the olde market place, nowe called Piazza Romana, at the foote of Campidoglio: and this is the fayrest of all the other, hauing finely grauen on both sides the representacions of his battailes and victories, aswell by sea, as by lande, with the title in fayre Romayne letters, to whom it was dedicated.

Finally

Finally in the waye Flaminia, harde by the churche of saincte Laurence in Lucina, is the arche of Domitian as they saye: and is now called L'arco di Tripoli, nothyng of beautie comparable to any of the reste. Arcus Domitiani.

¶ These arches are as it were gatehouses to passe thorough, but the fineste of the marble, & curious workemanshippe sheweth wel, that they were exceding sumptuouse, and more beautifull than anye other kynde of buildynge.

Of Theatres.

LIke as the Romaines in theyr warres, triumphes and buildynges exceaded all other nacions of the worlde, euen so did they in their feastes and spectacles: that is to wete in their plaies and sightes deuysed for pleasure and recreacion.

One while they recited comedies, an other while they vsed diuers soũdes of instrumentz to the Pandomimo, who was one that with signes woulde counterfayte all maner of men, and declare his conceite as euidently, as if he shoulde haue spoken. Sometyme they had a number of wilde beastes brought in, as Elephantes, Lions Tygres, and other like, against whome, men that were either condemned to death, taken in the warrz, or foolehardie felowes therunto hyred, shoulde be put to fight: and toren to peeces, vnlesse their chaunce were wonderful. Sometyme againe the maisters of fence with theyr scholers, and many tymes the souldiours, would enter with theyr sharpe swordes, and there kyl one an other, to trie theim selfes valyaunt. Sometyme they

wraſtled, ſometime they ſuffred, & ſometime they fought as it were in playne battayle, aſwell by water as by lande, with other lyke paſtymes to longe here to reherſe.

¶ To beholde theſe thinges, at the begynnyng euery man toke ſuche place as he could get, but in proceſſe of yeres whan theyr common wealth flouriſhed, than they deuided certaine ſhaffolds of borde, with greces or ſteppes one aboue another, and faſtened theim on greate beames made after the forme of an halfe circle, for the commoditee of the more number of people to ſit vpon. Whereof Plinie ſaieth thus: Beholde the people Conquerour of other countreis, and lorde of all the worlde, they that ouerthrowe realmes and nacions, geue lawe to ſtraungers, and be as it were a certaine diuine thing amongeſt the humayne generacyon, ſtand here neuertheleſſe daungerouſlie on an engine, reioyſynge whyle they be in perill.

Theatrum

This engine of tymber was called Theatre, and the firſt that euer made any in Rome was Marcus Scaurus, whoſe Theatre receiued foureſcore thouſand perſons, & ſerued for 30. daies only. But to eaſe the greate charges that the buildinge of ſuche Theatres required from time to time, Pompeius buylded one of ſquare ſtone, ſufficient for 80. thouſand perſons: which Theatre Nero at the receiuing of Tridates kinge of Armenie, cauſed to be gilte cleane ouer in a daie.

¶ Many of theſe Theatres haue ben in Rome, but the moſt notable were theſe iii. of Pompeius, of Marcellus and of Cornelius Balbus: of which there remaigneth ſo litle memorie at this day, that almoſt no man can tel

where

where they stode.

Finally the Amphitheatre, now called Coliseo, is yet standyng, one of the perfectest to be seen amongeste all the antiquitees of Rome, and may in deede be accompted one of the wonders of the worlde. For though parte of it be alreadie fallen downe, and the reste decayenge daily, yet is it not so defaced, but that you maye see perfectelie, what it hathe been, aswell for the meruayloose height, greate circuite, and fayre stone: as also for the excellent workemanship and proportion. It is rounde bothe without and within, from the ground within upwardes, it riseth vniformely one steppe aboue an other staierwise to a very great height: so that to beholde the shewe in the bottome, whiche I thinke is aboue .300. yardes in compasse, there might sitte an hundred thousande persons at theyr ease. And because they vsed to grauel the grounde, whan any greate rayne time shoulde be, therefore in the latine tounge some authours haue called it Arena: notwithstandinge they haue knowen the name to be Amphitheatrum, which signifieth two Theatres ioygned togethers, and after most opinions this Amphitheatre was builded by Vespasian and hys sonne Titus. Amphitheatrum. Coliseo. Arena.

There is also an other Amphitheatre yet to be seen, edified by Statilius Taurus: but it is so decased, that it scarcely deserueth to be spoken of.

☞ Of the Circles.

As for the cercles, whiche serued to lyke purposes of spectacles, because there is none of theim at Circuli.

thys day, that hath any similitude of theyr auncient beynge: I can saye nothyng to them.

¶ Of the Porches.

OF the solemne and sumptuouse porches or baultes, that many auncthours write, were made thorough al the principal stretes of Rome to couer the people from sonne & raine, there be none nowe any thinge lyke, neither for the pillers, nor yet for the proporcion. Where is the porche of Nero, that Tranquillus writeth, extended for the ryght. iiii. thousande paces? where be the porches of Liuia, of Octauius, and of his syster Octauia, of Pompeius, of Seuerus, and of many others? Amongest all of that sort there is but one remaignynge, whiche standeth before the doore of the temple Pantheon, situate on. xvi. wonderfull fayre pillers set in. iii. rowes.

¶ Of Temples.

Pantheon. THe temple of Pantheon is the perfectes of al the antiquites, and standeth whole vnto thys daye. It is round, and hath but one gate to enter in at: the dooores wherof are of brasse, very great and antike. The circuite within forth is very large, and the heighe proporcionable. The roofe is all baulted like the halfe of an egge, of so greate compasse, that it is a wonder to beholde: and in the verie toppe is a greate rounde hole, through whiche the temple receiueth lyghte. For other wyndow it hath none, and yet is the light so much, that

if all the sides were made in wyndolves, it coulde geue no more: vnder the which in the middest of the flooze is such holow prouision made, that the raine passeth away wythout offendynge the eie of the place. Finallye the walles are furnished round aboute with fayre marble, and a noumber of goodly pillers: so that the temple beyng old, is yet thought goodlier than any new building that can be found, and is now called Santa Maria Rotonda. S. Maria Rotonda.

¶ Many other temples haue ben in Rome, that for the most part are likewise conuerted into churches, which to describe shoulde be an endelesse worke. But because of the alteracion and ruyne that tyme hath wrought, theyr trewe antiquitee cannot be declared: Wherefore I wyll shew where some stode, and into what churches some other haue ben conuerted.

The auncient temple of Romulus is now called San Cosmoe Damiano, not much vnlike the buildynge of Pantheon, with the porche before, and the gates lykewyse of brasse. Templum Romuli.

¶ The ruine of the Temple of peace, whyche was the beautifullest and richest of al the world, is yet to be seen betwene Palazzo and Exquilie. T. Pacis.

¶ The temple of Ianus, whyche was neuer open but in time of warre, was nere vnto the churche nowe called San Georgio in Velabro. T. Iani

¶ The temple of Isis is nowe called, Santa Maria in Aquiro. T. Isidis

¶ The Temple of Minerua is nowe a house of friers called Santa Maria Sopra la Minerua. T. Minerue.

¶ And the temple of Pallas was in the place before the T. Pallados.

por-

passe through the power of their victorious ennemies, as Liuie writeth, that Caius Fabius did, when the frenchemen had gotten Rome, and besieged the Capitol. But to my purpose.

¶ Besides these pillers of one stone they vsed in Rome certayne pyllers called Structiles, that were made of diuers stones. These were dedicated to the perpetual memorie of the worthie emperours, as the two that yet stand doe wel witnesse. Structiles

The tone is called the piller of Traiane, whyche is 123. foote hyghe, and hathe a staier of. 185. steppes wythinforth, whereby I haue gone to the toppe. It hath 45. little wyndowes that geue light inwarde, and is all of white marble, so wel and finelye grauen, wyth the storyes of all Traians warres & victories, that it should seeme impossible to peincte a thyng better. Columna Traiana

The other piller dedicate vnto Antonius Pius, muche after the same sorte, hath his warres and dooynges set forthe in figures grauen, and is. 63. foote hygher, but muche more decated than Traianes piller: for it is cleft almoste from the toppe to the base, so that if it be not looked vnto the sooner (as I thynke it shall not) it must needes fall. Piazza Colonna.

There was suche an other piller made all of porphirie, which Constantine toke downe, and caried to Cō-stantinople. Besydes diuers other pillers, as one of Cæsar, an other called Milliariū aureum Pœnia, and Lactaria, and many moe, whereof no parte remaigneth now that can be knowen.

¶ Of Obeliskes.

OBeliscus is a stone, that beyng broade and square at the foote, ascendeth proporcionallye to a sharpe poincte . Of which sorte of stones, there be but viii. now to be seene in Rome: notwithstandynge that Fuluius affyrmeth, there haue ben. vi. great & .42. smal

¶ These Obelisckes were fyrst inuented by the Aegiptians, and dedicated to the son, not onely because it hathe the likenesse of the sonne beame, but also because they vsed by the shadow therof to trie diuers conclusions of Astronomie, and specially the houres of the day: as by diuers caractes and figures that are yet seene in some of them, it doth euidently appeare.

¶ And a wonder it is to thinke, what an vnreasonable enterprise it was to digge one of them out of the mountaine, seeing it could not be had but by cuttyng awaye all the grounde and rocke aboue it.

La Guglia

¶ In effecte there is but one of thesm standyng, whych is in the Vaticane, on the southsyde of saincte Peters church, called La Guglia, beinge .72. foote highe of the very stone it selfe, besides the base and .iiii. great Lions of marble that it is set vpon: and hathe on the toppe a great ball of brasse gilt, with the asshes of Cæsar in it, as some holde opinion.

Octauiã August brought two very great ones from Heliopoli in Aegypt, the one wherof beyng .122. foote hygh, brake in two peces, as they woulde haue erected it, and the other of .110. foote lieth in Campo Martio. There lieth one in Girulo, that sometyme was Salustus gardeine, and two other lie besides the churche of

saincte

saincte Roke, the one of theim in the high waye.
¶ The other two are but smal, and seeme rather peeces than whole stones, the one is in the gardeine of Araceli in the Capitoll: and the other is the strete of San Macutio.

¶ Of Piramides.

There is no moze Pyramides in Rome but one, which the commō people take to be the sepulchze of Remus, but the letters grauen therin witnesse it to be the sepulchze of Caius Cestius, one of the .vii. men that was ozdeyned ouer the feastes of the solemne sacrifices. And where as Liuie wziteth, that Remus was buried in the hil Auentine, wherof it was named Remuria, it is manifest, that this Pyramides was not his sepulchze, foz it standeth in the playne, and in the very wall of the citee, betwene the gate of San Paolo, and the hill Testacchio. The facion of it is lyke vnto a poynted dyamant, and is made of square stone, so great at the foote, that ascendyng vniformely to the top, it is higher than any towze of the wall.

In the high wales without the citee specially Flaminia, Salaria, & Appia be many like seene of muche lesse quantitee: But foz the most part they are either decased oz decaying. Like as the Cimiteri, which were vaultes vnder earth, that serued of later tyme foz Chzistian sepultures, whiche with other like kind of buildynges, by pzocesse of yeres are wozen and come to naught.

¶ Of Colosses and images.

COlossus signifieth an vnreasonable great image such as that of Apollo, that was brought out of Apollonia in Ponto, & set in the Capitol, whose height was .xxx. cubites. Or that of Iupiter in Campo Martio, commonlye called Pompeianus. But aboue all that euer were, the Colosse at Rodes exceded. For it was .70. cubites highe, and so proporcionate to that heighte, that lyinge on the earthe (after it was shaken downe by an earthquake) fewe men could embrace one of the fingers, and manye of the holowe places in the iointes, seemed valeis or deepe bottomes: so that it is written, the Saralines after they had gotten Rodes, laded aboue. 900. Camelles with the brasse that they pyked out of that Colosse.

¶ Nero caused one to be made of .120. foote high to his owne likenesse, and sette it in the porche of hys golden house, whiche afterwardes was remoued thense vnto the Amphitheatre, and therof it is thought it toke the name of Coliseo.

Finally I can find no more of these Colossi whole at this day, but one head, one hand, and a foote, that lie before the dores of the Conseruatori in the Capitol.

It is true that in manye places of Rome are seen wonderful peeces of marble, that should seeme to haue been membres of those Colossi: but they are in maner cleane defaced.

¶ Likewyse of the excellent images, bothe of brasse and marble, aswell of men as of horse, many peeces yet remaigne: thoughe scarcelye woorth the name of good I-

mages,

mages, as they appeare nowe.

¶ Fuluius writeth, that there were in Rome. 24. horses of brasse gilte, and. 114. of Iuorie, besydes a number of mens images on horsbacke and on foote of marble and other matter. But of all these there are nowe none to be seene, sauing one of brasse on horsebacke at Saint Iohn Lateranes, whiche some ascribe vnto Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, some to Lucius Verus, & some to Seuerus: and an other there is in the Capitol called, Il gran Villano.

¶ In deede there be diuers bodyes without heades, I thinke because some straunger delityng in those antiquitees, haue broken of the heades to carie them away. Amongest all other Constantius, sonne of Constantine, being come out of Greece to see Rome: and arriuyng in the strete called Forum Traiani, rested all amased to beholde the wonderfull beautie thereof: and despayryng with him selfe to be hable to bring to passe any of those thynges that were before his eies, said, he woulde see, whether he could make such an other horse of brasse as was there vnder Traiane in the middest of the markette place. Wherunto one of his skilfull men present, named Ormisda, aunswered, that he were best fyrst to make suche an other stable to put hys horse in. And if emperours theim selfes haue merualled at these thynges, why shoulde not other men wonder at theim?

Of the hill Testacchio.

IF the common reporte be true, this hill is one of the notablest thinges amongeste the antiquytees of

Rome: because (as they saye) the Romaines ordeyned, that all tributes, which were brought yerely to Rome, should be laied in pottes made of the earth of the countreys from whens it came, whiche pottes after the money was paied, should be brought to the place where this hill lieth, there to be broken and remaigne on an heape for a perpetuall memory of the Romaine empyre. And beynge well considered, it shall appeare, that there can be no deuise lyke vnto this, to haue a thyng endure for euer. For if the hil had been made of any matter worth the caryng away, it should haue been spoyled longe er this time: but because there is nothyng to be gotten, saue potshardes, therfore it remaigneth whole as none other antiquitee dooeth. And although learned men allow not this vulgare opinio, thinking it hath growen rather of the broken pottes, that haue ben throwen out of the .vii. colledge of potters, founded by Numa Pompilius, yet beholdynge aduisedlye the place, whereon it standeth, beyng the fayrest plaine within the walles of Rome, me semeth it halfe incredible, that the Romains would suffer so fayre a ground to be occupied with potshardes: vnlesse there were some further purpose in it, than I can imagine. For the hill is little lacke of halfe a mile compasse, hygher a great deale than any toure in the towne wall, and so easie to get vp on euery side, that I haue ridden vp at the one end, and downe at the other and yet is the earthe of it so thynne, that diggynge .iii. yeches deepe, you shal finde potshardes.

De Hip-

De Hippodromo.

Betwene this Testacchio and the hil Auētine is a faire grene aūciētly called Hippodromus, where some yeres at Shroftide, the Romaines vse to thys daie, to tourney on horsbacke, & among other pastimes, they tie two bulles to the tayle of a carte, and so dryue the carte from the toppe of Testacchio downe into the playne, and he that fyrst can take the carte and bulles, shall haue theim: But if the bulles breake lose, as many times they doue, they make foule worke amongeste the people er they be taken, so that sometimes thei are faine to kyl theim. Some holde opinion, that this playe was firste deuised by Tarquiniur Priscus, to be celebrated in Februarie in honour of the infernal gods.

Of Graners and Arsenales.

On the other side betwene Testacchio & Tyber haue ben. 140. graners for corne, lōg and large, as by some of the olde foundacions it doeth yet appeare. And somwhat nerer the foote of the hil Auentine, were the sellers and vaultes for saulte, and al maner of merchaundise: with the Arsenales, where their shyppes and galleys were made: of whiche at this daye is scarce any signe to be perceiued.

Finally it were to tedious a matter for me to speake of euery notable thyng in Rome. For if Blondus, nor yet Fuluius Italians borne, dwellyng in Rome, & wel learned men, haue trauayled therin, and wolde not yet vndertake fully to describe those antiquitees, should I

a fraun-

a ſtraũger, that taried there but a ſmal time, enterpꝛiſe to do it? And yet amongeſt all other I had almoſte foꝛgotten the ſepulchꝛe of Bacchus, that lieth in a litle old temple beſides the church of Saint Agnes without the walles, moꝛe notable foꝛ the value of the ſtone than foꝛ the woꝛkemanſhip. Foꝛ it is of fine redde poꝛphiꝛie, plaine and ſquare lyke a cheſſe, and ſo greate, that the onely couer would requyꝛe a great foꝛce to lifte it vp: ſo that my guide ſated merely, if I had company ſufficyent to raiſe vp this ſtone, I woulde one night ſee what were within: meanyng that the god Bacchus could not be buried there without ſome treaſure.

Sepulchrũ Bacchi.

And to the entent that generally men may the better vnderſtande the ſoꝛtes of marble, and maners of buildyng, wherwith the citee hath been auncientlye beautyfied, I ſhal here reherſe one ſaiyng of Fuluius.

The ſayinge of Fuluius

The auncient greate buildynges, aſwell publyke as pꝛiuate, foꝛ the moſte parte were founded vppon greate ſquare ſtones, to the end that the waight and ſubſtance of the buyldyng ſhould be the moꝛe ſtedfaſt, euery ſtone ſo ioigned to other with yꝛon claſpes, that they neded no moꝛter. And than the wal from the foundacyon vpwardes was made of ſtones, that weighed not paſſe a pounde weight a peece, layed together pꝛopoꝛcyonallye chekerwyſe. The fronte of the buyldynge was moſte commonly wꝛought after the maner of a net, oꝛ pergetted either with a faire white mixture, oꝛ elles with teſſe, and ſome couered finely with thin marble, oꝛ with certayne plates of latine gylte. The vaultes and rooſes of the chaumbꝛes were trymmed eyther wyth glaſſe, with leade, with Ieſſe, oꝛ els with very fine peintynges:

tinges: and the flooꝛes vnder foote made some of glasse and some of the finest marble, oꝛ other pleasaunt deuy- ,,
ses of diuers makyng. ,,
¶ They had many kyndes of straunge marble, as white ,,
marble of the Ile of Paro and of Carrara, and that ,,
whiche cometh from Laconia the pleasauntest of all. ,,
The redde marble not vnlike the masard, with certaine ,,
white spottes, whyche they call pozphirie. The blond- ,,
die marble that groweth in Troade. The blacke mar- ,,
ble called Luculleus. The spotted marble called ,,
Serpentine. The Onichite bꝛought out of Arabia. ,,
The alablasser, and some marble transparente, that is ,,
to be seene thꝛough, as the Fengite, with diuers others ,,
,,

Kynoes of Marbles.

¶ Of the present estate of Rome.

OF the ground conteigned within the wall, scarcely the thirde parte is now inhabited, and that not where the beauty of rome hath been, but foꝛ the most part on the plaine to the water side, and in the Vaticane: because that sens the bishoppes beganne to reigne, euery man hath coueted to builde as neere the courte as myght be. Neuertheless those streetes and buildynges that are there at this time are so fayre, that I thynke no citee maeth excell it, by reason they haue had the beautifullest thynges of the antiquitees beforе rehersed to garnysshe theyꝛ houses withall. Specially the bishop, his Cardinalles, pꝛelates & other membꝛes of his churche, who haue all at theyꝛ commaundement. Foꝛ though the Romains haue in theyꝛ herts vnto this

dase a certaine memory of theyr auncient libertee, whi-
che they haue attempted manye tymes to recouer: yet
doth the bishop kepe thē in such subiectiō, that they dare
not ones steerre for their lyues, but speake they maye
what thei list, so it be no treason: and therfore many ti-
mes you shal here theim raile on the bishop and his of-
ficers that it is a wonder. In effect the present astate
of Rome in comparison of the aūcient astate deserueth
not to be spoken of, & yet I beleue, that in the Romay-
nes most glorie, there was neuer halfe so much pōmpe
vsed as nowe. O what a worlde it is to see the pryde
and abhominacion, that the Churchemen there main-
teigne: What is a kyng: what is an emperoure in hys
maiestee: Any thynge lyke to the Romaine bishop? No
surely, nor I would not wisshe theim so to be. And
to the entent you maye the better perceiue it, you shall
vnderstand, that on Chrystmas day, the yere of our lord
1547. Paule the thyrde beynge bysshop, I noted his co-
ming to church, because it was a principal feast celebra-
ted in Pontificalibus. Wherfore early in the morning
I resorted to the palaice, and there waited the cominge
of the Cardinalles, that for the most parte lie in the ci-
tee, & to come to saincte Peters, muste passe Ponte Sāt'
Angelo, where is an old order, that whan so euer any
Cardinall passeth the bridge, there is a peece of ordy-
naunce shotte of in the castell: for an honoure that the
bishop is bounde to obserue towardes his brethern.
I had not ben longe in the palaice, but I harde two
peeces shotte of at ones, wherby I knew that two Car-
dinalles were compynge, and therefore resorted to the
gate to see theim and their traine.

From

From Caſtel Sant' Angelo to Saint Peters ſtaiers. there is an excedynge faire ſtrete, ſtreight & leuel moze than a quarter of a myle long, called Borgo San Pie-ro, in the further ende wherof I ſawe theſe Cardinal-les come, and therwith out of the biſchops palaice came his garde of Suizzers al in white harneis, and there alongeſt before the gate made a lane halfe on one ſyde and halfe on the other, with their .ii. drummes & a fyfe before them. And aſſone as the Cardinalles approched, the drummes and fife began to playe, and ſo continued til the Cardynalles were well entred amongeſte the gard. Than the trumpettes blewe vp an other whyle, til the Cardinalles were almoſte at the gate, and as they ſhould enter, the ſhalmes began to playe, and ceaſ-ed not tyll they were alyghted, and mounted vp the ſtayers to the biſchoppes lodgeing.

¶ The lyke cerimonies were vſed vnto all the Cardi-nalles that came, whether one came alone or many to-gethers. And there taryed moze than .ii. houres har-kenyng to this gunneſhot and mery pipyng, and reke-ned aboue .40. Cardinalles that came thus rydynge, ſometime one alone, and ſometime .iii. or .iiii. together.

¶ There was no Cardinal that came without a greate traine of gentlim̄ and prelates, wel horſed and apoin-ted, ſome had .40. ſome .50. and ſome .60. or mo, & nexte before euery of theim rode .ii. henchemen, the one cary-yng a cuſhin and a riche clothe, and the other a piller of ſyluer, and the Cardinalles theim ſelfes aparayled in robes of crimſen chamlet, with redde hattes on their heades, rode on maples.

¶ When they were all come to the palaice, and had

waited a while in the chaumber of presence, the bisshop him selfe with the .iii. crowned miter full of sewelles, in a verye riche cope, with shoes of crimsen velvette, sette with precious stones, and in all his other pontifical apparaile, came forthe, and at the chamber dore sate him downe in a chaier of crymsen velvet, throughe the whiche renneth two staues covered with the same.

Thus beyng sette, the prelates & clergy, with the other officers passed on afore tym. Whiche are suche a numbre, as were able to make the muster of a battaile, if they were wel ordred in the field. Dataries, Threasorers, Clerkes of the Chamber, Penitẽtiaries, Prebendaries, Notaries, Protonotaries & a thousand mo, ech order of them, in his diuers deuise of parlyamente robes, all in skarlet, and for the most part finely furred.

Than came the double crosse, the sworde and the imperial hatte, and after that the Cardinalls by two & two, and betwene euery two a greate route of gentilmen.

La Guglia

Than came the ambassadours, & nexte them the bisshop him selfe blessing al the waye, and caryed in his chayre by .viii. men clothed in longe robes of skarlet: and on either side of hym went his garde makinge Rome, and crying abasso abasso, for they that wold not willingly knele, shalbe made knele by force. And I thinke verily the foremost of this order was distant from the hindermost more than a quarter of a myle.

Thus whan he came into the middest of the churche against the sacrament of the aulter, he turned him selfe towardes it, and bowyng his heade a litle, seemed to make a certaine familiare reuerence.

Than was he caried into the chapel, brought behinde

the

the aulter (for the aulter standeth in the middest open euery way) and there in a trone of wonderfull maiestee was set vp as a god.

The Cardinalles then bestowed them selfes after their auncientes in certaine halles, somewhat lower aboute the queere. Than sate the Ambassadours, and other prelates at theyr feete. And so whan they were set, the chapell beganne the office of the masse, and sange so sweetely, that me thought I neuer heard the lyke. At the communion of the masse the Cardynall that celebrated, brake the host in iii. peeces, whereof he eate one hym selfe, and the other two he deliuered vpon the paten to a Cardinall appointed, that brought it to the bishop, and in his presence (for feare of poysonyng) tooke assaye of the seconde peece: and deliuered hym the thyrde.

¶ When the masse was finished, the bishop gaue hys benediction, with many yeares of pardon, and than returned to the palaice in lyke order as he came.

¶ As for the pompe he vseth whan he rideth abroade, I nede not to speake of it, considerynge what I haue sayd, sauyng that you shall vnderstand, how Corpus domini is alwaies caried in a tabernacle before hym on a white hackeney, that is taught to kneele both at the settyng vp, and also at the tabyng downe of it.

¶ In dede the bishop for his owne ordinarie keepeth no great house, but his traine exceedeth al that I haue seen. For euery Cardinal & prelate keepeth house accordinge to his habilitee, and some of theim are so precise, that if one of theyr retinew be myssyng, whan they goe out of theyr doores, be it gentilman or other, he forfeiteth a cer-

tain peece of money, which he is conſtreigned forthwith to paye. And lyghtlye there is none of theym without iii. or. iiii. paiges trymmed like yonge prynces, for what purpoſe I wolde be loth to tell.

¶ If I ſhoulde ſaye, that vnder theyr longe robes they hyde the greateſt pryde of the worlde, it might happen ſome men wolde beleue it, but that they are the vaineſt men of all other, theyr owne actes doe wel declare.

For theyr ordinarie paſtime is to diſguiſe them ſelfes, to go laugh at the Courtiſanes houſes, and in the ſhrouing time, to ride maſkyng about with theim, which is the occaſion that Rome wanteth no iolie dames, ſpecially the ſtrete called Iulia, whiche is more than halfe a myle longe, fayre buylded on both ſydes, in maner inhabited with none other but Courtiſanes, ſome worthe v. and ſome worthe. xx. thouſand crownes more or leſſe as theyr reputacyon is. And many tymes you ſhal ſee a Courtiſane ride into the countrey, with. x. or. xii. horſe waityng on hir.

¶ Briefely by reporte, Rome is not without. 40000. harlottes maintaigned for the moſt part by the clergye and theyr folowers, ſo that the Romaines them ſelfes ſuffer theyr wiues to goe ſeldome abrode, either to churche or other place, and ſome of theim ſcarcelye to looke out at a latiſe window, wherof theyr prouerbe ſayeth, In Roma vale piu la putana, che la moglie Romana, that is to ſay, in Rome the harlot hath a better lyfe, than ſhe that is a Romaines wyfe.

¶ In theyr apparaile they are as gorgeouſe as may be, and haue in theyr goyng ſuch a ſolemne pace, as I neuer ſawe. In concluſion to liue in Rome is more coſtly

than

than in any other place, but he that hathe money maye haue there what hym lyketh. But now remaigneth to speake of the new buildynges.

Of saincte Peters churche.

The churche of saincte Peter standeth somewhat aloste on the hill Vaticane, and hathe before it a very faire and large roume, as it were a market place: in the middest wherof is a goodlye fountayne of marble, that gusheth out water of a great height.

From this place vp to the churche are aboute. 30. steppes or greces of square stone, the solemnest that I haue seene. For they are almoste 30. paces longe. At the toppe of this staire, ouer the middest of a goodly porche is a great image of sainct Peter of fine marble. Within that is a large courte paued with fine marble, in the middest wherof is an antike pineaple of brasse of a wonderful biggenesse, and so many images, pillers and other riche stones, that haue been gathered out of the antiquitees, and brought thither to furnisshe the new buildynges withal, that it should be an endelesse worke to describe them. Vnto of thys courte is the entrie into the churche, which hath iii. great gates of brasse, wherin the stories of the actes of Eugenie the, iiii. are lynely grauen.

This church within is nothynge faire to the eie, but it hath in it many beautyful and fine thynges, as the tabernacle of marble, where (they say) Christes sudarye, and one of the. iii. nayles lieth, the goodly brasen sepulture of Sixtus the. iiii. the brasē images of sainct Peter

and Paule, a numbre of goodlye pyllers, and diuers other thynges.

¶ But aboue all the newe buildyng, if it were finished, wolde be the goodliest thyng of this worlde, not onelye for the antike pillers that haue ben taken out of the antiquitees, and bestowed there; but also for the greatnesse and excellent good proporcion that it hathe. Neuertheless it hath been so many yeres adoing, and is yet so vnperfect, that most men stand in dout, whether euer it shalbe finished or no.

In the middest of this newe buildyng is a preatye chapell, wherein the bishop, with all his Cardinalles and clergie, vse to celebrate theyr solemne ceremonyes.

¶ Of the bishops palaice with Beluedere.

The bishops palaice ioigneth to the church, whych to myne eie seemeth muche greater than goodly: notwithstandyng the lodgynges withinforth are faire, but I can moste commende the staier, that goeth downe from the palaice to the church, almost a quarter of a myle about, so fayre paued and playne, that a man may easily ride vp and downe.

¶ About .iii. quarters of a myle from the palyace is the bishops banketting house, called Beluedere, one of the finest buildynges that is to be seen, so riche, so pleasante, and of so goodly a prospecte, that it seemeth almoste an other paradyse. The garden walled round about, is ful of faire orynge trees, and hath in the middest a goodlie fountaine with perfect plottes in molde of the riuer of Nile

of Nile in Aegypt, & of Tyber, that renneth through Rome. Besides the images of fine marble of Romulus and Remus playing with a woulfes teates, of Apollo with his bowe and arowes, of Laocoonte, with his .ii. children wrapped about with serpentes, of Venus beholdynge little Cupido, of the sorowfull Cleopatra, lyinge by the ryuer syde, and of dyuers other to longe to reherse.

¶ Of Castel Sant Angelo.

This Castell is no lesse notable than some of the rest. It standeth on the banke of Tyber in maner cleane without the towne, and hath .iii. wardes, one within an other: excellently wel builded and strōg, and after most mens opinions is impregnable, vnlesse it be by famine. The two inner wardes stand vpon the sepulchre of the emperour Adrian, which is a certaine blackemasse of earth of a great height, compounded of certaine mixtures, whiche being dried, is harder and more durable than stone it selfe. Upon this foundacion Adrian made his tombe, and decked it with suche ornamentes of marble and other sumptuouse thynges, as made it seeme one of the rarest thyngs of the worlo. But after it came to the bishops handes, considering the force of the place and strong foundacion, thei conuerted it to a fortresse, and haue edified many goodly lodgeinges vpon it, so that oftentymes the bysshop hym selfe lieth in it, and kepeth his court there.

¶ Of buildinges in general.

FInally there be a noumber of as fayre palaices in Rome as in any other place of the woꝛlde whereof it should be to long here to make perticuler mencion: but specially the palaice that Paule nowe bisshoppe there hath builded, by the place called Campo di fiore, where Pompeius house stode in the old time, deserueth not to be foꝛgotten. Foꝛ he hath rooted out of the ruines of the antiquitees suche goodly marble pillers and other fine stone, which he hath bestowed on that house, that if he finisshe it, as it is begunne, it woull be the gaylaunttest tꝛyng olde oꝛ new, that shal be founde agayne in all Europe, and he hathe called it after hys owne name Palazzo Farneſe.

¶ Abbꝛidgement of the lyues of the Romayne Bysshoppes.

BEcause my pꝛyncypall purpose tendeth to deserue the astates of Italy, I nede not to vse much circumstance, either in mattiers of relygyon, oꝛ yet in wꝛitinge all the liues of the Bysshops of Rome. Wherefoꝛe entendyng to begin at Siluester, the fyꝛst bisshop there that had any thing in perpetuitee, I haue thought good to declare the diuers opinions of theyꝛ oꝛiginal.

Peter the apostle.

¶ Some auncient authours affirme, that Peter one of

Chꝛi-

Chriſtes Apoſtles, after that he had ſufficiently confirmed the church in Aſia, & confuted the errour of thoſe Chriſtians that allowed circumciſion, came to Rome the ſecond yere of Claudius Empire, and there was receiued of the congregacion as biſhop. In which office he miniſtred. 25. yeres, and at laſte was crucifyed with the heade downewardes, the ſame daye that Paule the apoſtle was beheaded, the laſt yeare of Neros reygne, and the. 37. yere after Chriſtes death.

Contrariwyſe manye learned men at theſe daies are of opinion, that Peter neuer came in Rome, groundynge them ſelfes vpon diuers reaſons, as this. If Peter had commen thither, it could not haue ben vnwritten in the holy ſcriptures, either by Luke in the actes of the apoſtelles, or elles by Paule in ſome of his epiſtelles. Or if Peter were of that age, that it ſhould ſeme he was at Chriſtes death, and after continued in Antioche and other places ſo many yeres as is to be proued, it ſemeth impoſſible he ſhould come to Rome, and there liue. 25. yeres. Wherefore they ſay, the ambicious biſhops of Rome, to couer theyr vſurped auctoritee, haue feygned this comyng of Peter thither.

But this is clere, that from Peter to Syluester they recken. 33. biſhops: whyche for the moſt parte were perſecuted, and many of them martyred by the emperours officers. So that in maner they alwayes kepte theim ſelfes out of ſight, preachyng and miniſtryng ſecretlye without pompe aſtate or ſolemne ceremonie. But from the tyme of Syluester hitherwardes, as they grewe in wealthe, ſo encreaſed theyr worldely maieſtee and ambicion, as hereafter more playnely appeareth.

¶As for the bisshops names, the time of theyr reygne, and the date of our Lord, because that in a table I haue put theim all togethers, I neede not particulerly to reherse euery one of them, but such as the occasion of my purpose shal necessarily requyre.

Silueſter. 1. ¶Silueſter the fyrst of that name, after he had been a certaine space in the hil Soratto, now called Mõte di San Silueſtro, where for feare of persecution, he hydde him selfe, hearynge of the good inclinacion that the emperour Constantine the fyrst was of, towardes Chrystian religion, came to Rome, and so discretely behaued him selfe that the Emperoure was conuerted to the right fayeth, and baptised.

¶Some wryte, that the occasion thereof proceded of a myracle doen on Constantine, in recouering his helth from the leaprye. But Platina thynketh that to be a fable, and in maner proueth it, thynkyng rather it proceded of the signe of the crosse, that Constantine dyd see in the firmamente, vnder whiche he was promysed victorie, and so caryng a redde crosse in hys standarde before him, he ouercame his enemy Maxẽtius, whereupon he gaue eare to Silueſters preaching & was conuerted. But whatsoeuer the occasion was, it is agreed, that Silueſter baptised Cõstãtine, who being chrystned turned many of the gentiles temples to chrystian churches: endowyng them with ornamentes and possessions.

¶Not longe after, leauyng Rome to Silueſter and his successours, as the clergie saie, Constantine wente to dwel at Bizantium, whiche he had than newly redified, calling it Constantinople after his owne name. So that from thensforth the Chrystian faithe began to

flourishe

flourishe ouer all the worlde: and therfore moste parte of all Christian churches sent to the bysshops of Rome to learne of them the ceremonies and ordres necessary to be vsed in the churche, by reason wherof the emperours beyng residente elsewhere, the Romaine bishops grewe in suche reputacion, that at length they became emperours theim selfes.

The donacion of Constantine.

And there is an auncient writyng in the Vaticane librarie, called the Donacion of Constantine, which is so vehement liberal, that it should seeme the emperour spoyled him selfe of all his glory and honoure, and of a great part of his dominion, to geue them to the church of Rome: by auctoritee whereof the Romaine bishops haue taken vpon theim the imperial vestementes, maiestee, commaundementes and dompnyon ouer seuerall countreys.

Valla agaynst the donacion.

¶ In deede Laurentius Valla, an excellente learned man, and a Romaine borne, hath writen a boke to confound this Donation of Constantine, and proueth by so many reasons, that it hath been feigned by some bysshop of later time than Siluester, that I am persuaded rather to beleue him than the Donacion. In effect this Siluester was the first that prescribed a direct order of ministers in the church, and howe they shoulde be knowen in theyr degrees from the highest to the lowest: by whose tyme there spronge dyuers sectes amongest the Christians, as the Arrianes, Photines, Sabellianes, and others: for whose reformacion the Nicene counsayle was called, but for al that those errours ceased not many yeres after.

Nicene counsayle.

Next vnto Siluester Marke succeded, who made his clergie

Marcus.

clergy like vnto a common wealth, exempting the same from all temporall iurisdiction, and further established a certaine order for the solemne cõsecration of the Romaine bishops, that before vsed no pompe at all.

Julius. ¶ Julie the fyrst contended with the churche of the Orient, partly for the Arrian sect, but most of all for the supremacie of the churche. For this Julie was the fyrst that claimed the inheritaunce of Peters keyes, for the which Constantius, the sonne of Constantine, banished hym out of Rome. But ere he had fullye been awaye .x. monethes the Emperoure dyed, and than returned he from exile.

Liberius. ¶ Liberius the firste was bishop after him, who by the power of the Arrianes, after the counsaile holden at Syllaine, was banished, and Felix the second chosen in his place. But at length through the emperours displeasure, Felix was deposed, and Liberius restored, who from that time forward fauoured the Arrines, and ordeyned that euery bishop should be residente on hys benefice, and applie him selfe to fede his flocke.

Felix. 2.

Damasus. ¶ Damasus succeded Liberius, who contented with Vrcisin⁹, one of the decons of the church, that was likewise elected vnto the bishoprike. For the Romaines at that time were diuided into sectes, so that a number of either side were slaine, but finally Damasus preuailed, and Vrcisinus was conueyed to Naples.

This Damasus was afterwards accused of adulterye: and therfore called .40. bishops together, and clerynge him selfe of the crime, not onely punished his accusers, but also made a decree, Sub pœna tallionis, that none of the clergy from thenceforth shuld be accused, whyche

Pœna

Pœna tallionis condemneth the accuser to the payne of the accusacion, in case he proue it not.

¶At this time lyued sainct Hierome, that than hadde newly translated the bible out of Hebrue into the Latine tonge, and had set it forthe to the edyficacion of the churche, which before had none other but the .70. interpretours. Hierome.

¶Syritius was the next bishop, in whose tyme, the sect of the Manichees encreased much: of al other most pestilent to our Christian religion. It beganne thorough one Maneph, a Persian borne, who named hym selfe Christ, chose vnto him .12. apostles, reproued the old testament, folowed the new, and sayd, that Christ had but a fantastical and a feigned bodye: and with wonders gate hym suche credite, that in maner all the east partes were corrupted with his heresies. Syritius.

Finally Syritius, to reforme this & other like sectes, called a generall counsaile in Constantinople of .1350. bishoppes, where these opinions were vniuersally condemned: though they could not be clerely extinguished many yeres after.

¶But because it appertaygneth not to my purpose, to write of sectes and opinions, seyng that til the tyme of Gregorie the seconde, about the yere of our lord .720. the Romaine bishops trauailed most in matters of religion, beyng alwaies obedient and ruled by the emperours without peculier dominion: I woull passe theym ouer for that space.

¶True it is, that in the tyme of Phoca the emperour, vppon controuersie moued betwene the Patriarke of Constantinople and the bishop of Rome, for the supre-

macie 603

Supremacie of the churche.

macie of the churche, Biniface the.iii. obteined a pry-uilege of the Emperour, that he & his successours from thenseforthe should be taken for Primates and chiefe of all Christian bishops. By reason of whiche pre-ferrament not lōg after the Romaine bishops, not onely to take on them the direction of al other bishops, with graunting of Dispensacions, Iubilees, and Pardons, but also wold put forthe their feete to be kissed of prynces, yea and of Emperours them selfes, as appeareth by the example of the emperoure Iustinian, who kyssed the feete of bishop Constantine the fyrst, as Platina affirmeth: like as other emperours sens haue accustomed to doe. But for all that I fynde not, that any bysshop openly contended with the Emperours tyll the time of this Gregorie the seconde.

Gregorius 2. Images put out of churches

Leo the.iii. emperour commaunded throughout hys dominion, that all maner of images shoulde be cleane had out of the churches for auoydyng of Idolatrye, but the most part of the people disalowed this ordinaunce. Through comfort wherof this Gregorie so cōtended against it, that in most parts of Italy, the emperours officers executing their pryncy commandemēt in this behalfe, were bewē to peces: as ỳ erarke of Rauēna with hys son, Marinus Spatarius duke of Rome with hys son, & diuers other. Insomuch that Gregorye not onely sequestred from the emperoure the customes and tares due vnto him out of Rome and many other cities in Italie, but also called a counsaile, and excomunicated the emperour as an heritike, and leauynge the churche in that astate died. Blōdus saith, that the doer hereof was Stephen the seconde, who was bishop before this Gregorie:

gozie;but by agreement of moſt authours it ſhould not ſeeme to be ſo.

¶Than ſucceded Gregozie the.iii.who folowynge the example of his pzedeceſſour,called a counſaile in Rome of a.1000.biſhops,wherin the emperour was not only excomunicate againe,but alſo by decree depziues of his imperiall title and iuriſdiction,and the Italion nacion pzocured to rebel againſt him. Ergozius. 3

¶By reaſon wherof whan Luitprandus kynge of the Lumbardes,had beſieged the citee of Rome,the byſhop could not ſoz ſhame requyze ſuccours of the emperour but was faine to ſende to Charles Martel,than beynge chiefe ruler in Fraunce;by whoſe fayze meane and entreatie,the Lumbarde withdzewe hys ſiege, the rather becauſe Charles Martel had made hym his goſſippe. And here beganne the fyzſt amitee betwene the kinges of Fraunce and the Romaine churche. Charles Martel

¶Zacharie ſucceded Gregozy,who to encreaſe the reputacion of the Romaine cyurche,at the interceſſion of Pepine,ſonne vnto Charles Martel,than greate mayſter of the Frenche kynges houſe, depoſed Chilperike than being king,and made him a monke cloſed vp in a cloiſter , and afterwardes inueſted Pepine kynge of Fraunce. Foz which acte the heyzes of Pepine were euer after earneſt frendes to the Romaine See. Zacharias Chilperike depoſed

¶This Zacharie vppon occaſion wente to Narnia to Luitprandus king of Lumbardes, & there partly with making a ſermon, & partly with his humble behauiour, entred in ſuch grace with the kinge,that he gaue to the church of Rome.iii.citees,Narnia,Ancona,& Humana,with a great baley in Sutri: whiche were the fyzſts

notable possessions that the church of Rome obteined. For vntyl this time if the churche had anye temporalitees, they were so smal, that they serued scarcely to the necessary findyng of the ornamentes and ministers. But after this they encreased so much, that they passed princely estates.

Stephanus. 2. ¶ After Zacharie folowed Stephen the secounde, in whose time Aristolfus or Aistolfus, kynge of Lumbardes, troubled all the estates of Italye, by reason he had gotten Rauenna, with dyuers other cytees, and was like to haue subdued the rest. Wherfore the bishop that than had taken vppon him to rule the Romaines, sent for ayde vnto Constantine the .v. than emperour. From whom he receiued so smal coumfort, that for his last refuge, he repayred to Pepine kyng of france, and procured him to come into Italye.

¶ Pepine to gratifie the Romaine church, vsed all his power, & two seueral times passed the Alpes against Aristolfe. At the firste besieged Pauia, and there constreigned Aristolfe to promyse more than he performed in deede: and at the seconde tyme, for breache of that promise, to forgoe the exarkate of Rauenna, whiche he had before taken by force frō the emperours exarke there: so that Pepine at his laste viage gaue vnto the romaines, although the bishop vnder that name receiued it as his owne, al the territory of Pentapoli and Aemilia, from Placentia to Pesaro, lying betwene the Appenine hilles, the Po, and the Adriatike sea: which are at the least .xi. or .xii. citees, wyth the countreis aboute theim. Throughe the gifte wherof the Romaine bishoprike encreased no lesse in power than before time

it had

it had dooen in auctoritee.

True it is, that the emperoure sente his ambassadours vnto Pepine, to claime this exarkate, whereof he & hys predecessours had ben in possessiō. 170. yeres: but those ambassadours could not be heard.

¶ Blondus saieth, that these thynges happened in the time of bishop Gregory the. iii.

¶ Of this Paule I finde nothyng notable, sauinge he did his best to dissuade Constantine the. v. emperoure from the defacyng and burlynge of images oute of the christian churches: but Constantine, folowyng the example of his father Leo, not onelye extirped the images, but also put diuers to death that wente aboute to resist it. Paulus. Images.

After the death of Paule, Desiderius, king of the Lumbardes made Constantine bishop by force, but within a yere, the clergie of Rome deposed him, and elected Stephen the. iii. in hys place; in whose tyme happened no notable thing in the church, sauyng that he with al the clergie immediatly after his election, in token of humilitee, wente barefoote in procession from the Laterane church to Saint Peters. Constantinus. 2 Stephanus. 3

¶ This Adrian was so haulte of courage, that whan Desiderius the king sent ambassadours to cōgratulate his election, and to enter in amitee with him, he answered theim, how may I truste him, that so ofte hathe broken his faith: wherwith Desiderius toke such displeasure, that he inuaded the churches dominion, & toke by force Faenza Ferrara, Comacchio, Mōtefeltro Vrbino, Senegalia, & was come as farre as Spoleti, entendyng to goe to Rome, had not. iii. bishops mette him Adrianus.

therewith an excomunicacion: for feare whereof he returned to Pauia without any more adoe. But because he held still in possession the foresaied citees, the bishop of Rome procured Charlemaigne, than frēch king, to come into Italye, who with a mighty power besyeged Pauia, toke Desiderius with his wife and children prisoners, restored to the churche all that hys father Pepine had geuen, with more, and reserued vnto him selfe the dominion of Lumbardye.

¶ In this bishops time Tyber rose so high, that Rome was in maner cleane drowned.

Leo. ¶ After Adrian succeded Leo the. iii. who because the Romaines conspyred against him, fledde vnto Charlemaigne, & by him was restored with great pompe into his estate, & for pacifiyng this romaine fury against the bishop, Charlemaigne him selfe wᵗ a great army came to Rome, where for the high seruice he had doen to holy church, the Romaine bishop annointed and proclaimed hym emperour August: and his sonne Pepine kyng of Italie. So that from this time forewardes the emperours of Constantinople were no more reputed Romayne emperours: but emperours of Greece. For Charlemaigne dyd so much, that at lēgth the empires were deuided by confines, and the Greeke Emperours consented to suffer the Frenchemen in quyette bothe with the name and dominion of the Occidental empire.

Thempire deuided

After the death of Charlemaigne and of Pepine, hys Leo remembryng the old cōspiracie made against him, caused many of the chiefe Romaines his enemies to be put to death. For the whiche at laste he was fayne to withdrawe him from rome, and lyng at Biera, the Romaines

maynes in a sodayne rage spoyled and rased to the erth all the buildynges that he had made or procured to be made in Rome. And because the bishop dyed shortly therupon. Lewys the french kyng and emperour, sente his cosin Bernarde as kynge into Italie, to be a staye against the inconueniences that of this fury might haue folowed: whyche Bernarde within few yeres after rebelled, but at last he was constreigned to yeld him selfe, and so beyng brought into Fraunce, was beheaded.

This Stephen went into Fraunce, and there crowned the forenamed Lewis emperour, who for his great curtesie and gentilnesse was called Lewys the meeke: and at his retourne to rome, this bishop brought many Romains home with him, that his predecessour had exiled. Stephanus.4

After Stephen succeded Pascall, who crowned Lotharius, sonne of Lewys the meeke, kyng of Italy, and successour to his father in the empyre: and wyth fayre persuasions obteined of Lewys the election or confyrmacion of all bishops, which before that time depended onely vpon the emperours pleasure. And further procured the confines and limites of the churches dominion to be made certaine, and that with the largest. Pascalis

But Gregory the.iiii. would not take vppon hym the bishoprike, tyl he had receiued hys confyrmacion from the emperour Lewys before named. gregorymus.4

In his time, the Saracines in great noumber landed in Italie, besieged Rome, toke it, spoyled it, and all the countrey about: but at lasse they were repulsed by the Marques Guido of Lumbardy, with helpe of the frenchemen.

Sergius the seconde, fyrste gaue presidente to all hys Sergius.

succeſſours to change theyr names: by reaſon that hys owne name Bocca di porco that is to saye, ſwyneſmouth, was ſo vnſemely, that he thought it not agreable to his dignitee. He repayred the walles of the Vaticane, and buylded Caſtel Sant' Angelo vppon the tombe of Adrian.

Johannes. 8. ¶ Joban the. viii. was an engliſhe woman, that in hir youth diſguiſed in a boyes apparaile was brought to Athenes in Greece, where ſhe profited ſo much in learnyng, that whan ſhe returned to Rome, for hir good behauiour and ſingler reputacion ſhe was elected biſhop: and ſo continued more than two yeres; til at laſt going in proceſſion towardes ſaint Johns Lateranes, ſhe fell in trauayle of childe in the high way, and there dyed. For whyche cauſe the byſhops to this daye doe forſake that way, and (as they ſay) whan any new byſhop is elected, he is brought to ſainct Johns Lateranes, & there ſet in a chayre with an hole, that the eldeſt Deacon of the Cardinalles may feele vtrum habet teſticulos.

Adrianus. 2. ¶ Adrian the ſeconde was elected and eſtablyſhed byſhop without the emperours conſent, wherwith the emperours ambaſſadours, than reſident in Rome, began somewhat to be moued: but at length the emperour himſelfe was ſo contented withal, that from thenſeforth the clergie in maner eſteemed not the emperours.

Johannes. 9. ¶ John the. ix. ſucceded Adrian, and willyng to crowne Lodouicus balbus frenche kynge emperour: the Romaines (that fauoured more Charles the. iii. kynge of Germanye, who than was entred into Italye with an army) put the byſhop in priſon: but he was ſhortly conueighed out, and fled into Fraunce, where he annoyn-

ted the

ted the kyng emperour. Neuertheiesse within a whyle after the frenche kynge dyed, and than was the bishop reconsiled to the forsayd kyng Charles, whome he afterwarde crowned emperour.

¶Adrian the.3. bishop made a lawe, that from thensforthe the emperours should haue naught to doe wyth hys successours elections. Adrianus.3.

Stephen the.vi. bearyng malice in his herte agaynste his predecessour Formosus, caused him to be taken out of his graue, to be spoyled of his pontyficall vestementes, his fingers to be cut of, and his body to be throwen into Tyber, as an excomunicate and damned person. For which act there grewe heynous contencion amongest the Romains that ceased not many yeres after. Stephanus 6.

At this place Platina began to lament the tyrannye of the Romaine bishops, because from hense forthe there reigned no more humilitee, temperance, religiõ, trouth nor charitee among theim: but in stede therof ambicyon, disdeygne, auarice, falshead, and tyrannye. For shortlye after Leo the.v. was by force deposed, and put in prison by Christofer the first, one of his owne bringyng vp: who contynued scarcelye.vii. monethes, but was likewyse serued by Sergius the.iii.

Here, I haue thought good to make a lytle digression, because of the notable chaunge of the empire.

About this time began the contencion betwene Lewis the Frenche kynge, and Berengarius Duke of Friuli for the empire and dominion of Lumbardye.

The Italians wolde not, that the bishops of Rome shoulde crowne any other emperour than one of theyr owne nacion, wherupon Berengarius toke on him the

name

name of emperour and kyng of Italye, and in that quarel fought twise wyth Lewys. The firste battaile he loste, but the seconde he wan: in the whiche Lewys was taken prisoner, and one of his eies put oute. And thus ended the empire Charlemaignes descent, for the whiche was no small contencyon awhyle betwene the.iii. nacions, Italian, Frenche and Douche.

Change of the empyre.

Berengarius.1

¶ Fyrste this Berengarius reygned wyth the name of emperour.iiii.yeres, and had no smal warres, specially with the Conte Guido di Spoleti: who at the laste was discomfited and slaine in the feld. And as some wryte, the bysshop Rando gaue Berengarius the crowne.

Berengarius, 2

After him reigned Berengarius the seconde.bii.yeres. who suffred the Hungaryens to passe into Italye, vpon condicion they should not offend hys subiectes: but they kepte not theyr couenaunt wyth hym.

Raulfe Duke of Burgoyne

And than came Raulfe Duke of Burgoyne and dzaue hym out of Italye: whyche he ruled for the space of .iii. yeres, tyl Berengarius, with the helpe of the Hungaryens recouered it agayne.

Hugo Conte d' Arli

¶ Than came Hugh, Conte d'Arli, and reigned after Berengarius.x.yeres as kyng of Italye.

Berengarius, 3

The laste of the Italyans was Berengarius the, iii. who reigned about.xi.yeres, and was expulsed, as you shall here afterwardes.

Johannes, 11

John the.xi.(a better warriour than churchman) with the helpe of Alberico Marques of Tuscane, gathered an army, and fought with the Sarasines, that than had ouerronne Puglia and Calabria, and were coming to Rome, & in effect so discomfited theim, that they fled to Monte Garganó, were they fortified them selfes, and

did mu-

did much hurte afterwardes in the realme of Naples. Finally he fel at variaunce with the forenamed Marques, who therfore called the Hungarians into Italye, and scourged the whole nacion, aswel his owne subiectes as others: So that the Romains to be auenged toke Alberico and beheaded hym, and the souldiours toke the bishop and strangeled hym.

Agapet the seconde, seeyng the puyssance of Berengarius the.iii. and fearyng to come vnder hys subiection, with consent of the romains procured Otho, than newly chosen emperour in Germany, with a greate armye to come into Italie. Where he fought twyse with Berengarius, and at either tyme toke hym and hys sonne Albert prysoners. The fyrste tyme he restored hym to the estate of Lumbardye vppon conditions. But the seconde tyme he and his sonne bothe were ledde away, and confined the one to Bamborough in Almaigne, & the other to Constantinople: where they died miserably. Agapitus. ii. Otho

¶ John the .xii. not by free election, but by the power of his father Alberico than chiefe of the Romaynes, was made byshop. For thoughe the byshops had longe time continued like kynges, I meane for theyr estate & temporall possessyons: yet for all that the Romaynes created yerely certaine Consules and other officers after theyr olde facion, and had belongyng to theyr commō welth diuers townes nere vnto Tuscane, betweene Vrbeuentano, & Tudertino, and all that is betweene Naples, Marsi, Riete, and rome, so that the chiefe Romaines bare a great stroke in the byshops elections. Johannes xii.

This bishop crowned Otho beforenamed fyrste emperoure of the Germaynes. For neither Henry Duke of

Saxonie last Emperour before him, nor yet Conrade successour to Lewys before named of Charlemaignes descent, were euer crowned: though they both toke vpon theim the imperial auctoritee.

This Iohn was a man of so ill liuynge, that two of his Cardinalles complained on him to the emperour: beseechyng him to see a reformacion for an exaumple to the world. But the bishop hearynge of this, was soone euen with them. For he cutte of the ones nose, and the others handes: and afterwardes receiued the emperour with so good a countinance, that he seemed nothinge giltey til the clergy with one voice accused him, wherevpon he fledde into the mountaines & hidde him selfe: so that the emperour with consent of the clergie chose Leo the.viii. But assone as the emperoure retourned home, Iohn by force of his friendes expulsed Leo, recouered his bishoprike, and so continued til he died.

¶ Some write, that this was Iohn the.xiii. For amongest the auctheours is some confusion in the number of these Iohns, specially because some recken the englisshe Iohan for one, and some recken hir not: but how so euer it be, this Iohn succeded Agapet the secound: and as some write, was taken in adoulterye and slayne by the womans housband.

Iohannes. 13.

¶ Iohn the.xiii. elected by the clergie against the Romaines will, was taken by Geffroie Cõte di Campania & exiled, till this Geffroie & his sonne were slayne by an other lorde of Campania. Insomuche that the emperour Otho, hearyng of this bishops exile, made an armye, and came to rome, where after a solemne entrey, he toke all the senatours and put theim in prison,

sente

sent the Consules prisoners into Almaigne: and one Peter that had been chiefe of the conspiracye against John, was drawen through the stretes, whipped naked hanged by the heare of the head, and finally in maner halfe dead sent prisoner into Germany, where he finyshed hys dayes. For which courtesie this John crowned Otho the second (sonne of this fyrste Otho) emperour, by the fathers consent, and his wife Theophila empresse.

¶ Benedict the.vi. was taken by Cinthio, a noble man of rome, and beynge layed in prison in Castell Sant' Angelo, was either strangled or famished to death. Benedictus. 6.

Bonifface the.vii. beynge constreyned to forsake rome, toke all the riches of. S. Peters Churche wyth hym to Constantinople, and there sold it: and at length retourned to Rome, where after he was wel receiued, he put out one of his Cardinalles eies. Bonifatius. 7.

¶ Gregory the.v. by reason of a commocion in Rome, fled first into Tuscane, & afterwardes into Germany because he wolde not consent to crowne Crescentius, emperour: who beynge the noblest amongest the Romaines, was prouoked by the Italians to take the empyre vpon him. So that whan Gregory was fled, they made one that had been bishop of Placentia bishop of Rome, and named him John the.17. but Otho the. iii. than emperour, with a puissant army came to Rome, & wolde haue besieged it, had not the Romayns receiued him, so that Crescentius and the bishop John both fled into Castel Sāt' Angelo, & there held thē til they had so faire offres made on themperours behalfe, that vpon truste therof they came forthe and submytted theim sel-

Gregorius. 5

ses. But for all that they were both turmented, and at laste put to death. Wherevpon it folowed, that this Gregory, who was a Saxon borne, transferred the election of emperours vnto. vii. princis of his owne nacion, that is to wete. The king of Boeme, cupbearer, the Marques of Brandenburgh camberlaine, the Conte Palatine sewer, & the Duke of Saxonie swordbearer, with. iii. Archebishops of Mentes, Treuere, & Coleyn. And ordeyned further, that from the Emperours election to his coronacion, he shuld be called none other but Cæsar and kyng of Romaines, & after that the byshop of Rome had crowned him, he should be called Emperour and August, whych order by consente of the forenamed Otho, was establisshed about. 200. yeares after Charlemaignes coronacion.

Electours of the empire.

Cesar,

Augustus

Benedictus. 8

Benedicte the. viii. crowned Henry the seconde, emperour: who was the fyrst that accordynge to the order of Gregorie the. v. was elected by the princis of Germanye. Some call hym Henry the fyrste, because Henrye Duke of Saxonie, that succeded Conrade, neuer came to Rome to be crowned.

Benedict the. ix. for his naughtye behauiour was expulsed, and Siluester the. iii. placed in his roume, who helde it. 40. daies and than was Benedict restored.

Benedictus, 9

Neuertheleste Benedic mistrustyng that he coulde not kepe it longe, solde his iurisdiction vnto Gregorye the vi. but the emperour. Henry the. iii. came to rome deposed these. iii. bishops, and created Clement the seconde, who liued not fully. x. monethes, by reason that his next successour Damasus the second found meane to poison him, beynge after so serued hym selfe the. 23. daye nexte

Shiftynge and poysonyng of Romayne byshops.

folow-

folowynge hys election.

¶Leo the.ix. beyng sent as bishop to Rome, at the Romaines requeste, that desired the emperour to send them a good man, mette with.ii. mõkes by the way, who perswaded hym so muche, that he put of his pontificall habite, and priuately came to rome, saying that he repented hym to haue taken of the emperour, that which appertained to the clergies free election. For whyche humilitee the clergies embraced hym, and neuertheles made hym their bishop. Leo.9.

¶He made an armie against the Normains, than reignyng in the Realme of Naples, to recouer Beneuento that they had wonne from the church, where his army was discoumfited, and he with diuers of his Cardinales taken prysoners. But the Normaines freely deliuered him, and honourably sent hym home.

¶In his time was the counsaile of Vercelli called, against the opinion of Berengarius for the sacrament of communion.

¶Stephen the.ix. brought the churche of Hyllayne to the obedience of the church of Rome, which for.200 yeres before would neuer knowlage Rome for hys superiour. Stephanus.9

¶Nicolas the.ii. after the clergie had deposed Benedicte the.x. was elected, who made a decree, that from thensefor the the Cardynalles onely shoulde choose the bysshoppe. Nicolaus.2

He created Robert Guiscarde duke of Calabria and Puglia, and made hym lieutenaunt of the Church, by whose power he subdued to the churches dominion the Prenestini, Tusculani, & Numentani: with diuers o-

ther territories aboute Rome.

Alexander.2. ¶Alexander the.ii. in the beginning of his state was disturbed by Cadolo bishop of Parma: for the whiche they fought two battailes, but finallye Alexander preuailed, by reason that at a counsaile holden in Mantua, where the emperour was present, the whole clergy agreed vppon Alexander, and exempted from all emperours the auctoritee of confyrmacion of the Romaine bishops: whych afterwardes was occasion of many inconueniences.

Gregorius.7 ¶Gregorie the.vii. incontinentlye vppon his election beganne to proue maistries with the emperour Henry the.iii. Fyrste he woulde not bee confyrmed of the emperour, and afterwardes, where the emperoure before tyme hath vsed to geue bishoprikes, Gregorye woulde geue them him selfe. So that whan a bishop dyed, the emperour woulde name one, and Gregory an other. Wherof followed excomunications as thicke as haile, so that at last the emperoure hym selfe was not onelye excomunicate, but also by the ecclesiasticall power deposed of the empyre. And yet had religion so muche power in hym, that whan he was come into Italye, and had besieged his enemy Gregory within the towne of Canosso, the emperour hym selfe went barefooted to the towne gates in the hard frost and snow, to aske forgeuenesse of the bishop: who for all that foode fyue. iii. or.iiii. dayes ere he woulde assoyle hym. At lengthe they agreed vpon condicion, that the emperoure should obey the bishops commaundementes.

But the bishop not yet contented, within a whyle after so offended the emperoure againe, that he came to

Rome,

Rome,and was there receiued of the Romaines. Wherfore Gregory fled into Castel Angelo,and there kepte hym,til he was rescued by Robert Guiscarde,for feare of whose coming the emperour retyred into Germanye. Where by the bishops procurement the princes had elected Radulphus de Sueuia emperour betwene whom and Henry were many bloudy battailes fought ten,& not only Radulphus him selfe slaine at length,but also the emperours owne sonne so suborned,that he warred against his natural father,and besieged hym in the towne of Mentz. Neuertheles(muche agaynste the bishops will)nature and friendes wrought a peace betwene theim at last.

And though Guiscarde deliuered this bishop oute of the emperours handes,yet he was so hated of the Romaynes,that he durste not abide in Rome, but wente wyth Guiscarde into the realme of Naples,and there dyed.

¶ Some write,that this Gregorye was the fyrste that prohibited matrimony vnto preestes. Preestes mariage.

¶ Victor the.iii.was poysoned by the Emperours procurement,as some write,but some holde that he died of a natural infirmitee. Victor.3

¶ Pascall the.ii. fell at baryaunce with the familye of Colonna in rome,by reason wherof,whiles he was at the getting of Beneuento(which by the helpe of roger duke of Puglia he obteined)the Colonesi by force toke the towne of Caua appertaynyng to the churche. But the bishop at his retourne both recouered Caua,& also toke from them Zagarolo,& Colonna their owne enheritaunce. Wherupon folowed so muche busynesse, that almoste no man coulde passe in quyet anye where Pascalis.

throughe

thzough Campania.

¶This Paſcal went into Fraunce to reſoꝛme the diſoꝛdinate life of the clergie there.

¶After his retourne into Italye, he condemned the doynges of Henrye the.iiii. Emperoure, ſo that whan the emperour him ſelfe was come as far as Sutri, wyth a great army, the biſhop foꝛbade hym the commynge to Rome, til he had pꝛomiſed not to medle with the church matters: and further to cauſe thoſe biſhops that he had made, to renounce their Biſhopꝛikes.

¶But whan the emperour had kyſſed the biſhops foote at the heade of S. Peters ſtaers, he was receyued wyth ſolemne pꝛoceſſion into the churche, than he requyzed Paſcal to confirme his biſhops, who refuſyng ſo to do, he with diuers of his cardynals & pꝛelatꝛ, were taken, ſpoyled of their myters and copes, and ſo ledde into the armie that lay without the citee, and from thenſe into a ſtrange holde, tyll the biſhop ſo conſented to the Emperours wyl, that he not onely crowned him there, but alſo confyꝛmed his biſhops. Howbe it, ſhoꝛtlye after the empꝛours retours into Germanie, Paſcall called a counſaile in Laterano, and reuoked all his doinges to the emperour, becauſe they had ben doen thzough compulſion and not of free wyl. Wheꝛefoꝛe the emperoure with a pꝛiſaunt army retourned to Rome, and finding that Paſcal was withdꝛawen into Puglia, foꝛ feare of diſpleaſure, he cauſed him ſelfe to be crowned a new by the archebiſhop of Barcare, of whom he alſo take auctoꝛitee to diſpoſe the biſhopꝛikes at his pleaſure.

Matilda ¶Abbout this tyme died the Counteſſe Matilda, that gaue vnto the churche of Rome all the territoꝛie from

the riuer Pissea and San Quirico vppon the Senese, vnto Ceperano betwene the Appenine & the sea, wyth the Feodarishyp of Ferrara.

¶ And in this bishops tyme was the great viage made of the Christians into the holy lande, where Hierusalem was wonne, and Godfrey of Bolognē crowned kynge. Viage vnto the holy land

¶ Gelasius the.ii. succeded Paschall by the clergyes election, but the family of Frangipani in Rome, which were of the imperiall faction, toke hym by force: and put hym the fyrst nyght in prison, but there was such a commocion of the people the nexte mornynge, that the chiefe of his enemies was faine to kylle his keepe, and to let hym goe. Wherefore shortly after the emperoure came so soddeinly to Rome, that no man knew therof, til he was in saint Peters church, so that the bishop incontinently fledde, and by boote escaped downe Tyber vnto Ostia, and so into Fraunce, where he dyed. After whose departure, the emperoure created the aboue named bishoppe of Bracare in his place, callynge hym Clement: and so committynge him to the protection of the Frangipani, retourned into Almaigne. Gelasius. 2

Calixt the second, before archebishop of Vienna, was elected successour vnto Gelasius by the Cardinall that than were resident in Fraunce: how be it, he wold not take the dignitee vppon hym: till he had woorde from Rome, that the clergie there were contented wythall. Upon good aduertisement wherof he repayred thither: and findyng the imperial bishop to be fledde, setled hys estate there: sendyng to the emperour for peace and fauour, which he easilie obteined. Calixtus. 2

¶ And hearynge that the imperiall bishop was gone to Sutri, and there had fortified, he made an armye, went thither, besieged Sutri, toke hys aduersarye, brought hym to rome, made him ride about the stretes on a camel, with the tayle in his hande: and at last closed hym vp in an abbey. He trauailed much for William duke of Puglia in the defence of his countrey against Roger Erle of Sicile, but it auailed not.

Innocentius. 2

¶ Innocent the second immediately after hys coronacion, sodeinly reised an army, & went against the forenamed Roger that than wrote him selfe king of Sicile: whom he founde so vnprouided, that he made hym flee to Castell Galuzzo, and there besieged him: til his son william with a greate power came to ỹ rescue, fought with the bishops army, and toke the bishop withall hys Cardinalles prysoners. Neuertheless they were afterwardes courtesly let goe, and accompanied towards Rome, where in the meane season was a new bishoppe made, named Anaclete. And this new bishoppe vsyng the iewelles of saynct Peters as his owne, made so many friends, that Innocent was faine to flee from thense to Pisa, from Pisa to Genoa, and so into fraunce. Finally he went vnto Lotharius the .iii. than elected Cæsar, and by his meanes was restored to his bishoprike agayne. For the which he rewarded Lotharius with the imperyall crowne as the custome was, causynge hym afterwardes so to inuade the realme of Naples, that Roger, who than called hym selfe kyng therof, forsoke Italie cleane for a tyme.

The emperour was no sooner retourned into Germanye, but the bishop, thinkynge him selfe in peace, fell at

bariaunce with the Romains for chosyng of senatours because somewhat before that tyme the other byshops his predicessours, had taken all temporall power clerely from the citesins, & vsed it priuatelye as theyr owne. In the heate of which contencion Innocence dyed.

Eugenius the .iii. incontinently vpon his election forsoke Rome, because the Romains were resolutelye determined to maintaigne theyr Senatours: and he to the contrary, vsynge his vttermoste power, constreigned them to crye him mercye, and to committe the order of all magistrates vnto him. Neuertheles after hys retourne, the people (that coulde not brooke the losse of theyr lybertees) so rebelled agaynste hym, that he was faine to flee, and went into Fraunce: where declaryng his case vnto Lewys the kynge, he obteyned suche succours, that in maner by force he retourned to Rome, and had his owne wyll. Eugenius .3

Adrian the .iiii. an englishman borne, constreigned the Consulles and Senatours of Rome to depose theym selfes, and to committe all theyr rule vnto the churche. He crowned Frederike Barbarossa emperour, though afterwardes he did excommunicate hym. He also graunted the title of kyng to william the third, descended of the Normaine bloud, beyng than lord of Sicile, and of the realme of Naples. He encreased not a lytle the Churches territory, but he was muche hated of the Romains for takyng away of their libertees. Finally before his death he repented the excommunycacion of the emperour, saiyng, that there could be none so vnsterable an astate, as the Romaine bishoprike goten wyth bloudde. Adrianus .4

Alexander 3. ¶ Alexander the. iii. had vnto his election the voyce of 22. Cardinalles, and Octauian had but. iii. as moste autyours agree. Neuertheleſſe betwene theim two grew ſo great a Schiſme, that the emperour Frederike was faine to call diuers counſayles for the mattyer: citying both the parties there to appeare, that the mattier might be righteouſlye iudged. Octauian came at the emperours calling, but Alexander wolde neuer appeare. Wherfore the emperour became ſo much his enemy, that he was faine to flee from rome into Fraunce and other regions, to procure helpe of other princes. So that there happened much bloud, fyre, and deſtruction for this mattier many yeres together.

Some write, that Alexander was ſo purſued of the emperour, that in a cookes apparayle he was fayne to flee vnknowen, from place to place, til at laſte he came to Uenice, and there in a monaſtary toke a gardeiners wages, and ſerued in the kitchin. Where he was diſcouered by a pilgrime, and therupon apparayled, and brought in Pōtificalibus with procellion to S. Markes churche, remaigning there honorably entertayned, til after fore feight by ſea, betwene the emperour and the Uenetiās, Otho the emperours ſon was takē priſoner, by whoſe meanes a peace was made betwene Alexāder & the emperour. Some writers make no mēcyon of this hiſtory: but ſay, that by appointemente Alexander came honorably to Uenice, to mete the emperour for a treaty of peace, wherby the other hiſtory of the cookiſh apparaile ſhould ſeeme vntrewe. In effecte howe ſo euer it were there they mette, and the emperour in preſence of al the people kneled downe to kiſſe the biſhops

foote,

foote. At which kissynge, some affyrme, that the bysshop vsed these wordes: Super aspidem et Basiliscum ambulabis et cõculcabis leonem et draconem: And the emperour aunswered, Non tibi sed Petro, whereunto the bishop replied: et petro et mihi. Neuertheles there they concluded such a peace, that the bishop retourned to Rome and enioyed his place. Immediatelye wherupon he called a counsayle in Laterano, in the whyche iiii. bishops (that sens his fyrste election had been created by the emperour) were condemned bodye and soule.

¶ In his tyme Thomas Beckette, bishop of Caunterburye, was slaine. And the kynge of Englande (as some write) sent ambassadours to this Alexander, protestyng the same to be doen vnknowyng to hym. But the bishoppe not creditynge the ambassadours, sent two Cardinalles into England to examine the trouth: who compelled the kyng to sweare, that he was not guilty of Beckettes death: and neuertheles they enioigned him in penaunce, to send. 200. souldiours to serue an whole yere in Hierusalem: and within the terme of. iii. yeres to goe against the infidelles him selfe, to maintaine all the libertees of the church, and to permitte matters to be appealed to the court of Rome. Thomas Beckette

Lucie the. iii. would haue depryued the Romaine Consules of theyr dignitee, but the people so resysted, that he was faine to flee, and as many as were taken of his partye, had theyr eyes put oute. Wherefore the bishop went to Verona, called a counsaile, and there died. Lucius.

Celestine the. iii. enuynge the succession of Tancredi, Celestinus.
bastard sonne of Roger, brother to the good kyng Wylliam of Sicile, called into Italye Henrye the. vi. than

elected Cæsar. And after he had crowned him emperour in Rome, toke Constantine a Nonne oute of her cloyster: and because of the Normanes royal blond, maried hir to this emperour: endowyng him and hir both with the titles of the realmes of Naples and Sicile: and so trãsferred the Napolitane allate from the Norman succession to the Germains, wherof there folowed great blondshedyng.

Innocens. iius. 3

¶ Innocence the. iii. because Philip Duke of Sueuia, sonne vnto Barbarossa, was chosen emperour against his will, not onely recommunicated him, but also caused Otho the. iiii. to be elected, and crowned hym in rome. Thys bysshop contendynge with the forenamed Philyp was wont to saye, either shal Philyp take from me my myter, or I from hym hys crowne.

¶ Otho had not longe enioyed the crowne, but the bysshop with his excõmunications made his princes to forsake him, and he the emperoure him selfe to forsake Italie: because he had moued warres against the church, and gotten Montefiascone & Radicofano, entending also to inuade the realme of Naples, than belongynge to young Frederike sonne of Henry the. vi. who by his parentes was committed to the bisshops protection. Finally he deposed Otho, and named this Frederyke emperoure. ¶ Whereof there folowed so sharpe warres, that at length, whan Frederike had afterwardes receiued the crowne of Honorius the. iii. the Romayne bysshop persecuted Frederike, and he them.

¶ This Innocence beeyng of the familye of Conti in Rome, buylded a notable fayre toure of bricke there, whych yet is to be seen, called La torre d' i Conti.

¶ Honorius the.iii. crowned Frederike the.ii. Emperoure, and after excommunicated hym, for what cause I cannot tel. Honorius.3.

Gregory the.ix. did likewise excommunicate the emperour, because he wold not at his appointment go into Asia agaynst the infidelles. Afterwardes he assoyled him vpon his humble submission at Anagnia, for.120 thousand ounces of golde payed by the emperour. Gregorius.9.

¶ Than fell he in contencion with the Romaynes for the tribute of the territories about the citie, whiche the Romayns alledged that the bishops vsurped vpō their common wealth. And because Frederike fauoured the Romains cause, the bishop did excommunicate hym againe, wherof followed cruel warres betwene the emperour and the confederate cities of Lumbardy, wyth the battaile beſydes Corte noua, where the Mylaneſe and Lumbardes were ſo miſerably ſlaine, and their Caroccio taken.

¶ Than began alſo the ciuile ſedicion of the two parties in Italie, Guelfi and Chibellini, that cauſed ſo muche myſchiefe.

¶ The Romayns after they had ben ones by force ſubdued of this biſhop, began to rebel againe: For the pacifiyng wherof the byſhop carryed about ſaincte Peters and Paules heades in procceſſion, and ſo quyeted the people.

Finally beyng hardly handled by the emperour Frederike, who had taken diuers legates, cardinalles, and prelates priſoners, in their comyng to Rome, he dyed for ſorowe.

¶ Innocence the.iiii. before he was elected byſhop was very Innocentius.4

verye frende to the emperoure Frederike, but after he became so mortal enemy vnto him, that they ceased not the one to persecute the other as long as they liued: not withstandynge that principallye for respecte of hys olde amitee with the emperour, Innocente was elected bysshop. And the emperour against this election set at libertee diuers cardinalles, that he had taken prisoners in the warres, betwene hym and Gregory the.ix.

¶This Innocence was occasion of the great discomfiture that Frederike had before Parma, and yet was the auctoritie of the Romaines so great in his later dates, that he durst not come in Rome.

Cardinal hattes ¶He first ordeined the Cardinalles to ryde with redde hattes: and went to the citee of Naples, entendynge to haue conquered the realme, where trauaillyng to sette forthe an armye he died.

Urbanus. 4 ¶Urbane the.iiii. seynge the armie prepared of Innocence, discomfited by Manfredo, than gouernoure of the realme of Naples, & him selfe vnhable to resist both Manfredos power and the Romayns also, that newly had recouered theyr libertee, practised with the French kyng, that Charles duke of Angiowe might come to conquere Naples and Sicile, but he died er his purpose could take effecte.

Manfredo 4

Clemens .4. ¶Clement the.iiii. folowing the practise of Vrbane, receiued the forenamed duke Charles, that came with.30 galeys from Marsilles to Rome, and there created him Senatour. Whych office he exercised for a tyme. Afterwardes he inuested hym kynge of Naples and of Sicile, vpon condicion, he should holde it of the churche in fee, paying tribute yerely.40000. duchetes: and by

this

this meane brought the Frenchmen to warre against Manfredo. In which warres Charles preuayled, and the Germaine bloud ceased: not onely by the death of Manfredo slayne in the fielde, but also by the death of Corradino the ryghte heyre, who beinge taken prysoner, through this bishops counsayle was beheaded.

After long contencion amongest the Cardinalles, and two yeres vacacion of the see, gregory the.x. was elected byshop. He incontinently pacified the warres betwene the Venetians and Genowales, and called a counsayle in Lions, vnto the which the emperour of Greece came with a noble companye: and amongest other certayne infidel Tartares, who there receiued baptisme. Gregorius 10

He confyrmed Radulphus Erle of Holsatia emperour, though he came not to rome to receiue ỹ crowne.

Nicolas the.iii. deprined Charles kynge of Naples of the vicarage of the Empyre, that Clemente the.iiii. had geuen vnto him in Tuscane, & toke from him also the Senatourship of rome, taking the vse of that office into his owne handes: and made a lawe, that no prynce from thensfoorth shoulde be Senatour of Rome. He repulsed the Venetian ambassadours with foule wordes, because of the siege that they had laied to the citee of Ancona. He toke many citees in Flaminia by force and practise, and brought them from obedyence of the emperour to the churches subiection. He went aboute to make two of his owne kinne of the house of Vrsina in Rome kinges, the one in Tuscane, and the other in Lumbardy: but he could not bring it to passe. Nicolaus 3.

Finally he procured Peter kinge of Aragon, to chalenge the realmes of Naples and Sicile, as the inherytaunce

taunce of his wyfe Constantia, doughter to the kynge Manfredo. Wherof there folowed sharpe warres.

Martin⁹ 4. Martine the.iiii.a frencheman borne, after long contencion amongest the Cardinalles was elected bishop, who incontinently restored vnto Charles than king of Naples, the office of Senatour of rome, against the romaines wyl. For the which there happed much bloudsheedyng. But at last the frenchemen so preuailed, that Richard Hannibal, chiefe of the romaines, was faine to come with a halter aboute his necke to aske pardon at the byshops feete, Wherupon the bishop made two new Senatours, and so ruled Rome at hys wyl.

He excommunicated king Peter of Aragone, and cried the croisie against him, because he had preuailed in winnyng of the realme of Sicile against kynge charles of Naples: and the excommunication was suche, that all men myght lawfully take his lands and goodes, where or how so euer they could come by theim. But this letted not kyng Peter of his purpose.

Honorius. 4 Honorius the.iiii.confyrmed the excommunication of Martine against king Peter: entitlyng the french king to the realme of Aragone, and the Erle of Arras, the French kynges sonne, to the realme of Sicile. Whyche both with seueral powers enforced theim selfes to occuppe both those realmes, accordyng to the bishoppes gyfte: but in effect they preuayled not.

Celestinus 5 After longe contencion, at length the cardinals chose Celestine the.v. beyng an hermyte, who was so simple a man, continuyng stil the olde maner of his abstinent life, that the cardinalles could not wel supporte hym.

Wherfore the cardynall Benedicte Gaietane began

a new

a newe practise, and fell at composicion with hys brethern, ꝙ if he could make Celestine resigne, they shuld elect him. So he made one with a cane thorough a wall crie to Celestine in the night, as he lay in his bed that God commanded hym to resygne hys byshoprike vnto Benedict. Wherupon this simple man, beleuynge the voyce to come from heauen, gaue ouer hys dignytee, and caused Benedict to be chosen in his place, naming hym Boniface the.viii. who for reward, fearyng least Celestines life myght be a trouble to his glorye, caused the poore man to be taken by the waye as he retourned towards his heremitage, and laied in prison in Castel Fumone, where shortly after he was famished to death.

Boniface the.viii. cleauynge earnestlye to the Guelfe part, persecuted cruelly two cardinalles of the house of Colonna, that thã were chiefe of the Ghibellines: and dyd so much hurt to that family, that after he had raised theyr townes and houses to the earthe, none of theym durst appeare. For Sarra Colõna, chiefe of that house fled so muche the persecucion of this bishop, that after he had liued a certaine space in the woods poorely amongest the sheppeherdes, at last he was taken of Pirates vpon the sea costes, and made a slaue to the oze in the galeys. Boniface.

This bishop giuing asshes on ashewednesday to Porchetto archebishop of Genoa, sayd to him in latine, remember man that thou art a Ghibelline, and with the Ghibellines shalt retourne into asshes, and therwithal threw the asshes in hys eyes.

He also was the firste that ordeyned the yeare of Iubiley amongest the christians, which caused wonderful yere of Iubilie.

reſo;te from all parties to Rome.
He excommunicated Philip the french kynge, becauſe he wolde not go into the holy land at his appointment, and depoſed him of his crowne, entitling Albert duke of Auſtriche to the ſame. To the entente the Almaynes might auenge his quarel agaynſt the Frenchemen. But at lengthe Sarra Colonna happened to arriue in the po;te of Marſieles in Fraunce, where diſcloſynge hym ſelfe, he was take out of the galey, had to the frech court, and finally ſent ſo ſtrongly into Italy with .200 men of armes, that he came ſodeynlye on a nyghte to Anagnia, toke the biſhop in his bed, & led him to rome pri;ſoner: where within leſſe than .24. dates he dyed for ſo;owe. So that there folowed a ſayinge of hym: he entred lyke a fore, reigned like a woulfe, and dyed as a dogge.

Benedictus. xi. ¶ Benedict the xi. alloyled the frenche kynge, reconſyled the two Cardinalles of the houſe of Colonna, and condemnyng the actes of his predeceſſoure, did neuertheleſſe excommunicate the authours of his death.

Clemens. 5. ¶ Clement the .v. a Gaſcoygne bo;ne, and byſchoppe of Burdeux, was after .xii. monethes contencion amongeſt the Cardinalles elected biſhop of Rome: who for affection to his countrey, tranſferred the ſee of Rome to Lyons in France: and called all the Cardinals thither to his conſecracion. Wherat the french kyng, with many other princes was preſent: & the Duke of Britaine, and diuers other ſlaine, with the fallyng of a wall. For feare wherof Clement fell from his ho;ſe, and loſt a carbuncle of hys myter: eſteemed to be wo;the .vi. thouſand ducates.

Than

¶ Than incontinently he made.xii. frenche Cardinalles, three of the which he sent to Rome, with senatours auctorites, to rule the citee and all Italye. He oppressed the sect called Fraticelli: that were than newly risen in Lumbardie, who woulde haue had all thynges in common, without magistrates or rulers.

¶ He interdited the Venetians, because they succoured the house of Este against the church.

The Cardinal Orsino, than legate in Tuscane, excommunicated the citees of Florence & Lukes, because they would not be ordered by hym, but the Florentines prouided a spedye remedye. For they laied suche tartes on the spirituall men, that the bishoppe, for hys membres sake, was glad to assoyle theim.

¶ The Frenche kynge practised with the bishop, to reduce the imperiall estate vnto hym: but at lengthe they agreed so ill, that Clemente caused the Germaynes to elect emperour Henry the.vii. of Luxemburgh, who by the bishops procuremēt passed into Italy with a mighty armie, streigned sore the Italians, was crowned of the Cardinalles in Rome, and finally waxed so greate, that the bishop, mistrusting his power, threatned to excommunicate him, if he departed not the rather out of Italye. Wherefore the emperoure fortified hym selfe and his army in the Theatres and Thermes of rome, resisting the bishops fauters, and specially theim of the house of Orsina: but at lengthe for lacke of victualles, he was faine to forsake rome, & to retyre into Tuscane where being at Arezzo, he somoned Roberte kynge of Naples, to appeare before hym, and for lacke of apparaunce deposed him of his Realme by imperiall sen-

tence, whych was by Clemente disanulled.

Finally the emperour by meanes of the bishoppes legate was poysoned in receiuing the sacrament of communion, in the towne of Bonconuento. After whose death the bishop hym selfe lyued not longe.

Iohannes 22.

When Iohn the.xxii. had receiued the myter in Lyons, he wente streight to Auignion and there created viii. Cardinalles of the whyche two onely were Italyans.

Shortly after he degraded a frenche bishop, and put hym cruelly to death for a conspiracie that he was accused of.

In this tyme the electours of Germanye, not agreyng togethers, chose two emperours, Lewys of Bauarie, and Frederike of Austriche: eche of theim hauynge iii. voices: but the bishop alowynge Frederike, dyd excommunicate Lewys. Wherefore Lewys after he had fought and taken Frederike prisoner, went wyth a power into Italye, and receiued in Rome the imperyall crowne at the handes of the Cardinal Colonna, bothe by assent of all the clergie there, and of the Romaynes: who than had recouered to theim selfes a maner of lybertee, to chose theyr owne officers, and vsed yerely to take for theyr rulers two presidentes of theyr owne nobilitee, namyng theim vicars of the empyre. And because the emperour had dyuers wates sought to the bishop for his absolucion, and could not obteine it, therefore immediately after his coronacion he created a new bishop in Rome, namyng him Nicolas the.v. who toke it vpon hym, gaue bishoprykes, & graunted dispensacyons, tyl after the emperours departure oute of Italye,

he was

he was taken by the Conte Bonifacio of Pisa, & sente prisoner to the bishop John in Auignion, where he was layed in a stinkyng prison, and miserably dyed.

¶ This John condemned them as heretikes, that wold haue had the churchemen liue porely, as Christes disciples dyd, and burned dyuers of the .iii. order of sayncte Fraunces, that than folowed this profession.

¶ Finally he died in Auignion, leauyng to his frendes muche more treasure, than euer anye of his predecessours had dooen.

¶ Benedict the .xii. confyrmed the excommunicacion against the emperour Lewis of bauary, not of his owne wyl (as some write) but in maner by constreinct of the kynges of Fraunce and Naples. And the better to maintеine hys quarel, he alloyled all the estates of Italye of theyr feaultie to the empyre, confyrmynge theim free prynces in the same as vicars of the churche. So that euer sens, the Dukes of Mylaine, with the houses of Este, of Gonzaga, and the common wealthes, of Florence, Lucca, and others esteemed themperours lesse than they did before. Benedictus. 12.

¶ Besydes this he made the Senatours of Rome confesse theim selfes subiectes to the church onely, and not to anye other power. And by his tyme Fraunces Petrarke, as a Laureate poete was crowned with Laurel in the Capitol of Rome, by Orso Erle of Anguillara than Senatour there. Fraunces Petrarke.

¶ Finally this bishop died very rych in Auignion, and lefte his goodes to the churche.

Clement the .vi. chaunged the Jubiley, that was fyrste ordeined to be but ones euery hundreth yeres to be kepte Clemens .6. Jubiley.

euery

euery.so.yere, and to hold the estates of Italy in amitee with him, he confyrmed eche Lorde as vicare of the church in his owne estate, Visconti in Mylaine, Malatesta in Rimino, Pesaro, & Fano, Feltrano in Vrbino, and a noumber of other.

¶ In his tyme the Romains recouered theyr lybertee againe, and created theyr officers without the byshops cõsent: so that one Nicolas Renzo, a Romaine, being entred into a wonderful fauoure and credite with the people, toke vpon him the name and authoritee of emperour, writyng him selfe Nicolaus Seuerus et Clemens, Tribunus libertatis pacis et iustitie, et liberator illustris sacre respublice Romanæ. At whose beginning al Italy was in such admiracion, that euery pryce sẽt to salute him as emperour: thinking he shuld restore the Romaine empyre to his auncient estate. But his owne soly destroied him. For he toke part with one of the factions that were than in Rome: so that where before he had no man against him, now had he a great noumber, which brought him at last into suche a feare, that sodenly he disguised hym selfe, and fledde from Rome to Charles the.iiii. than emperoure in Almaine, who toke hym as a lewde person, and for a present sent hym to bishoppe Clement to Auignion: and he cast him in prison, sendyng certaine Cardinalls to rome to settel the estate there: whiche by meanes afore sayde had been a certaine space disobedyent.

¶ In this bishops tyme fell the yeare of Jubiley, whyche caused great noambres of people from al countreis to resort to Rome, by reason wherof there fell suche a plague of pestilence, as the like hathe not been heard of

Jubiley.

Plague of pestilence.

For

For(as some auctheurs affyrme)it endured continually the space of three yeres throughout all Italy,and in most partes of the whole worlde,so vehemently,that of euery hundred there remaygned not .x. persons alyue: and in many countreys not.x.of a thousande . Some write,that this plague began in the east parts of Asia ¶Finally this Clement procured the restitucion of the realme of Naples to Queene Johan the fyrste. For the whyche, and for his other good practises at hir beyng with hym in Auignion,she solde the citee of Auignon with the dominion apperteignyng to the same,to the churche:and was contented to accept for payment therof,the arrerages of suche tributes,as the byshoppe pretended,that she and hir predecessours did owe vnto the churche, for the realme of Naples: whereof they claimed to be lordes in chiefe.

¶Innocence the.vi.was more geuen to religion than diuers of his predecessours. For he reformed the courtly pompe that the Cardinals and prelates before tyme vsed,and commanded spirituall men to be resident vpon theyr benefices,with diuers other good ordres,whyche toke litle effecte. Innocentius,6

The Romaines in his time toke on them theyr libertee:creatyng a Senatour of theyr owne:so that the byshop,to recouer his astate, deliuered Nicolas Renzo out of pryson,and sent hym to Rome, where on the byshops behalfe he preuailed . But throughe partakynge he was againe constreigned to flee disguised, and beyng mette,was knowen and slaine.

¶This Innocence trauailed muche to haue appeased our king Edward the.iii.with the frenche kynge Johñ

in the tyme of the sharpe warres betwene theim, truſting alwayes to haue brought theim to some good ende: till he hearde that kyng Iohn was taken and leade priſoner into Englande.

¶ He caused Charles the.iiii.to be crowned emperoure in Rome, and would haue quieted the Christian princes and powers, and united them in an enterprise agaynſt the Turkes: but his purpose could not take place.

Urbanus.5. ¶ Urbane the.v.sent Giles a Spaniarde, as his legate into Italie, whiche Giles, with helpe of the other Italian princes, so sore oppressed the house of Visconti, that it was lyke to haue ben destroyed, had not the kinges of Englande, Fraunce, and Cypres by theyr ambaſſadours procured a peace.

¶ This Urbane withal his court went to Rome, where after longe serche (as they write) he founde the heades of saincte Peter and Paule.

Finally returnyng into Fraunce, he died by the waye, of poyson as some thinke.

Gregorye the.xi. remoued the seate of his bishoprike from Auignion to Rome, after it hadde been holden in Fraunce.70.yeres. Some saye he did it because of the cruel warres that were among the princes and lordes of Italie: whych was ascribed to the bishop of Romes absence: for theyr residence there staied the Italian nacion in peace.

Gregorius xi 1376.

Some saye he did it vpon a checke geuen him by a bishop, that was his familiare: whome he asked why he was not residente vppon his bishoprike, as the Canon lawes commaunded: Whereunto the bishop answered: And why holy father are not you resident vpon yours?

But

But whatsoeuer the occasion was, he conueighed hym selfe with all his court from Auignion to Rome: where of the Romaines and clergy, he was receiued with Iubilate.

¶ After whan he had pacified moste part of the Italyan princes, because the Florentines would neither be intreated, nor reformed by excõmunicacion, he made warre against theim: and duryng the same dyed of the stone.

¶ In his tyme John Acton, with .v. or .vi. thousande englishe horsemen, sought the aduenture of the warres in Italye, and fyrst serued the citesins of Pisa agaynste the Florentines, than the Visconti against the church in whiche seruice he was taken prisoner, but afterwardes the bishop of Rome made him his generall, whilest the byshop laye in Fraunce. And than dyd John Acton gette the townes of Faenza & Bagnacauallo, whereof he solde one to the Marques of Este for 20000 crownes, and the other he kept to hym selfe. But whan the byshop was come to Rome, & had not so rewarded him as he deserued, he forsoke the bishop, and was made generall of the Florentines. Under whome he serued verye honourablie, with suche a number of oure nacion, both horsemen and footemen, that all Italy feared him: and glad was that prince that might reteigne him. For in all his enterprises he behaued hym selfe so worthyly, that the Florentines after his death buried him honourablie in theyr cathedral churche, as a singuler defender of theyr common wealth.

Sir John Acton.

¶ Urbane the .vi. was elected by .xvii. Cardynalles, whereof .xiii. were frenchmen, that woulde fayne haue chosen a byshop of theyr owne nacyon. But for feare

Urbanus 6.

of the people that cried a Romaine or an Italian, they consented to this election, and did honour Urbane the space of.iii.monethes and more.

¶ The season than warynge hote, they desyred lycence to goe abroade into the realme of Naples: where by maintenaunce of Queene Johan. viii. of the frenche Cardinalles elected a new bishop of their owne nacio, namyng him Clement the.vii. wherof folowed a greate Schisme. For Germanie, Italie, and Hungarye, helde with Urbane, and the other realmes with Clemente. So that Urbane, beyng of nature a cruel man, to make his party the stronger, called Charles Durace oute of Hungarie to conquere Naples from Queene Johan.

This Clement vpon displeasure depryued Charles, & gaue the title of the realme of Naples to Lewys Duke of Angiowe, who with a puissant armie of frenchmen entred into Italie, purposyng not onely to expel Charles, but also to take Peters mantell from Urbane, but he prospered not. For after he had made warre in Pug lia about.xii. monethes, at last he was slaine in battaile Wherof Urbane wared so proud, that because Charles kyng of Naples wold not consent to make his nephew prince of Campania, he did excommunicate him, and if his power had been equal to his wil, had deposed him of hys crowne. But Charles handled the bishop so sweetely, that he was faine to flee to Genoa: In whi che iourney he sacked.v. of his Cardinalles, and threwe theim into the sea, and caused two other to be baken to pouder, caryng theyr asshes in sackes vpon mules be fore him for a terrour to the rest.

Cardinals sacked and baked.

¶ After this Charles death, he returned to rome, and

dyd as much as in him lay to destroy Charles children, wherin he preuailed not, but rather procured hym selfe a great daunger, if he had not preuented hys mischiefe with creating of .xxix. Cardinalles, whereof .xxvi. were Napolitanes. And finally by most opinions he was poysoned and died in Rome, to the peoples greate contentacion, that for his cruelltee much abhorred hym.

Bonifatius.9

¶ Bonifface the ix. of .xxx. yeares of age succeded hym, whiche had not ben seen before. And because he woulde bridle the Romaines from the libertee that the people had vsed many yeres in chosing of theyr officers, he absented him selfe with his court from Rome, and lay at Ascisa: so that whan the yere of Jubilley came, the Romains could by no meane get him to come, til they had promysed to renounce theyr libertees vnto hym, which sens that time they could neuer recouer. For incontinently as he was entred into the citee, he made Castel Sanct Angelo so strong, that it hath ben & shalbe a continuall bridle to the people: and a great stay agaīst emperours

Annates

¶ This bishop ordeyned the Annates, that all spirituall promocions should pay to the churche of Rome, halfe a yeres value at euery chaunge: which decree toke place in all realmes, saynge in England. For the kynge and his barons would suffer none other but bishops to be bounde to this Annates.

¶ In his tyme the yeare before the Jubilley, a certayne preest passed the mountaines into Italy clothed in lynnen, who drew a world of people after hym, called the white company, persuadyng them, that a certaine crucifixe, which he caried before them, dyd many tymes weepe. All the day longe they should trauayle on

they? iourney, and at nyght like beaſtes lie them downe; whereas the date lighte fayled them. But the biſhop fearing this multitude, as they were commyng towardes Rome, ſent men of warre againſt theim, diſperſed the company, and brought the prieſt to rome: where for his abuſion he was burned. After whose death partly through this fonde aſſemblie, and partlye throughe the great reſorte of people to Rome for the Jubiley, there folowed a wonderful great peſtilence ouer all Italy.

About this time Criſolora a Conſtantinopolitane, reuiued the Greeke letters in Italye, where they had not been vſed. 500. yeres before.

And like as this Bonface ſucceded Urbane in Rome, euen ſo did one Peter Luna ſuccede Clement in Auignion, and was called Benedict the xiii.

Innocentius, vi

Innocence gouerned the Romaines with ſo muche tirranny, that they openly murmured againſt him, and at length ſente xi. of they? chiefe citeſins to requyre they? libertee, with ỳ foꝛtreſſes that he held, as Campidoglio Caſtel Sant' Angelo, & Põte Molle, but al in vaine. For he kendled with yre throughe the meſſage, cauſed thoſe xi. citeſins to be put to death, and throwen oute at the wyndowes of his nephewes houſe. So that the romaines aſſembled, and not only cauſed the biſhop to flee to Viterbo, but alſo ſacked and ſpoyled the houſes and richeſſes of all hys prelates and Courtiſanes, and the Capitol wyth Ponte Molle, and woulde haue gotten Caſtel Sant' Angelo, had it not been impregnable.

Than called they Ladiſlaus kyng of Naples to ayde them, but Paulo Orſino, with the biſhops power, diſcoumfited Ladiſlaus, & ſo conſtreigned the Romaines to aſke

to aske mercy, to receiue theyr bishoppe home againe, and to obey him as he would. Wherupon the byshoppe made his nephiew Lewis Marques of Ancona, and prince of Fermo, and so dyed.

¶ Gregory the.xii. was than chosen vppon condition, that if Benner the.xiii. than resident in Aulgnion, for the vnion of the churche, would consent to be deposed, he also shoulde depose hym selfe. Wherevpon a counsaile was called at Pisa, in the whiche they two were deposed, and Alexander the.v. elected. But for all that the Schisme ceased not tyl the counsaile of Constance. gregorius 12.

¶ Whyleft this Gregory was absent Ladislaus kynge of Naples came to Rome, and there was receiued of the Romains as their soueraigne lord. But he enioyed it not longe. For Paolo Orsino foughte wyth hym to so muche aduauntage, that Ladislaus was fayne to reyre into his owne realme: and diuers of the pryncipal Romaines were for this cause beheaded.

¶ Alexander the.v. gaue the title of the realme of Naples to Lewys Duke of Anglowe, and by his ecclesiastical auctoritee deposed Ladislaus, and dyd what he could in helpyng Lewys to subdue hym: but it preuayled not. alexander. 5.

Iohn the.xxiii. succeded Alexander, more by force than by free election, by reason that he, beyng legate in Bononia, where Alexander died, and hauyng the men of warre at his commaundement, threatened so the Cardinalles, that they durst chose none other. Iohannes 23

¶ He in deede resembled more a man of warre than a prelate.

¶ He moued warre against the kyng Ladislaus, but at length

lengthe he was repulsed, and constreigned to forsake Rome. And beyng by the whole consente of the estates of christendom called to the counsaile of constance, where diuers crimes were laied vnto hym, he fledde awaye thense: was taken, laied in prison: and finallye he wyth Gregorye the.xii. and Benedicte the.xiii. all three than liuyng, deposed of theyr pontificalitee, and Martine the.v. elected in theyr place.

Martinus.5 ¶Martine the.v. rested.xii. monethes after hys election at the counsaile of constance, the better to establish his owne authoritee, and than went into Italy, where he pacified the warres betwene the Duke of Mylayne and the Venetians. By force he constreigned Braccio di Montone, a notable man of warre, to humble hym selfe at his feete: and to restore certaine townes that he before had taken from the churche: and fynallye so behaued hym selfe, that he was ouer all quyetlye accepted for supreame bishoppe: so that the Schismes, that had so longe continued ceased. And comyng to Rome, which was greatly decayed, he so disposed hym selfe to the repayryng of it, that in shorte tyme it became indifferent fayre and pleasaunt.

Eugenius.4 ¶Eugenie the.iiii. had so great preasse of people at hys consecracion, that the bishop of Senegalia was stifled to death. And shortly after, beynge persuaded, that hys predecessour Martine, had lefte a great treasure hidde, he caused Oddo Poccio, that had bene Martines vicechamberlaine, to be set for, by his captain Steph̄ Colonna: who onely of the house of Colonnesi fauoured the bishop. And because the seruauntes of thys Stephen sacked Oddos goodes, and brought hym lyke a

theefe

theese to the bishop, wheras he commaũded no violence to be vsed: therefore the bishop fell oute with Stephen, so that Stephen fledde to Preneste to the prince Colonna, enformyng him, that Eugenie purposed the destruction of theyr whole name and familie. Whereupon the Colennesi made an army, came to rome, entred in at the gate called Appia, and goynge forthe as farre as saint Markes without hurt doyng, mette there with the bishops power: and foughte a sore battaile: so that at length, contrary to all mens expectacion the romaines toke the bishops parte, & constreigned the Colonnesi to withdrawe. In whyche retyrynge they toke prisoners and praies as in open warre: and after that vsed such practises for poysonynge of the bishop, and betrayynge of Castel Sant' Angelo, with other lyke feates, that Eugenie was glad to entreate them for peace, whych he easily obteined.

Than came Edmonde the sonne of Charles the. 4. emperour to Rome, and there with great solemnitee and pompe receiued the imperyal crowne of Eugenie, and retourned into his countrey without attemptyng anye thing of importaunce.

Not longe after the Duke of Mylaine made warre against the bishop, & sent Nicolas Fortebraccio with a great noumber of chosen men to Rome: who arriued there with so muche dilygence, that he passed Ponte Molle, and came to the gate Flaminia, ere euer the byshop was ware of hym.

This Nicolas Fortebraccio had serued the bishop before in a certaine enterprise that was made at Vetrala and Ciuita Vecchia: & because he had gotten there

many faire bootes, therfore at his retourne the bishop refused to paye him his wages, sayeng, that his fayre gayne ought to suffyse him. For the whych Nycolas departed: and nowe retourning vnder the duke of Milaine, with helpe of the Colonnesi, encouraged the romaines so to chalenge their liberty, that Eugenie was faine to disguise him selfe in a monkes habite, and to take his bote toward Ostia. And yet ere he were farre onwardes on his way, the people hearyng of his departure folowed him downe the riuer, with hurling of stones, and shotte of arrowes: & than created newe magistrates after their owne maner, deposing & chasing away all such as had ought to do in the byshops name: and layed siege vnto castel sant angelo, which was all theyr vndooing: For the capitayne thereof wrought this pollicy, hauyng his mē forth dayly to skirmishe, and ordeyned certaine of thē to suffer thē selues to be taken: who for theyr libertie and money withall, should promise to slea theyr capitayne, and to betraye the castell. It came to passe as it was deuyced, so that after theyr retourne to the castell, they shewed out a dead mans head, and requiring theyr money offred to deliuer vp the castel. Wherupon certayne of the principall Romaynes entred, and so being taken, were occasion that within the space of .v. monethes after the Romaynes retourned to theyr former obedience: the bishop than being at Florence.

A wittye pollicye.

This meane while the princes & prelates of all chrystendome began to assemble for keping of the generall counsayle at Basyle: and by one agreement cited thre times Eugenie to come thither, with his cardinalles.

And

And because he came not, they threatned to depose him Wherfore he sent his apostolicall bulles thither with certaine Cardinalles to confyrme al thinges there determined.

Then sent he the Patriarke Viteleſco, to Rome who there vsed many cruell tourmentes & deathes against the enemies of Eugenie: & after went into the realme of Naples: pretending title thereunto in the churches right, In whyche quarell he fought with the prynce of Taranto, and toke him prisoner with two thousād horse: and missed litle of taking the king Alfonse vnder colour of treuse.

In his retourne to Rome he vtterlye destroyed Prene ſte, the chiefe towne belonging to the house of Colonna: but at last his chaunce was to be betrayed & slaine him selfe.

After this Eugenie called a counsayle in Ferrara, whereunto Iohn Paleologo emperour of Constantinople, with the principall of the greeke church came, & disputed certayne articles of religion, whyche were agreed vpon in the counsayle following at Florence.

And albeit, that Eugenie had great assēblies at both these counsayles, yet were there a noumbre of bishops that sate ſtil at Basile, alwaies sommoning Eugeni to repayre thither: & at last for lacke of apparaunce (partly through instaunce of Philip duke of Milayne, than enemie to Eugeny) the counsaile of Basile deposed him and created in his place one Amideus, than beinge an heremite, that before had bene duke of Sauoye: naming him Felix. By reason whereof Christendome was deuided into .iii. partes. Two helde with these .ii.

byſhops,and the.iii.with nother of bothe.

Than retourned Eugenie vnto Rome,where he was ioyfullye receiued of the people, and lodged the fyrſte nyght at the gate Flaminia:but the ſeconde daye,as he went in Pontificalibus toward ſainct Peters,becauſe the cuſtome of the citee was reyſed double, the people began to crie,downe with the cuſtomes, and with the inuentours of theim:ſo that the biſchoppe was fayne to promyſe theim it ſhould be no more leuied.

Shortly after he made warre in the Marke of Ancona,and recouered it oute of the handes of Franceſco Sforza:and finallye prouoked Charles than Dolphin of Fraunce,by plaine force to driue awaye the byſchops that helde the counſaile at Baſile:and ſo remaygned in hys eſtate tyl he dyed.

Nicolaus.5. Amideus. ¶Nicolas the.v.ſucceded Eugenie,vnto whom Amideus renounced his title by compulſion of the Emperour Frederike. For which renunciacio Nicolas created hym cardinal and legate in Germany. He crowned the ſame Frederike and hys wyfe with the imperyall crownes in Rome,and trauailed much,partly by fayre meanes,& partly by threatninges to appeaſe the warre betwene the princes and ſtates of Italye: but hys excommunicacions could not rule theim.

Calixtus.3. ¶Calixt the.iii.incontinently after his election prepared an armie againſt the Turkes,armed xvi.galeis of his owne,and vnder the leading of the patriarke of Aquilegia ſent theim into the Leuant ſeas, & ceaſed not to perſwade all Chriſtian princes,as muche as in hym laye,to that expediſion. Amongeſt whome Alfonſe

Alfonſe kyng of Naples,and Lewys Duke of Burgoyne,toke

ones the crosse on theim towardes that wage: but thorough some occasions they chaunged purpose.

Not longe after the kyng Alfonse dyed. Where vpon Calixt, vnder pretence of the title to the realme of Naples, made great preparacion of warre agaynst Ferdinando sonne to Alfonse: but being preuented by death bothe the rumour and feare therof ceased.

¶ Whan he died, he lefte. 150. thousand dukates in hys coffers, which he sayde he had prepared for the warres against the Turke.

Pius. 2.

¶ Pius the secound, shortlye after his election called a counsaile in Mantua: Vnto the which came ambassadours from all Christen princes. And all be it, that through the bishops persuasion, who was hym selfe an excellent Oratoure, it was there concluded, that to the expedicon againste the Turkes, at the bishops deuyse, euery prince and astate should be contributour, as wel for sendyng of men and municion, as also for mayntenance with money, yet whan it came to the poinct there was nothyng doone.

Durynge this counsaile, many rumours were reysed in Tuscane, yea & in Rome, that one Tiburtio, sonne of Angelo Massiano with certaine companions, had taken the temple of Pantheon, and there fortifynge hym, disturbed the whole citee.

¶ The partye called Auersana, enemies to the bysshop had also taken Viterbo: whych the bishoppe at his retourne recouered.

¶ All which thynges, with a noumber of commocions in the Marke of Ancona, in Vmbria, and in the confines there, at length the bysshop appeased eyther by policye or by force.

He caused Lewes the frenche kynge to renounce certayne exactions, graunted him of the church in ỹ counsayle at Basile: & defended Ferdinando kyng of Naples agaynst John sonne to Raynold duke of Angiow Finally disposing himselfe altogether to the enterprise agaynst the Turkes, & being arriued in Ancona to meete with the Venetian galeyes and capitayne, named Christofer Moro, for the same purpose, he dyed of a continuall feuer.

And leauing behind him. 4000. dukates, wyth certayne ships & galeys prepared for that viage: the Cardinalles deliuered both the one & the other to the Venetian capitaine. The money to be sente to the kynge of Hungarie, to relieue his neede, and the shippes to serue on the seas with the Venetian army.

Paulus. 2. ¶ Paule the seconde so muche abhorred learned men, that he accounpted al thē that were of Platos Academie to be heretikes: and deprined a noumbre of vertuous and learned men of suche offyces and promocions as his predecessours had called them to: amongest whom was Platina. And beynge entreated to be more gracious vnto them, considering they were olde men had folowed the court all theyr dayes, and manye also had bought theyr liuinges deare, so that nether by law nor yet by reason, he ought to deprive theym: he aunswered, that forasmuch as the lawe and reason rested in his brest, to allow or disalow what he thought good: his will being so, it is both sufficient, law and reason.

Then picked he a quarell to the familye of Auersa, and with helpe of certayne men of warre, sent to him by Ferdinando king of Naples, he assaulted them, and

toke

toke. nine of theyr Castels. Of the which some were so strong, that they seemed impossible to be wonne. And because the bysshop, through the kinges helpe had attayned these fortresses & possessions, the king required certayne small benefites at his handes: but the vncourteise bishop would graunt nothing: wherfore they squared a litle: and then agreed agayne.

After this the bysshop gaue him selfe to idleneſſe and playes, and in the shrouing time deuised a noumbre of games & prices to be won, & distributed muche money amongest boyes, the better to mayntayne his pastime. In the ende whereof hapned him such a feare, that he wyst not what to do. For it was told him that certaine yong men had conspired against him by the procurement of one Calimaco a simple man. And further, ỹ one Luca Totio a banished Romaine had ben seene wyth a noumbre of banished men in the woodes there by. Upon which enformacions he caused diuers men of reputation to be taken, aswel courtyers as other, and without any matter or good ground of suspicion, put theym to suche terrible tourmentes, that it would greeue any gentle heart to heare it.

He attempted the wynning of Tolfa, fyrst by treason, than by siege, and lastly, when he could not so get it, he purchased it for .7000. dukates.

Likewyse he assaulted the citie of Rimino, to haue taken it from the familie of Malatesta, but he fayled of that enterpryse.

He vsed very great Symonye: and when any bishoprike fel, he would translate the bishops from one see to an other, for the gayne of the fyrst fruytes: by reason wher-

wherof he gathered a great treasure, and delited very muche in Jewelles.

¶ Finally he persuaded all men to kepe their children at schole til they could write and reade: and no longer: and dyed sodeinly.

Sixtus the.iiii. was bothe learned and eloquente, and contrary to his predecessours nature delited in learned men. Sixtus. 4.

He dyd his beste to succoure the princes that were driuen out of their countreis by the turke, as the quene of Bosina, the Paleologi, the Despoti, and diuers other. And yet did he vniustly bothe reise warres hym selfe, and also cause other princes to dose the like.

Fyrst he beganne with the Florentines, because they had empoysoned his nephiew a Cardinall, and had hanged the archebishoppe of Pisa, for killinge Iuliano di Medici.

He made warre to Ferdinando king of Naples, because he had not ayded the Duke of Ferrara agaynste the Venetians.

He made warre also to the Venetians, and gathered all the estates of Italye into a leage against them: leauing theim excommunicate when he dyed.

He leuied many dismes and subsidies of the clergye through all Christendome, and was very beneficial to his owne kinne and frendes.

Finally by his time Macomet the. ii. emperour of the Turkes had taken Otronto in Puglia: and prepared him selfe to the conquest of Italye. Wherefore the bishop made him readie to flee into Fraunce, & had fledde in deede, if God by preuenting of that enterprise had not

had not ſet a ſtaye to the Turkyſhe furye with Mahometes death.

¶ Innocence the.viii. aſſoyled the Venetians, and trauayled much to agree the chriſtian princes together. Innocentius. 4

Neuertheleſſe becauſe his laſt predeceſſour had releaſed to the king of Naples certayne pretended duties of the churche: therfore, procuring firſte certayne eſtates of the realme to rebell, he moued warre agaynſt Ferdinando, and at length conſtreygned him to agree at his owne appoynctment.

¶ He pacified alſo a great contention betwene the families of Colonna and Orſina, whoſe variaunce had bene cauſe of no ſmall fyre, bloudde, and ſpoyle. He had a ſonne and a daughter, whom he lefte very ryche: and was neuertheleſſe reputed both liberall & pitifull. Alexander the.vi. was a Spaniarde borne, and a great philoſophier. He entred in leage with Alonſe kinge of Naples agaynſt Charles the.viii. Frenche kynge, who then prepared him ſelfe to come into Italy. alexander. 6.

Neuertheleſſe Charles power was ſuche, that the byſhop not only gaue him paſſage, but alſo receyued him in Rome honourablye. And yet miſtruſtinge the french kinges high courage, ſeinge he feared but litle the eccleſiaſtical power, the biſhop withdrewe hym ſelfe into Caſtel ſant' angelo, though by fayre entreaty he came out agayne, and yelded all his dominion at the kinges will: and beſides that deliuered him Zizimo, brother to the great Turke, that before was the byſhops pryſoner.

But ere euer Charles retourned out of the realme of Naples, which was within leſſe then halfe a yere after

the bishop had wrought a newe leagne agaynste hym, wherin the emperour Maximilian, the kynge of Aragone, the Venetians, and the Duke of Mylaine were his colleg. So that Charles in hys retourne towardes France was fought withal, and sore handled.

Finally Charles beyng thus departed, this bishop beganne to ware hygh, and imaginyng how to ertol his owne name, he created his sonne Valentino Borgia duke, causing him fyrst to renounce his cardinal hatte, whiche at his fathers creacion was geuen him, & than made he hym capitaine of an armie sent into Romagnia: where fyrst he warred against Katherine ladye of Imola & Furli, and not onely toke hir iust possessions from hir, but also sent hir prysoner to Rome: and than proceded further against the other lordes theraboutes so that hauyng chased away the familles of Maufredi, Ordelaffi, Malateste, Feltrani, Veranei, & diuers other, in maner of no lesse astate than princes, he gatte into his possession the countreis of Romagnia, and Marca d'Ancona, with the dukedomes of Vrbino, Camerino, and Spoleti. Of all the whiche his father entitled him duke, & entred into so greate a pryde with hys sonnes prosperitee, that he would saye to hym, eyther a Cæsar or nothyng.

Through counfort wherof, beyng geuen to ouermuche couetousenesse, in hope of empyre, he poysoned diuers riche Cardinalles to haue theyr goodes, & amongest his other practises he appointed poysoned counfettes for a cardinal that dined with his father, but the father hym selfe was serued of the wronge borde and dyed. And the sonne not long after slaine in the mid-

deste of

dest of all his glorye: notwithstandyng that by hys fathers time he was coupled in mariage with the daughter of the Duke of Ferrara.

Pius the.iii. died within a moneth, not wythout suspicion of venim. Pius.3

Julye the.2. beynge a man more geuen to armes than to praier, more like Iulius Cæsar, than Symon Peter was wont to say, that Maximilian had been meete to be byshop, and he emperour. Julius.2.

Fyrste he procured such a league against the Venetians, that they had neuer a foote of ground lefte theym on the maine lande, so that he had for his part Rauenna, with the other cities of Romagnio.

He destroied the familie of Borgia: and quieted muche the ciuile sedicion, that had longe time reigned in the Romayne nobilitie.

He made warre against the Bentiuegli, that thā were lordes of Bononia, & hauynge chased theim away, entred into that citee with lyke triumph, as the auncient Romaine conquerours were wont to doe into Rome. Many tymes he would goe armed hym selfe, specially in the enterprise against Lodouicus Picus of Mirandula.

Finally fearyng the frenche kinges to much prosperitee, he entred in league with the Venetians, and the kyng of Spayne against the French kyng, which was occasion of the notable battaile of Rauenna fought on Easter daye: where on both sides were slayne aboute 30000. men. For as I haue bene credibly enformed, whā both battailes were ioigned, Spaniardes on the one side, & frenchemen on the other, the Duke of Ferrara

that came on the frenche part, shotte of his artillerye, amongest the thickest, and slewe a multitude aswell of his frendes as enemyes: but they were all straungers to him.

In conclusion the Frenchemen toke Rauenna, with diuers other cities of the bishops, whych they enioyed not long. For the bysshoppe immediately gatte into his league the emperour, the kyng of Englande, the Germaynes, and the Suizers. So that the frenche kynge being vexed on all sides, was easely constrained to forgoe his conquestes and dominions in Italie: specially through force of the Suizers, that vnder the leadyng of theyr Cardinall Sedunese, came in great noumbre to the bishops seruice: who rewarded them wyth the title of defendours of the church, & gaue them a gylt sworde and an hatte of maintenaunce.

Somewhat before his death he establyshed his cousin Francesco Maria Duke of Vrbine.

Leo the.x. of the house of Medici, a Florentine borne, was a pleasaunte man of nature, and gaue him selfe more to humanitye and pleasures of this lyfe, than eyther to religion, or to encrease of dominion. Leo.10.

He encreased much the reputation of his house, but because he expulsed by force Francesco Maria, Duke of Urbine out of his estate, & placed in the same, first hys brother Iulian, and after his nephewe Laurence, the world accused him of tirannye. For he attempted to doe the like vnto the Duke of Ferrare, but he preuayled not.

Some ill was suspected of him for his to muche delicatenesse in bringynge vp of children, and for his opi-

nion of

nion of immortalitee.

Adrian the.vii. by contencion amongest the Cardinalles happened to be elected, reputed of theym for an ignorant man, though some other had a good opinion both of his vertue and learning. But because his lyfe was nothyng courtly or agreable to the Cardinalles, either through gods visitacion, or (as most mẽ thinke) through theyr poyson practyses, he was soone dyspatched. Adrian, 7.

Clement the.vii. brother vnto Leo the.x. immediatly after his election, toke part wyth the French kynge agaynst the emperour. So that when the frenche kynge was taken before Pauia, the family of Colonna, which hath ben alwaies imperial, through helpe of Don Hugo Moncada, beganne to warre with the bishop: and after diuers subtil practises and perswasions, so handled the matter, that they entred into Rome, and missed but a litle to haue taken the bishop: who hearynge the rumour, sodaynly fled to Castel sant'angelo. Wherefore after the bishop had drawen Don Hugo moncada to his parte, the Colonnesi endured cruell warre to theyr great domage. Clemens. 7.

Then came the duke of Burbone, who was slayne with the shotte of an handgun frõ the walles of Rome but the emperoures armie, whereof he was capitayne toke the citee by assault, sacked, spoiled, & burned it: and for the space of.xv. dayes vsed suche triumphe, that for theyr pastetime they would make such cardinalles and prelates as were theyr prysoners, ride scornfully about the towne vpon asses, with theyr faces to the taple: and so streictly besieged Clemẽt, that he was faine to geue

them.400000.dukates for his raunsome,and to yelde the castel into the emperours handes.

¶But wythin lesse than.3.yeres after,the Emperoure came hym selfe into Italye, and hauinge made peace with the bishop,receiued of hym the imperiall crowne in Bononia,wyth so greate triumphe and pompe,that the like hath not ben heard of in our dates.During the whych there came ambassadours to Clement wyth letters from Peter Iohn of great commendations, desyre of amitee,and vnion of religyon.

Before theyr departure from Bononia,the emperour graunted the bishop his army against the Florentines and concluded the maryage of hys bastard daughter to Clementes nephiew,Alexander di Medici, that afterwardes was duke of Florence.Whiche the Florentines would lose theyr libertie,they sustayned a notable warre for the space of.xii.monethes.

And like as by force he oppressed the Florentines,so by treason he subdued Ancona. For vnder pretence of amitee and counsayle, persuading thē that the Turkes armie by sea,was comming agaynst them,he sent a capitayne of his,called Bernardin,who with certaine men of warre was receyued into the citee, and so vsurped the dominion for the church.

In this bishops time happened such a sodayne rage of water in Rome,that the high toures were drowned and a great numbre of people, with infinite riches lost so that the bishop hym selfe had muche a doe to escape it:which may wel be thought a plage of god, sente for the abhominacion that reigneth there.

Finally Clement mette with the frenche kynge at

Mar-

Marselles in Prouaunce, and there concluded the mariage that folowed betwene Katherine Clementes neece, and Henry now french kyng, than but secounde sonne to the french kyng. Shortly after whose mariage Clemente dyed.

Paule the.3. that now is byshop, before the tyme of his election, helde hym selfe so indifferent betwene the factions imperyal and french, that no man could know to whether part he was most inclyned. Paulus.3

In the beginnynge of his time he procured all Christian princes to warre against the Turke, so that the emperour, the Venetians, and he made an army by sea vnder the leadyng of Andrea Doria, who mette with Barbarossa besides Corfu, but they fought no battaile though the Christians were more in nou mber & better furnyshed than the Turkes: whether Andrea Doria were blame woorthy I can not tell. But ones the Venetians Galeon, a notable shippe, was lefte alone in the middest of the Turkishe naule, that assaulted hir. 4. or .5. houres, and yet at lengthe came cleane awaye in despyte of them all.

This byshop went to Nisa in Prouaunce, where by his procurement the emperour and french king metts and concluded a peace, whiche dured not longe.

Than died the Duke of Vrbine. Incontinently vppon whose death, the bishop made warre to the ponge duke Guido Vbaldo for the state of Camerino, and constreigned him for a little summe of money to geue ouer the estate. In the whiche the bishoppe established hys owne sonne Pietro Aluigi Duke.

After this vpon a lighte occasion the bishoppe made warre

warre to Ascanio Colonna, chyefe of that familye: and Peter Aluigi beyng generall of the bychoppes armye, handled Ascanio Colonna and his adherentes so cruelly, that they were faine to abandone theyr owne townes and castelles, and to liue in exyle as banished men, till by the emperours meanes they were restored to the bishops fauour and absolucion.

This Paule to exalte his owne blondde, by consent of his Cardinalles exchaunged the Duchye of Camerino, wyth the churche, for the cityes and territoryes of Placentia and Parma. Whereof he inuested his forenamed son as Duke: whose behauiour was suche, that he continued not fully two yeares: for the nobilitye of the same, detesting his wycked life and tirannye, conspyred agaynste him, and slewe him in his owne house in Placentia: yelding that citee the nexte daye into the emperours handes.

The bishop sent a fayre armye both of horsemen and footemen, to succour the emperour in his enterprise agaynst the Germaines: and made his sonnes sonne, called the Duke Octauio generall.

Finally he is a great astronomer, and so olde a man that (as they say) for the most part he is nourished with the sucke of a womans brestes: and to helpe his colde nature hath two ponge gyrles to lye by him in his bed a nightes.

Jahr			Nambre	Namen		Jahr		
33		☌	1	Petrus.	♃	25	7	☌
70		☽	2	Linus.	♄	11	3	☍
81	☿	♉	3	Cletus.	♂	11	8	☐
92	♀	♌	4	Clemens.	☉	9	2	✶
101	☉	♍	5	Anacletus.	♀	9	2	☉
110	♉	☽	6	Euaristus.	☿	9	10	☌
119	☽	♃	7	Alexander	♉	10	7	☐
129	♌	☉	8	Sixtus.	♍	10	3	☍
139	♌	♀	9	Theleſforus.	☿	11		☌
143		☿	10	Ignatius.	♂	4	3	☐
147		☉	11	Pius.	♀	12		☍
159	☉	♃	12	Anicetus.	♌	9	4	☍
168	☉	☉	13	Soterus.	♎	9	3	☍
177	♃	☉	14	Eleutherius.	☿	21	6	☉
198		☉	15	Victor.	♏	10	3	☍
208	☿	☿	16	Zeferinus.	♌	9	2	☐
217	♌	♑	17	Calixtus.	♎	5	8	☿
222		♊	18	Urbanus.	♎	8	2	☿
230		♑	19	Pontianus.	♎	5	2	☿
239	☿	♈	20	Antherus.	♐	3	1	☌
242	☉	♋	21	Fabianus.	♑	14		☍
255	♌	♊	22	Cornelius.	♐	3		☍
258	☉		23	Lucius.	♑	3	2	☍
261	♂		24	Stephanus.	♂	3	2	☍
264	♂	♎	25	Sixtus. 2.	♌	2	9	☐
266		♃	26	Dyoniſius.	♋	6		☌
272		♀	27	Felix.	♈	4	3	☌
276	♊	♊	28	Eutitianus.	♋	8	10	☌
284		☉	29	Caius.	♋	11	4	☍
295	☿	☉	30	Marcellinus.	♑	9	4	☍
304	♑	♌	31	Marcellus.	♑	5	6	☌
309	☉	♎	32	Euſebius.	♑	2	7	☌
311		☽	33	Melchiades.	♑	4	7	☐
315	♌	♃	34	Sylueſter.	♑	21		☍
336	♍	♃	35	Marcus.	♑	2	8	☍
338	☉	☉	36	Julius.	♑	16	4	☍
354	♌	☉	37	Liberius.	♑	16	7	☍
370	♋		38	Felix. 2.	♑	1	4	☍
371	♋		39	Damaſus.	♎	18	2	☍
389	♊	☉	40	Siricius.	♐	15	11	☍
404			41	Anaſtaſius.	♎	3		☍
408			42	Innocentius.		15	2	
424	♎	♃	43	Zoſimus.	♎	1	8	☌
425	☉	☉	44	Bonifatius.	♎	3	4	☍
	☽	☉						

Anno do:	Numbre of yͤ	Names	yeres.	mouethes
428	45	Celestinus.	8	
436	46	Xistus.3	8	
444	47	Leo	21	1
465	48	Hilarius.	6	3
471	49	Simplicius	15	1
486	50	Phelix.3.	8	11
494	51	Gelasius	4	8
498	52	Anastasius.2.	1	10
499	53	Simacus	15	6
514	54	Hormisda	9	
523	55	Johannes	2	8
525	56	Phelix.4.	4	2
529	57	Bonifatius.2	2	1
531	58	Johannes.2.	2	4
533	59	Agapitus.	1	
534	60	Siluerius	1	5
535	61	Vigilius	17	6
552	62	Pelagius	11	
563	63	Johannes.3.	13	
576	64	Benedictus.	4	1
580	65	Pelagius.2.	10	2
590	66	gregorius.	13	6
603	67	Sabinianus	1	
605	68	Bonifatius.3.		8
606	69	Bonifacius.4.	6	8
613	70	Deodatus	4	
617	71	Bonifatius.5.	5	
622	72	Honorius.	12	11
634	73	Seuerinus	1	
635	74	Johannes.4.	1	9
936	75	Theodorus	6	5
643	76	martinus	6	1
650	77	Eugenius	3	
653	78	Vitellianus	14	6
667	79	adeodatus	4	7
672	80	Donus	1	2
673	81	agatho	2	6
676	82	Leo.2.		10
677	83	Benedictus.2.		10
679	84	Johannes.5.	1	11
682	85	Conon		
684	86	Sergius	14	8
698	87	Johannes.6.	3	3
705	88	Johannes.7.	2	7

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	yeres.	monthes
707	89	Sisinnus.		20. dayes.
713	90	Constantinus	7	
729	91	Gregorius. 24.	2	9
740	92	Gregory. 3.	10	8
752	93	Zacharias.	10	2
757	94	Stephanus. 2.	5	1
768	95	Paulus.	10	10
769	96	Constantinus. 2.	1	1
772	97	Stephanus. 3.	3	5
796	98	Adrianus.	23	10
817	99	Leo. 3.	20	5
820	100	Stephanus. 4.	3	7
827	101	Paschalis.	7	3
830	102	Eugenius. 2.	4	
831	103	Valentinus.		40. dayes.
846	104	Gregorius. 4. 16.	16	
848	105	Sergius. 2.	2	3
858	106	Leo. 4.	2	5
860	106	Johannes. fe. 7.	2	5
863	107	Benedictus. 3.	9	1
871	108	Nicolaus. 9.	5	9
877	109	Adrianus. 2.	10	
887	110	Johannes. 8.	1	5
888	111	Martinus. 2.	1	3
890	112	Adrianus. 3.	6	
896	113	Stephanus. 5.	5	6
901	114	Formosus.		15. dayes
901	115	Bonifatius. 6.	1	3
902	116	Stephanus. 6.		3
902	117	Romanus.		20. dayes
902	118	Theodorus. 2.	2	
904	119	Johannes. 9.	3	4
907	120	Benedictus. 4.		40. dayes
907	121	Leo. 5.		7
907	122	Christopherus		3
914	123	Sergius. 3.	7	2
916	124	Anastasius. 3.	2	6
917	125	Lando.		
930	126	Johannes. 10.	13	2
930	127	Leo. 6.		6
933	128	Stephanus. 7.	2	1
937	129	Johannes. 11.	4	10
941	130	Leo. 7.	3	6
	131	Stephanus. 8.	3	4

Anno Dom.	Number of by	Names.	yeres.	moneths.
944	132	Martinus.3.	3	6
948	133	Agapitus.2.	9	7
958	134	Johannes.12.	4	10
962	135	Benedictus.5.		2
962	136	Leo.8.	1	4
963	137	Johannes.13.	6	11
969	138	Benedictus.6.	1	6
971	139	Donus.2.	1	6
971	140	Bonifatius.7.		6
973	141	Benedictus.7.	8	5
981	142	Johannes.14.		8
982	143	Johannes.15.		4
982	144	Johannes.16.	10	6
991	145	Gregorius.5.	2	5
994	146	Johannes.17.		10
995	147	Siluester.2.	4	1
999	148	Johannes.18.		5
1000	149	Johannes.19.	4	4
1004	350	Sergius.4.	2	6
1006	151	Benedictus.8.	11	11
1018	152	Johannes.20.	9	
1027	153	Benedictus.9.	10	4
1038	154	Siluester.3.		2
1038	155	Gregorius.6.	2	3
1040	156	Clemens.2.		9
1040	157	Damasus.2.		1
1040	158	Leo.9.	13	2
1053	159	Victor.3.	1	3
1055	160	Stephanus.9.		4
1060	161	Benedictus.10.		8
1061	162	Nicolaus.2.	3	6
1063	163	Alexander.2.	11	6
1073	164	Gregorius.7.	12	1
1085	165	Victor.3.	1	4
1086	166	Urbanus.2.	12	4
1100	167	Paschalis.2.	18	3
1118	168	Gelasius.2.	1	5
1120	169	Calixtus.2.	5	10
1126	170	Honorius.2.	5	5
1131	171	Innocentius.2.	14	8
1145	172	Celestinus.2.		5
1146	173	Lucius.2.		11
1147	174	Eugenius.3.	8	7
1155	175	Anastasius.4.	4	4

1158

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	Yeres.	monethes
1158	176	Adrianus.	4	10
1161	177	Alexander.3.	21	
1181	178	Lucius.3.	4	2
1185	179	Urbanus.3.	1	11
1186	180	Gregorius.8.		2
1186	181	Clemens.3.	2	
1188	182	Celestinus.3.	6	7
1195	183	Innocentius.3.	18	4
1214	184	Honorius.3.	10	7
1225	185	Gregorius.9.	14	3
1240	186	Celestinus.4.		18.dayes
1242	187	Innocentius.4.	11	6
1254	188	Alexander.4.	6	6
1262	189	Urbanus.4.	3	1
1265	190	Clemens.4.	3	9
1271	191	Gregorius.10.	1	2
1273	192	Innocentius.5.		5
1273	193	Adrianus.5.		40.dayes
1273	194	Johannes.21.		8
1273	195	Nicolaus.3.	3	8
1276	196	Martinus.4.	4	1
1280	197	Honorius.4.	2	1
1284	198	Nicolaus.4.	4	1
1286	199	Celestinus.5.		5
1294	200	Bonifatius.8.	8	9
1291	201	Benedictus.11.		9
1300	202	Clemens.5.	8	10
1302	203	Johannes.22.	19	3
1317	204	Benedictus.12.	7	3
1336	205	Clemens.6.	10	8
1343	206	Innocentius.6.	10	
1353	207	Urbanus.5.	8	5
1362	208	Gregorius.11.		8
1371	209	Urbanus.6.	11	8
1379	210	Bonifatius.9.	14	9
1380	211	Celestinus.6.	15	
1390	212	Benedictus.13.	21	
1399	213	Innocentius.7.	2	
1404	214	Gregorius.12.	2	7
1407	215	Alexander.5.		8
1409	216	Johannes.23.	4	10
1410	217	Martinus.5.	14	3
1415	218	Eugenius.4.	15	
1430	219	Pheliz.5.	9	
1439				

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	yeres.	monethes
1447	220	Nicolaus.5.	8	
1455	221	Calixtus.3.	3	3
1458	222	Pius.2.	5	11
1464	223	Paulus.3.	6	
1471	224	Sixtus.4.	13	
1484	225	Innocentius.8.	5	11
1492	226	Alexander.6.	11	
1503	227	Pius.3.		1
1503	228	Julius.2.	9	4
1513	229	Leo.10.	9	3
1522	230	Adrianus.6.	1	7
1523	231	Clemens.7.	11	
1535	232	Paulus 3.	14	

¶ Authoures do varye somewhat in the tymes of these byshoppes, but I haue agreed the best togethers, and to haue set it foorthe.

Ecause the maruaylous situacion of the citee of Venice, amongst other thinges seemeth vnto me most notable, I therefore haue thoughte good fyrst to treate therof: and than consequently to procede vnto the declaracyon of the Venetians astate, theyr customes and procedynges.

¶ Of the meruailouse Site.

VVhan I consider what thinges necessitee causeth (hauyng an earnest prouse for my parte therof) I nothynge meruayle, to see the wonders that it worketh. For he that beholdeth the place, where Venice standeth, and would imagine it to be without any buyldyng or habitacion, should saye it were the rudest, vnmeetest, and vnholsomest place to builde vpon or to enhabite, that were againe to be founde thoroughoute an whole worlde: It standeth open vppon the mayne sea, foure miles from the neerest maine land, in such a marish, as at euery low water leaueth the muddy ground vncouered, and at euery ful sea drowneth it cleane. And yet men (constreigned of necessitee) haue brought this marishe to suche a passe, that it is nowe not onelye exceedyng ful of people, and riche of treasure and buyldynges: but so holesome wythall (throughe the muche haunte of people and the great noumber of continuall fyres) that I thynke none other citee able to shewe so

many olde men. But were it not, that as it seemeth nature hath of purpose made a banke two or three miles of, betwene it & the sea, it were impossible to be enhabited: Because the citee standinge equall with the water, the floudde by reason shold passe through the houses at every full sea. But this banke, that beginneth at Chiozza, and stretcheth towardes the citee of Concordia, 60. miles of lengthe, doeth so defende the water floudde, that within those marishes it hath nothing the like force as on the other sea costes. For it is a great matter whan the sea swelleth in Venice. iiii. or v. foote above the lowe water marke: Notwythstandyng that the citee seemeth to be rather in a part of the sea, than in a marishe. For euerye chanel (as who woulde say euery streete) is full of water, and the chanels are so many, that you may row through al partes of the citee, though there be waies also, to goe on lande if you list. Which streetes for the moste part are verie narowe, and the houses nothyng so faire as on the water side. And in the marishe, betwene the citee and the maine lande, whan the water is lowe, the most part of the chanels are so shalowe, that the botes haue much a doge to passe to and fro. For the mudde encreaseth dayly, by reason of the landes floudes, that a noumber of riuers fallynge into the same, doe carye with theim. And a wonderful treasure the Venetians spend in continuall diggyng and caryng away of that mudde, to preserue theyr foresaied chanelles, and to defende, that theyr citee ioygne not to the maine lande.

The banke before rehersed, is broken in. vii. places, through the whiche botes maie come in: but no shyppe

can passe

can passe to Venice, saving at the porte of Malomoco or at the two Castelles of Lio. The entrye whereof is so daungerous (by reason the sandes are movable here & there) that when any shippe cometh in, she taketh first pilottes to sounde the waye: which in effecte is reputed to be one of the greatest sureties, that the Venetians have for defence of theyr citee, agaynst all enemies by sea: and than by land it is impossible to hurt or besiege it, unlesse the enemie were hable to occupie 150. myle compasse with his armye.

Of buildynges.

NExte unto the situacion, the maner of theyr buildynge is most to be marvailed at. For almoste every mā that buildeth an house, maketh his foundacion lower than the water: & ever he set in hande withal, is constreigned to make suche a stronge pale of pyles and mudde betweene his buildyng and the water as shall be able to defende his woorke; whan (after he hathe closed it well) the water and mudde that resteth wythin, is cleansed and emptied oute. Than causeth he strong pyles of timber of a great length, to be driven in, and therupon wyth stone and gravel beginneth his foundacyon. So that whan he hathe brought it to the full sea marke, he rekenneth to have furnished one halfe of hys buildyng: notwithstandynge that above water I thynke no place of all Europe, hable at this daye to compare with that citee for noumber of sumptuouse houses, specially for theyr frontes. For he that would rowe throughe the Canale grande, and marke wel the

frontes of the houses on bothe sydes, shall see theim, moze lyke the doynges of pzynces then pziuate men.

And I haue been with good reason persuaded, that in Venice be aboue.200. palaices able to lodge any king

But now to the particuler of theyz notable buildinges: The new Castell, at the mouth of the hauen Lio, foz strengthe and beautie is one of the rarest thynges dooen in these dayes.

The church of S. Marke is a verye antike thynge, furnisshed with goodlye pillers of fine marble, to the noumber of.900. as they saye) besides the flooze vnder foote of smal marble stones, wzought in knottes of diuers colours, and foure faire bzasen hozses ouer the fronte.

The Dukes palaice is a very sumptuouse building, and not yet finished.

The strete called, La piazza di San Marco, is verie fayze and large, and the one syde is builte of harde stone, all vniformely with faire glasen wyndowes, and the streets by low, paued ouer with bricke.

Saincte Markes steeple is a verate hyghe and fayze toure of bricke, so wel builte, that withinfoorthe an horse maye be ledde vp vnto the belfroy.

The Rialto is a goodly place in the hert of the citee, where the merchauntes twyse a day assemble.

The schooles of S. Rocke and S. Marke, are two notable thynges: the frontes whereof are the fayzest and costliest that euer I haue seen.

Finally, the Arsenale in myne eye exceedeth all the rest: Foz there they haue well neere two hundzed galeys in such an ozder, that vpon a very smal warnyng

they may be furnyshed out vnto the sea. Besydes that for euery daye in the yeare (whan they would goe to the cocke) they shoulde be able to make a newe galey: hauinge such a staple of timber (whyche in the water wythin Th'arsenale hathe lyen a seasoninge, some.20 yeare, some.40. some an.100. and some I wot not how longe) that it is a wonder to see it. And euerye of these galeys hath his couerynge or house by hym selfe on the dryye londe: so that the longe lyeng vnoccupyed can not hurte theim. Their masses, cables, sailes, ankers, roodders, ores, and euery other thyng are redy in houses of offices by theim selfes, that vnseen it is almost incredible: with suche a quantitee of artillerie, bothe for Sea and lande, as made me to wonder, besides the harneise and weapons, that suffise (as they saye) to arme an 100000 men. Finallye the noumber of woorkemen waged for terme of life aboute those exercises, is wonderfull. For by all that I could learne, theyr ordinarye is neuer lesse than.600. woorking in the Arsenale, be it peace or warre. And because they haue suche a number of botemen, that continually liue by gaine vpon the water within the citee: they neede not to seeke further for mariners to furnishe their galeys wythall. For it was credible tolde me, that there are no lesse than 12000. botes dayly seruinge in those theyr chanelles: and almost no bote rowed, but of a sufficient mariner. So that if the Venetians had ben men, as the romains were, geuen as wel vnto chiualrie by land, as vnto the exercise on the water: no doubt thei might many yeres agoen haue subdued the worlde. But sure theyr power hath been more warely gouerned, than valiantly enlar

ged. For sens Constantinople was gotten by the turkes, theyr dominion hath decreased, both by reason (as the fame goeth) they rather practise with money, to bie and sel countreys, peace and warre: than to exercyse deedes of armes: and for that moste Venetians are at these dates become better merchauntes than men of warre.

And now me thinketh it conuenient to speake in this place, of the armory that is in an hall of the dukes palace, called La Sala del Consiglio d'i dieci, whyche surely is a very notable thing.

¶ There be (as they recken) a thousand cotes of plate, parte couered with clothe of gold and veluette, wyth gilt nayles so fayre, that princes myght weare them: besides diuers other fayre harneises made of late, whyche are bestowed in so fayre an order, with theyr diuers kyndes of weapons, furnished of the beste sorte, that a great whyle lookynge on, could not satisfie me. This hall is diuided into diuers seuerall porcyons, as the house doeth geue it, and euerye porcion hathe his sorte by him selfe very handsomely.

¶ Finally for prouision of freshe water it is a wonder to see theyr noumber of costly welles, made only to receiue the raine that falleth from the houses. I call theim costly, because fyrst euery well hath his bottome as low as the salt water, and must therfore be so surely walled and stopped with sande on the vtter syde, that it defend the salte water from sokynge in. And on the inner side it muste haue his vent to receiue the water, that falleth from the houses, grauel within to passe the rough, and last of all a fayre pauing of bricke or stone

in the

in the bottome closed about lyke a cesterne, to preserue the purged water.

And though they haue a great noumber of those welles, and plentie of raine, yet the poore men, that dwell in the countrey, doe gaine yerely aboue, 20000. crownes, by bringing theyr botes laden with freshe water from the riuers to Venice. Yet all this notwithstanding, you shal many times heare much lamentacion among the poore folke for lacke of water.

¶ Of the dominion.

BEsides all those townes and habitacions that are in theyr marishes, & on that long banke betweene them and the sea, as Murano, Mazzorbo, Torcello Malamoco, Chiozze, and others, they haue on the maine land the countrey of Friuli, anciently called Forum Iulii, the cities of Treuiso, Padoa, Vicenza Verona, Bressa, Bergamo, and Crema, with theyr appurtenaunces.

The most part of the countrey of Istria, and vpon the costes of dalmatia (now called Schlauonia) they haue Zara and Zebenica: In the mouthe of the Adriatike sea the ile of Corfu, and in the Leuant seas, otherwyse called Mare Mediterraneum, the notable ilandes of Candia and Cyprus. So that if the ground that they be lordes of, were in one mans handes, he should be no lesse worthie to be called a kyng, than most kinges that are knowen at these dayes. For not long agoen Cyprus (a parte of this) hath had a kynge alone. And how and whan they gotte these thinges, this briefe history, hereafter folowing particularely declareth.

¶ Of reuenewe.

As I haue been credibly enformed by some gentilmen Venetians, that haue had to doe therein, they leauy of theyr subiectes little lesse than.4. millions of golde by the yeare, whiche (after oure olde reckenyng) amounteth to the summe of tenne hundred thousande poundes sterlyng. A thing rather to be wondred at than believed, considerynge they reyse it not vpon landes, but vpon customes after so extreme a sort, that it would make any honest herte sorowful to heare it. For there is not a graine of corne, a spoonefull of wine, a corne of salte, egge, bryde, beast, foule, or fysshe bought or solde, that paieth not a certaine custome. And in Venice specially the customers parte in many thinges, is more thā the owners. And if any thing be take by the waye uncustomed, be it merchaundise or other, neuer so great or small, it is forfeited. For those customers kepe suche a sorte of pyollers to serche al thinges as they come to and fro, that I thynke Cerberus was neuer so greedye at the gates of hell as they be in the chanelles about Venice. And though they in serchynge abote, finde no forfeiture, yet would they not departe wythout drinkyng money. And manye times the meaneste labourer or craftesman throughout al their dominyon, payeth a rate for the Poll by the moneth. In so much that a Candiote my friende (one that had dwelled in Constantinople) sware to me by hys faieth, the Christians liued a great deale better vnder the Turke, than vnder the Venetians. It is almoste incredyble what gaine the Venetians receiue by the vsury of the Iewes, both pryuately and in common. For in euerye

cities

cities the Jewes kepe open shops of vsurie, taking gaiges of ordinarie for.xb. in the hundred by the yere: and if at the yeres ende, the gaige be not redemed, it is forfeite, or at the least dooen away to a great disaduantage: by reason wherof the Jewes are out of measure wealthie in those parties.

¶ Of dignitees and offices.

They haue a duke called after their maner, doge, who onely (amongest al the rest of the nobilitee) hath his office immutable for terme of life: with a certaine yerely prouision of. 4000 duckates or theraboutes. But that is so appointed vnto him for certaine ordinarie feastes, & other lyke charges, that hys owne aduauntage therof can be but smal. And though in apparaunce he seemeth of great astate, yet in veray deede his power is but small. He kepeth no house, lyueth priuately, & is in so muche seruitude, that I haue heard some of the Venetians theim selfes cal him an honourable slaue: for he cannot goe a mile out of the towne without the counsails licence, nor in the towne depart extraordinarily out of the palaice, but priuately and secretely: And in his apparaile he is prescribed an order: so that in effect, he hath no maner of preeminẽce but the bare honour, the gift of a few smal offices, and the libertee, Di mettere vna porta, which is no more, but to propound vnto any of ỳ counsailes his opinion, touching the order, reformacion, or correction of anye thyng: and that opinion euery counsaile is bound taccept into a trial of their sentences by Ballot: (the ma-

ner of the whych ballotting shal hereafter appeare, and this priuilege, to haue his onely opinion balloted, no man hath but he. And whereas many haue reported, that the Duke in ballotting should haue two voices, it is nothinge so: for in geuyng his voice he hath but one ballot, as all others haue.

Next vnto the Duke are three called the Signori Capi, or Cai, whyche outwardlye seeme inferioure to the Duke, and yet are of more auctoritee than he. For their power is so absolute, that if there happen cause why, they may arrest the Duke. And all suche proclamacions as concerne ỹ maiestee of their cõmon welth goe forth alwaies vnder their name: Lyke as we vse to saye in the kinges name, so saye they, Da parte de i Signori Cai. Two of which Cai, or one of them, with one of the Auogadori, haue power. Di metter vna parte, such as is before rehersed of the Duke.

Than haue they .vi. counsaillours of the moste worthy amonge theim, who are ioygned with the Duke to sitte in the college for audience of ambassadours, and other matters of importaunce: and these specially are called La Signoria. For notwithstandynge there be diuers ioygned in the same college with them, as, Gli Sanii della terra ferma, and other moe: yet those .vi. counsaillours are of most reputacion in that place: and accordyngly go alwaies apparailled in skarlet or crimsan sylkes.

In dede, La Signoria, is commonly vsed as the name of their whole maiestee, and principally it doth include the Duke, with the reste of the chiefe officers or senatours (to the number of three score) that accompanieth

him, whan in his solemnitee he cometh to churche, or goeth vnto any of the ordinarie ceremonies abroade in the citee.

¶ Nowe of suche as haue auctoritee to consulte vppon matters of importaunce (as we should say, the kinges maiesties priuye counsaile) they haue .xvii. persons appointed, called Il Consiglio di dieci: Of whyche the Duke, the three Cai, and the .vi. counsailours are part.

¶ For matters of conclusion of peace, of warre, of astate, or of other lyke greatest importaunce, they haue a counsaile called, Pregadi, into the which entreth the Duke, with the Consiglio de dieci, and of the other principal officers, to the number of .200. or therabouts.

¶ For matters of iustice, there be diuers other offices, as Il Consiglio di Quaranta, Il Consiglio di trenta gl' auogadori, i Signori di notte, gl' Auditori necchie nuoui, and many moe: whyche haue theyr degrees and orders so appointed, that not one of theim woulle meddel with an others office: beinge a thynge no lesse fearefull vnto theim than poyson. For theyr principall profession is libertee: and he that shoulde viurpe vpon an other, shuld incõtinently be reputed a tiranne: whyche name of all thynges they cannot abyde. For whan a subiecte of theyrs saieth: sir, you are my lorde, you are my maister, he taketh it for the greatest villany of the worlde.

The Signor della Sanita hathe the charge to see the citee kepte cleane, and the siche prouyded for. And as for other particuler officers, that haue the ouersight of all maner prouisions and assise of vittailes, it shal suffise to say, that there cometh nothinge vnto theyr citee,

but it is viewed, and an ordinarie price appointed vnto the seller, to the entent the byer be not deceiued.

¶ Of the great counsayle.

NOwe it behoueth me to saye somewhat of theyr great counsaile, whiche seemeth to be the whole stay of theyr common wealth.

There be about. 200. families of name, as Contarini, Morosini, Donati, Badoeri, Foscari, and suche others: of whych families be welneere the noumber of 2500. gentilmen. And all they that are of the age of 25. and vpwardes, doe enter into the greate counsaile: the order of whose admission into the same is: When a gentilman is growen vnto. 20. yeare olde, hys father or frendes doe present him vnto the Auogadori, who taketh his name, & with other names of the same sorte, putteth it into a bore, vntill the. iiii. of December: beynge the daye appointed, that all they of that age resorte vnto the Duke, vnto whome (besides this bore) there is brought an other bore, with so many balles, as the names amount vnto: of whyche euerye fifte ball is golde, and all the rest syluer. Than taketh the Duke a bil out of one bore, and a ball out of an other, and yf the bil meete with a golden bal, than is that gentilman allowed: and if he meete not, than must he abide a better chaunce the next yere, or els the age of. 25.

¶ This forsayed greate counsaile maye be lykened to oure parliament. For vnto it many matters of importaunce are appealed, and that that it dooeth, is vnreformable. By it all offices are geuen. And into it entreth

treth the Duke, and all the other officers. And fynally there passe so many thinges through that great counsaile (specially offices) that ordinarily every holy daye, and many times the workendaies, the same sitteth from diner til nyght. The order beyng this.

¶ They haue an hall verie fayre and large, in the principal parte whereof, at the tone ende, sitteth the Duke with certayne counsailours. And ouer agaynst hym at the other end the Cai: and on the sides the Auogadori, with the other magistrates. Than in the body of the hall there be tenne longe benches from the one ende therof vnto the other, and so made, that the gentlmen maye sitte by two rewes on a benche backe to backe. And so euery man being set, in what place it shal please him to take his coming in, the doores are shutte: and the chauncelloure standeth vp, & readeth the office that is voyde, with the names of theim that desyre it: and he that in the election hath most ballottes (so that they passe the halfe noumber) is admitted officer. If there be none that hathe more than halfe the voices as of a 1000. to haue. For than is the election put ouer tyll an other daye. This maner of geuyng theyr voices by ballotte, is one of the laudablest thinges vsed amongest theim. For there is no man can know what an other dooeth.

¶ The bores are made with an holow place at the top, that a man may put in his hand, and at the ende of that place hange .ii. or .iii. bores, into whiche if he wyll, he may let fall his ballot, that no man can perceiue hym. If there be but two bores (as commonly it is in election) the one saieth yea, and the other sayeth naye: And

If there be.iii.bores(whiche for the most parte happeth in cases of indgement)the one saieth yea,thother sayth naye,and the thyrde saieth nothynge: and they are all well enough knowen by theyr dyuers colours. By this order of ballottyng they procede in iudgement thorough al offices,vpon all maner of causes:beynge reputed a soueraigne preseruation of iustice. For oftentymes the iudges may graunt theyr voices,and nevertheleſſe(whan they come to the hearing of the matter) doe as theyr consciences shall leade theim: aunswearynge afterwardes, that they did theyr beſte,but they could not prenaile.

¶Finally in the disposyng of theyr offices they vse this order:that all offices of preeminence,as of the Signoria,that are before rehersed, or the beeynge Potestate, Capitaine,or Gouernour of anye citee,castell, towne, or countrey,may be geuen to none other,but vnto gẽtilmen Venetians.All offices,that be vnder commandement,as chauncellour,secretaries,and suche others, are bestowed amongeſt theyr beſt knowen citesins. For though there be many of those offices of commiaundement verie profitable, yet can no gentylman haue the benefite thereof.Either because they would maynteine in theyr personages a certeine mateſtee, with theyr libertee,or els because they woul auoide the inconueniences that maye growe of perpetuitee. For all maner of gentilmẽs offices,from the highest to the lowest(the Dukes dignitee onely excepted)ar remouable,some frõ yere to yere,some euery.iv.monethes,some more,some lesse(for no gentilman may long enioy one office):So all offices,that appertaine vnto theyr citesins, are durable

rable for terme of life without any chaunge.

¶ Amongeſt al other, this notable order they haue, that two gentilmen of one familie cannot be in one magyſtrate or hygh office together at ones. By reaſon wherof thoſe gentilmen, that of one name are feweſt in number, grow a great deale ſoner and oftner to authoritee, than they that be of the moſt: whiche is thoughte a wonderful helpe of their vnitee and concorde. For if many of one name ſhoulde rule at ones, they myghte happen ſo to agree, that it ſhould be an vndoing of their common wealthe.

☞ Of the proctours and treaſure.

There be certeine principal officers, which ſhould ſeeme exempted from their common wealth and be neuertheleſſe heades of the ſame, that is to wete xii. of the principalleſt called Procuratori di Sā Marco out of whiche number the Duke is alwaye choſen: and thoſe haue their offices for terme of life, with a certeine ſtipende of an hundreth dukates a yere, or there about. Their charge is, ſome to gouerne the reuenewes and treaſure of the common wealthe, and ſome the rentes and treaſure of ſainct Markes church.

¶ As for the treaſure of their common wealth I could neuer fynde the meane to ſee it: but I haue been credibly enformed, that it is a great ſuume of ready money locked vp in cheſtes, (that no man may come at) which is ſometime more and ſometime leſſe, as their wealth or charges encreaſe. And thoughe their reuenewe be very:

verie great, yet consideryng the often warres that they haue, the great wages that the senatours and officers receiue, the noumber of straunge capitaynes that they wage for terme of life, the noumber of castels and fortresses that they maintaine, fortified with watche and warde, theyr continuall costly buildynges, and finally the vnreasonable charge of theyr Arsenale, & of theyr galeys abrode, I thinke they cannot laye vp any great some at the yeres ende.

The other treasure of saincte Markes churche, I haue seen: the principal thing whereof is a table on the high aulter, plated ouer with siluer, grauen and enameled, and set full of precious stones of all sortes. And than in a little stronge corner on the southside of the church are certeine plates of golde much like womens partelettes set ful of riche stones, & goodly imperial crowne for theyr duke, two fayre vnicornes hornes, and diuers other thinges, the value wherof consisteth onely in the precious stones: For the golde that is aboute theim is but smal in quantitee, but the stones are many in number, excellent great and fayre, and almoste inestimable of pryce.

Finallye to retourne vnto the Proctours, theyr reputacion is the greatest next the dukes, and there is none can climbe vnto that dignitee, but either he muste be so worthy, auncient and notable a man, as fewe lyke are to be found amongest theim: or els so riche, that in time of nede he hathe before his election released the common wealth with the lone of a notable summe of money. Whiche seconde sort of election is also common vppe of late, sens money (as some say) hathe entred in more reputacion than vertue.

Of

¶ Of lawes.

They? aduocates (as we shoulde saye oure men of law) study p?incipally the ciuile lawes, and besydes that the statutes and customes of the citee, whiche are so many, that in maner they suffise of theim selfes. But he that substancially considereth the maner of they? p?cedynges, shal plainly see, that al matters are determined by the iudges consciences, & not by the ciuile, no? yet by they? owne lawes. Fo? in euery office there be dyuers iudges, and that parte that hath most ballottes, p?euaileth euer: be it in matter of debt, of title of lande, vpon life and death, o? otherwise. And in euery trial of theefte, murder, o? suche other, the partye him selfe is neuer suffred to speake. But there be certeine aduocates waged of the common reuenew, whiche with no lesse study pleade in their defence, than the Auogadori, in the contrarie. One daye the Auogador cometh into the court, and laieth against the felon that, that either by examinacion, by torture, o? by witnesse hath been p?oued: And an other day cometh in the aduocate, and defendeth the felon with the best aũswere he can deuise: so that many times the p?isoner tarieth .2. 3. and sometyme .iiii. yeares, er euer he come vnto his triall of life and death.

¶ This o?der they obserue in Venice onely. Fo? oute of Venice the gentilmã Venetian, that is Potestate of the citee, towne, o? place, hath absolute power to iudge vpon all matters hym selfe alone: how be it euerye of theim, hath a counsaile of learned men, to aduyse hym what the lawe commaundeth. Besydes that, euerye .b.

whole, and by lande they are serued of straungers, both for generall, for capitaines, and for all other men of warre: because they? lawe permitteth not any Venetian to be capitaine ouer an armie by lande. (Fearing I thynke Cæsars example) Neuertheleſſe with they? army by lande, they sende for the dyuers of they? gentylmen, some as legates, some as paymaysters. So that they? generall, (what noble man soeuer he be) hath alwaies a counsaile of the Venetians about him: by whō in maner all thynges are dooen.

And by sea euery Galey hath one gentylman Venetian for capitaine, by the name of Sopracomito: and ouer a noumber of galeis one Legate (as it were an admy?all) that may hange and punisshe at hys pleasure. Thys is ordinary both in peace and warre, For though the peace be neuer so sure & quyet, yet saile they not to send forth yerely certaine armed galeis to kepe the seas againste Corsales, & Pyrates: not onelye because they? merchaundise may passe sauſely to and fro, but also for the honour that they claime in the dominion therof.

For yerely on the ascension day, the Duke, with the senate, in they? best aray vse to go into the hauen at Lio, and there by throwyng a rynge into the water, to take the sea as they? espouse.

Finallye whan they happe to haue any daungerouse warre by sea or lande, they creat a Proueditore, who (out of Venice) is of no lesse authoritee, thā the Dictatour was wont to be in Rome: specially by sea. And lightly they neuer make a Proueditore, but either they be in great feare, or peril. And throughout all they? dominion, within any citee or walled towne, no man may

carie weapon without a ſpeciall licence.

¶ Of common prouiſion and charitable deedes.

They diligent vſe in prouiſion for graine is notable. For be it deare or good cheape they common graner (whiche is a myghtie greate houſe) is in maner alwayes furniſhed. So that lyghtly in the citee can be no great dearth, becauſe many times of their owne common purſe, they are contented to loſe for the poore peoples relefe (though another time they pay theim ſelfes the double).

¶ They haue alſo certaine ſchooles or felowſhips gathered together for deuocion, as one of ſaincte Marke, an other of ſainct Rooke, one of this ſainct, an other of that: which (beyng for the moſt part ſubſtanciall men) doe releeue a noumber of the poore after this ſorte.

Poore people. ¶ They geue theim ones a yere a courſe liuery, with a certaine ſmal ſtipende, for the which the poore man is bound to carie a taper at one of the bretherne or ſiſters burial, and beſides that to attend certeine holidaies at the ſchoole, where the principal bretherne aſſemble, to diſpoſe vnto the mariage of poore younge women and in other good woorkes, that parte of money that they rate for the time doeth allow: and afterwardes (wyth they prieſtes and clerkes) gbe a procеſſion a certayne circuite, in the which the poore men lykewyſe carry their tapers before theim.

Hoſpitals. ¶ Furthermore there are certaine hoſpitalles, ſome for the ſicke and diſeaſed, and ſome for poore orphanes, in

which they are nourisshed vp til they come vnto yeres of seruice: and than is the man childe put vnto a craft: and the maidens kepte till they be maried. If she be fayre, she is sone had, and little money geuen with hir: if she be foule, they auaunce hir with a better porcion of money.

For the plague, there is an house of many lodgeings, two miles from Uenice, called the Lazaretta, vnto the whiche all they of that house, wherin one hath been infected of the plague, are incontinētly sent, and a lodgeyng sufficiente appoincted for theim till the infection ceasse, that they may retourne.

¶ Finally for pisoners they haue this order: Twise a yere, at Thrisstmas, and Easter, the Auditori dooe visite all the pisones in Uenice, and there geue audience vnto all creaditours that haue anye debtour in pison for the summe of .50. duckates and vnder. If the partye be hable to pase, dates are geuen, and suretes founde: and if the debt be desperate, than doe they theim selfes agree with the partie for more or lesse, as the likelihode is, and pay hym of the common purse. So that ere euer they departe, they empty the pisones of all theim that lie for that summe. Pisoner

¶ Of customes in theyr kuynge.

TO speake of the gentilmā venetians priuate lifes and customes, I wot not whether it be best to follow the common reporte: or to dissemble the matter. And yet me seemeth I cannot dooe more indif-

ferently than recite what is vsed to be said on both sides. ¶ If any man would saye, there were no woorthy men amongest the Venetians, he should greatly erre. For (as I belene) there be some, and specially of those olde fatherly men, as wyse, as honest, as faithfull, as honorable, and as vertuous, as in any place can be found. Lykewise some of the younge men, as gentill, as liberall, as valiaunte, as wel learned, as full of good qualitees, as maye be. But to speake of the greatter numbre, straungers vse to report, that the gentilman Venetian is proude, disdeinful, couetouse, a greate nygarde, a more leachour, spare of liuing, tyranne to his tenant, finally neuer satisfied with hourdyng vp of money. For though (saie they) he haue. viii. or. ix. or. x. thousand duckates of yerely reuenew, yet would he kepe no more persones in his house, but his wife and children, with ii. or. iii. women seruauntes, and one man, or two at the most, to row his Gondola. He would goe to the market hym selfe, and spend so miserablie, that manye a meane man shal fare better than he. Of hys. 10000. duckates a yere, if he spend three or. iiii. C. in his house, he esteemeth it a wonderful charge. Besydes all thys, he hath. ii. or. iii. Iewes, that cheppe and chaunge with him dayely: by whose vsury he gaineth out of measure. And yet would he rather see a poore man starue, than relieue hym with a penie. It is true, he woul haue hys wyfe go gaie and sumptuously apparailed, and on his womã besides, if he be a louer (as in maner they be al) he would sticke for no coste. To the mariage of hys daughter. 30. 40. or. 50. thousande duckates is no meruaple. Finallye hys greatest triumphe is, whan

saincte Marke hath nede (for vnder that name is comprehended theyr common welth) to be hable to disburse an huge summe of money in lone, to receiue yerely till he be repaied. 10. 12. or. 15. of the hundreth.

¶ This kynde of prest the Signoria vseth to take (borowyng of all them that are hable to lende) whan they happen to haue warres. And they that may, doe the more willyngly lende: because they are not onely well payed againe with the vsurie, but also the more honoured and fauoured as long as theyr mony is out of their handes.

¶ This is theyr trade, saieth the straunger. But the Venetian to the contrary defendeth hym selfe on thys wyse.

¶ Admitte (saieth he) that this reporte were true, If I be proude, I haue good cause, for I am a prince and no subiecte. If I be spare of liuyng, it is because my common wealth alloweth no pompe, and measure is holesome. If I kepe few seruantes, it is because I nede no moe. If I bie my meate my selfe, it is because, I woul eate that, that I loue, & that (hauing little a do) I woull exercise my selfe withall. As for my tenaunt, he lyueth by me, and I am no tyrranne for husbanding mine owne. If I gaine, I gaine vpon my money, and hyde not my talent in the grounde. If I loue, I hate not, if she be fayre, I am the more woorthie. If I spende little, I haue the more in my purse. If I spende largely with my daughter, it is because I woull bestow hir on a gentilman Venetian, to encrease the nobilitee of myne owne bloudde, and by meane of suche alyaunce to atteine more habilitee to rule and reigne in my com

mon

mon wealth: Besydes that, my money if hir husbande die, his hirs and no mans els. If my wyfe go gaie, it is to please myne eye, and to satisfye hir. In keppyng my money to lende vnto saincte Marke it is both an helpe to my common wealth, and a profite vnto my selfe.

¶ And thus defendeth the Venetian it, that in maner al the worlde laieth vnto his charge.

¶ But surely many of theim trade and bryng vp theyr children in so much libertee, that one is no sooner out of the shel, but he is hayle felow with father and frend, and by that time he cometh to.xx. yeres of age, he knoweth as muche lewdnesse as is possible to be imagined. For his greatest exercise is to go amongest his companyons, to this good womans house and that. Of whiche in Venice are many thousandes of ordinarye, lesse than honest. And no meruaile of the multitude of theyr common women, for amonge the gentilmen is a certeine vse, that if there be diuers brethern, lightlye but one of theim doeth marie: because the number of gentilmen should not so encrease, that at length their common wealth might ware vile: wherfore the resse of the brethern doe kepe Courtisanes, to the entent they may haue no lawful children. And the bastardes that they begette become most commōly monkes, friers, or nunnes: who by theyr friendes meanes are preferred to the offices of most profite, as abbottes, priours, and so forth. But specially those Courtisanes are so riche, that in a maske, or at the feast of a marriage, or in the shrouynge tyme: you shal see theim decked with iewelles, as they were Queenes. So that it is thought no one citee as-

gainst

gaine hable to compare with venice, for the number of gorgeouse dames. As for they? beaultie of face, though they be fayre in deede, I would not highlye commende theim, because there is in maner none, old or yong vnpeincted . In deede of they? stature they are of the most parte verale goodly and bigge women, wel made and stronge.

The libertee of straungers.

ALl men, specially strangers, haue so muche libertee there, that though they speake very ill by the Venetians, so they attempt nothinge in effect against they? astate, no man shal control theim for it. And in they? Carnouale time (which we call shrofetide) you shal see maskers disguise theim selfes in the Venetians habite, and come vnto they? owne noses in derision of they? customes, they? habite, and misery. ¶ Further, he that dwelleth in Venice, may recken him selfe exempt from subiection. For no man there marketh an others dooynges, or that meddleth with an other mans liuyng. If thou be a papist, there shalt thou want no kynde of superstition to feede vpon. If thou be a gospeller, no man shall aske why thou comest not to church. If thou be a Iewe, a Turke, or beleuest in the diuel (so thou spreade not thyne opinions abroade) thou arte free from all controllement. To lyue maryed or vnmaried, no man shal aske the why. For eating of flesshe in thyne owne house, what daye so euer it be, it maketh no mattier. And generally of all other thynges, so thou offende no man priuately, no man shal of-

sende the: whyche vndoubtedly is one principall cause, that draweth so many straungers thither.

¶ An abbridgemente of the Venetian histories from the edificacion of the citee vnto thys day.

OMitting the diuers opinions of manye men, touchinge the beginninge of the Venetian name, I will recite that whyche moste writers agree vpon, (that is to say) either they are descended of certayne people called Heneti, (which after the destruction of Troie came with Anthenor into Italie: and landyng in those maryches of the Adriatike sea, enabited the countrey theraboutes) or els of certaine Britons called Veniti, part of those Frenchemen that fyrst passed the mountaines, whose habitacion in Britaine, at that time called Veneti, is supposed to be now called Vanes. So that whether it be of Heneti, or of Veneti, at length they were called Venetiani.

Now to come to the foundacion of theyr citee, I finde, that betweene the yeeres of grace. 422. and. 466. (about the tyme that Attila plaged the whole region of Italy) the gentilmen and citesins, principally of Padoa, and generally of all the countrey about, betweene the Alpes and the Venetian Goolfe (to flee the fury of the Hunni, that wyth fyre and swoorde confued all

thinges

thinges before them) resorted with theyr goodes and richesse into the marisshes, where Venice, with her other membres now standeth: and perceiuyng what a commoditee or sauegarde those marisshes were against the enemies rage (Italy beyng so ofte scourged with warres at that tyme) they vpon agreement beganne the edification of that citee, in the place Riuo alto, now called Rialto: where was builded the churche of saincte Iames, that yet vnto this date remaineth. And al be it, that before this tyme the bankes within those marisshes had been occupied and enhabited: yet because the inhabitaunces were poore fisshermen: the place merited not to be writen of or mencioned, vntill sache tyme as those gentilmen and citesins resorted thither. Wherefore I saie, that the Padoanes (moste of auctoritee amongest the rest) after this fyrst buildyng of the citee, ordeined certaine consules for the gouernyng therof: who for a few yeres, now one, now other ruled ye same: vntill the citee beganne to ware greate and populous: and that (because the situation of the places in the water, would not suffer the citee to be one wholethyng together, but diuided into diuers ilands, as the water did gene) they were faine to appoincte yerely ouer euerye Iland one Tribune to gouerne them: and for matters concernyng the whole cómon wealth, they ordeined a generall counsaile, whereunto all the Tribunes, with certeine of the chefe citesins, shold repayre. And so vnder these Tribunes began theyr common welth to encrease, theyr citesins to make shippes, as wel of warre as of merchandise, to traffique abrode the worlde. But principally the diligence of theyr fisshers pelped

theim no smal gayne, by reason that they? salt fishe, caried into other places, was bought as a specyall merchaundise. So that in processe of tyme they? reputacion, wealth and force began so much to growe: that in the defence of Italie, and favour of the Emperoure Justinian (whose capitaine Bellisario had besieged the Gottische kyng Vitige in Rauenna) they made out certaine ships and botes, and vpon the riuer of Po, mette with parte of the Gottische armie, fought with theim, and discomfited them. Againe, in company of Valeriano, gouernor of Rauenna, they were part of those. 40 ships, that discomfited other. 40. saile of the king Totila before Ancona: taking e drowninge the moste part of them. For the which doinges they were both embraced of themperour, e also much honored of his capitains: in so muche that the famous Narses, being sent of the emperour to defend Italy against the foresaid gotes, what to thanke the Venetians, and to see the maner of they? citee, went in person vnto Venice, where he commended much the diligence of they? goodly building: and in that meane while sent his armie by land to Rauenna: in which iourney at the passage of the Po, the Venetian shyppes dyd hym great seruice.

¶ Thus whyle Narses was in the Rialto of Venice, the Padoanes sent ambassadours vnto hym, complaynyng, how the Venetians had vsurped vpon them those marishes, whiche time out of mynde had been theirs: together with the hauen of the riuer of Brent. Whervnto the Tribune of the Rialto made such an answere that Narses curteisely told theim, that matter required longer debatyng, than his hastie iourney wold as than permitte.

permitte: wherfore erhorting the Padoanes to take apcience for the tyme, he desired theim, in the defence and fortifynge of their countrey, to shewe like diligence, loue, and fayth towardes the empyre, as the Venetians had doen: and than so much the more should he be glad to aduaunce them.

¶ And so vnder the fauour of diuers emperours those ilandes of Venice, as Grado, Eraclea, Equilo, & Malamoco were gouerned of priuate tribunes, & by a generall counsaile for the space of. 200. yeres and more, without any greate incident, worthy to be mencyoned: excepte that betwene the bishoppes (afterwarde made Patriarkes) of Aquileia, which standeth in the maine lande: and of Grado, that lieth in the marishes, there was muche warre, strife, and feightyng for the interest of theyr iurisdictions.

¶ Finally in the time of Constantine the. iiii. after Italie through diuers warres had been sore afflicted, and that from all partes the persones that were of power (for theyr sauegarde) fledde thither: Venice encreased so much, that Luipandro, Duke of Friuli, either for enuye, or for feare of their towardnesse, pronoked certeine of hys neighbours to oppresse Venice. And secretly on a night made out a certeine noumber of botes downe the water, and sodeinely assaulted Grado, Eraclea, and Rialto: where they toke certeine shippes, laded with merchaundise, lately commen out of the easte partes. But incontinently as the rumour was reysed, these assaulters fledde, and were so pursued, that many of theim were slaine, many hurt, and the moste part of theyr pray recouered. Neuertheleste the noyse of the

people

people continued, especially the lamentacion of them that had lost theyr frendes or goodes. Wherefore in Eraclea they called a counsaile, and muche a doe there was through diuersitee of opinions: because the people laied all the fault in the ill gouernaunce of the officers But at last the Patriarke of grado, an ancient learned man, of auctoritee, was praied to say his mynde. Who with a longe oracion persuaded, that without concorde it was impossible to liue surely or quiet, and that where as were dyuers heades, there couldc be no concorde. Wherfore his opinion was, that they shuld chose them one only prince, to gouerne theyr common wealth, and preserue theyr vnitee: For where any affate (saide he) is not gouerned with one consente will, there nother habundaunce of money, strength of p... noumber of people, worthinesse of capitaines, nor helpe of frendes or neighbours can auaile. So the whole counsaile agreeyng to his opinion, resolued vpon the election of a Duke: that should haue auctoritee and charge ouer al matters of importaunce, to call the counsaile, and to haue priuate thinges referred vnto him by the Tribunes: that the counsaile of the clergie should not assemble, but by licence of the Duke: and that the benefites geuen by the people and clergie, should be confirmed by hym.

Paolo, Lucio.

To whiche dignitee they fyrst elected a worthy citesin Paolo Lucio of Eraclea, geuinge him au othe for the administracion of iustice, and for the quiet rule ouer them without tyrannie.

Thus whan Paolo had taken the gouernaunce into his handes, he beganne to agree those persons, that be-

fore

sore contended: whiche was so muche the more easie to doe, by as muche as at that time there was almost continuall warres betwene the Lumbardes, & some of the Dukes, either of Friuli, Spoleti, or Beneuento: that in maner all theyr neighbours were in armes.

When he had thus wel quieted his citesins, he ordeined watche and warde to be kept at the mouthes of the riuers: fortifying some of theim with castles, as tyme and place would serue him.

He commaunded euery towne to haue a certaine number of botes in a readinesse, whan the Duke shold geue them any token: and restored the Venetian dominion vnto his olde lymites, now called La piaue Secca.

He mayntained amitee with the kyng Ariperto, and made peace w[illegible] Luipandro, with conditions of aduauntage. Laws.

But amongest all his other doynges the worthiest of memory, was, that he reformed the lawes and brought theim into such a playne and briefe order, that eche man might be his owne lawyer: Affirming, that nothyng can more hynder a man, than the folowyng of longe suites and greedy lawyers. Wherefore in those dates they vsed none imperiall lawes: but besides those they had fewe lawes written. If there happened any doubts, incontinently they resorted vnto the lawe of nature, cholyng that, which semed vnto theim most iust and honest.

Marcello. After Paolo, an other citesin of Eraclea, named Marcello, a very sober & wise man, was elected Duke, but in diligence he was nothing comparable vnto Paolo.

In the tyme of this Marcello (except the stryfe and contencion betwene the patriarke of Aquileia & Grado, whi-

do, whiche I esteme not woorth the writynge) I synde no worthy matter of memorie.

Orso.

¶ Herte hym succeded Orso, a man not onely noble of blounde, but also worthie of deedes.

¶ He first used to bryng vp the youthe of Venice in the exercise of armes. He augmented the number of souldiours in the shippes of warre, and thorough his valiauntnesse restored Paolo, one of the Grekish emperours capytaynes, vnto the estate of Rauenna. In which enterprise Perendio, Duke of Vicenza was slayne, and Ildeprandro, nephewe of Luipandro taken prisoner: who by commission of the same Luipandro, had (by spoyle) gotten the sayd citee from the foresaid Paolo.

This victory was one notable thing that first exalted the Venetian name.

Finally vpon contencion sprong betwene the Eracleani and Equilesi, for the ymmites of theyr confines, for the which was dayly feightinge betwene theim the space of two yeres. This duke Orso supposed to be the authour of that sedicion, in a tumult of the people was slayne.

¶ Surely a lamentable ende, of the glorioufe and happie begynnynge of so worthie a man. The more because of an other inconuenience that followed, that the patriarke of Aquileia toke from the Venetians the townes of Mossone and Centenara: though afterwardes thorough the menaces of Gregory, bishop of Rome he restored Mossone, whan he had vtterlye destroyed Centenara.

737 After the death of Orso, there beganne a new rumour for chosing of the Duke, and many grudged, that Eraclea a-

clea alone had so long time enioyed the honour therof. Wherfore now bothe the state and election was translated vnto Malamoco, whiche at that tyme was very muche encreased bothe in people and ritheſſe: Neuertheleſſe the counſaile of this election coulde nor agree amongeſt them ſelfes, wherfore at length concluded, to chose a new maner of officer, namyng him, Maiſter of the ſouldiours, whose authoritee was remoueable from yere to yere.

The firſt was Domenico Leone, and ſucceedyng him was Felice Cordàcchino, the. iii. Deodato ſonne of the Duke Orſo, who continued in that office, as ſome ſaye, two yeares. The fourth Iuliano Ipato, and the v. Giouanni Fabritiaco, who before the ende of his yere, was put out of his office, and loſt both his eies. In which meane time the olde ſtrife, betwene the Equileſi and Eracleani, renewed, in ſo much that meeting together, neere vnto the chanel, now called dell' arco, ſo many on both ſides were ſlaine, that almoſte they came to naughtes.

The Venetians (wearied with theſe and ſuche other buſineſſes) returned to theyr old gouernance, electing the forenamed Deodato to theyr Duke: who finallye beeyng occupied aboutes the fortifiyng of Brondolo, was aſſaulted by Galla, a citiſin of Malamoco, & beynge taken priſoner, had his eies put out. The naughtie dooyng whereof ſo muche offended the Venetians, that ere the yeare paſſed, they toke Galla, put oute hys eies, depriued him of his vſurped eſtate, and at laſt toke from his life: chooſing Domenico Menicaccio or Monagario, in his place. Deoday. 737

Domenico Menicaccio. 747

¶ This Domenico had not so great auctorite at hys predecessours, for to abate the power of their duke, whi che by the passed experience the Venetians thoughte to be overlarge, they joygned in company wyth hym two of theyr Tribunes, whych so much offended thys Domenico, that at length he openly contended, to recouer the wonte absolute power. And therfore was not onely deprined of his dygnitee, but also for a punyshment hys eies put oute.

¶ And than in his place was created a worthye rythe man called Mauritio of Eraclea: who in hys time pacifyed muche bothe the secrete grudges, and also the open contencions betewene his priuate citesins: and obteined the see of a bishop to be placed in Venice, in the Churche of sainct Peter. Whych bishop was afterwardes exalted vnto the degree of a Patriarke, by Nicolas the.v. bishop of Rome.

Mauritio. 752

¶ During the rule of this Mauritio the Venetians (after great debating of the matter in counsaile to and fro) graunted to ayde kynge Charlemayne with .xxv. vessells wel armed and prouyded, whych did Charlemaine great seruice in the assaulte of Pauia, whan he toke Desiderio king of Lombardye prysoner.

Finally Mauritio obteining of the Venetians to haue hys sonne Giouanni, joygned in the estate with hym, and hauing ruled .xi. yeres alone, and .vii. yeres joyncte ly with his sonne, he dyed.

Giouanni 768

Giouanni likewise ruled alone a certaine space: and obteined his sonne Mauritio to be joygned wyth him: who bothe togethers bare them selfes verye ill towardes theyr citisins. And amongest other thynges Mau-

ritio, be-

ritio, beyng sent of his father vnto Grado, caused the Patriarke of that place to be throwen downe out of a toure: because he was wonte to warne bothe the father and sonne of theyr ill behauyours. Wherfore they became hateful to their citizins: so that a conspiracy was wrought against theim, the chiefe wherof was named Obelerio, that before tyme had been Tribune of Malamoco.

This conspiracie came so to passe, that the people proclaimed Obelerio duke, & the rumour was suche, that Giouanni, with his sonne, and one Christofer a bishop theyr frende, fled all three vnto Mantua.

Than was Obelerio placed in the estate, who shortely obteined his brother Beato to be ioigned with hym. 788 Obelerio

In theyr time the auncient malice betwene the Eraclea ni and the Equilesi renewed, in such wise that it made a fowle slaughter amongest theim. Wherfore it was finallye concluded, that both the ons and other towne should be destroied, & the inhabitauntes reduced vnto Malamoco and Rialto. And so was it quickely done, the rather because euen than kynge Pepine, sonne of Charlemaine was determined to assayle the countrey and hauēs of Dalmatia, against the greekish emperour Nicefero: towardes whyche enterprise Pepine required passage and vytalles of the Venetians. But they wolde not consent therto though Obelerio their duke fauoured the frenche parte. For in consulteyng vppon this matter were great disputacions, & manye reasons laied bothe for the one parte and the other: but finallye this opinion of Agnolo (a woorthie citezin of Eraclea) was best allowed: that for the newelter of kynge Pe-

pine, they should not shewe theim selfes vnconstaunte to breake they⁊ auncient amitee with the Grekish emperour: not withstandyng that Pepine by reason of the hauen of Rauenna, might in maner vndoe their traffique by sea.

So Pepine to be auenged, made an armie to Rauenna, and comming towards Venice, toke Brondolo, Chiozza, Pelestrina, Albiola, & came so nere, that he cõstreigned the duke & senatours of Malamocco, to flee vnto Rialto with they⁊ richesse and chyldren. Finally Pepine was discomfited by the imperial captaine Micea, sent as wel to succour the Venetians, as also to defend Dalmatia: so that incontinently there folowed a peace betwene all three, that is to say, the imperial armie, king Pepine, and the Venetiãs, to their great contentacion. For if Pepine in that voyage had preuayled, they had bene in a daungerous case.

Angelo Particiaco. 792

This meane while the Venetians had banished Obelerio and Beato as partiall of the frenche parte: and elected to they⁊ duke Angelo Particiaco, that before had disswaded theim from Pepines amitee. Who obteined of the French king a confirmacion of the passed peace: and after reedified the towne of Brachea, where he was borne, callinge it Citta nuoua, and in it began the palaice of the Signoria, that the dukes hitherto vse to dwell in. And obteynyng his sonne Giustiniano to be ioyned with him (after he had builded dyuers fayre churches, and doen many good deedes) he dyed.

Giustiniano. 810.

Giustiniano thus consecrated Duke, incontinently called home his brother Giouanni, that for his gil behauiour had bene before banished, and toke him as his

companion in the estate. In whose time at the instance of the Greekishe Emperour, the Venetians sent an armie by sea against the Turkes, to defend Sicilia. And certaine merchauntes of Venice coming from Alexandria in Aegypt, brought with them (as they say) the bodye of S. Marke, vnto whose honoure the sayed Giustiniano began the church of sainct Marke before rehersed: and the whole cites euer sens haue taken him for their aduocate.

Finally, vpon his death bedde, he toke an order for the continuance of that buylding and dyed, Leauyng his brother Giouanni alone in the estate, who ioygned the church of Saint Marke vnto the Dukes palaice: and founde prouision for prieستes to synge and serue in the same. And the warre beyng begunne betweene the Venetians and the Narentani, he made an armie, & went vnto Veglia in the Ile of Corcia, & tooke it with Obelerio before named in it: who had begunne a preparacion there to recouer hys olde estate. Wherefore Giouanni caused hym to lose his head, and afterward burned Palamoco, because certeine of Obelerio hys olde frendes fledde thither for refuge.

Giouanni. 813.

Finally this Duke Giouanni had two conspiracies made against hym: the first was occasion that he fledde into Fraunce; the secound (after he was reconsiled ones againe vnto hys estate) made hym to forsake the worlde, and become a frier in Grado, where he dyed. After Giouanni succeded Peter Gradenico, who ioygned hys sonne Giouanni in the estate with hym: and at the request of the Greekyshe emperour sent a great armie against the Sclauones, that were then newly ioy-

Pietro Gradenico. 826

ded beſydes Rome. Wherby.60. ſayls were all taken or drowned. In folowyng the victorie the ſame Moores ſcoured all the Adriatike ſeas euen to Candie & in they' way toke certaine Venetian ſhippes, laden wyth merchaundiſe, comyng out of Soria. So that whether it were for this ill lucke, or through ſedicion that than reigned in the citee, a conſpyrarye was made agaīſte this Pietro, & was finally ſlaine in the church of ſainct Zacheria, hearyng of euenſong. Wherby ſodeyne death troubled not a litle the citee, & cauſed the office of the chief Augadozi to be made, to purſue the trial of manſlaughters and murders. An office vnto this daye of no ſmal auctoritee amongeſt the Venetians.

Than was Orſo Particiaco made Duke: who with helpe of his ſonne Giouanni, diſcoumfited the Saraſines, that a litle before had gotten Candia, robbed alongeſt al the coſtes of Dalmatia, and had ronne euen vnto Grado. For the worthy and valiant doyng wherof the Greekiſh emperour Baſilio rewarded Orſo with much honoure, who for his parte againe not to ſeeme vncurteyſe, ſent xii. braſen belles vnto the Emperoure for a preſent: beyng (as they ſaye) the fyrſt belles that euer were vſed amongeſt the Greekes.

After Orſo, his ſon Giouanni as wel for his fathers merites, as for his owne worthyneſſe, was confirmed Duke. In whoſe tyme the Rauennates receyued extreeme damages by the Venetians, and the cytee of Comacchio was gotten. Finally this man beyng fallen ſycke, and hauyng his brother ſoigned with him in the eſtate (a man not the meteſt to rule ſuch a common wealth) depoſed both him ſelfe and his brother rempt-

tyng

tyng the counsaile to the election of a newe Duke. An acte surely not onely rare and meruailouse, but also worthy of high commendacion.

Than Pietro Candiano was elected, who proued so worthy in armes, that twyse he fought with the Schlauone armies, and ouercame theim, although in the last battaile he was slayne. Pietro Candiano 890

After whose death Giouanni Particiaco, before named, was ones againe called vnto the dignitee, & continued in the same til the Schlauone warres were fully quieted, and than againe was contented that Pietro Tribuno should be chosen in his place.

This Pietro discomfited the Hungariens, that before had ouercomen themperour Berengario, & ouerranne all Lumbardy, & approched so nere to Venice, that they wanne Eraclea, Equilo, & Capo d'aggere, and were mynded to passe vnto the Rialto: geuyng such cause of feare to the Venetians, as afterwardes bothe doubled the glory of Peters victory, and exalted highly the Venetian name. Pietro Tribuno 893

Some write, that after this enterprice Pietro fortified the citye with a wal from Santa Maria in Zubenico, vnto the Rio del Castello, and that he cast chaines of yron ouerthwart the Canale grande, but at this daye there remaineth no memory therof.

After Pietro folowed Orso Baduaro, that fyrste coyned money in Venice, a man so muche geuen to religyon that at length, renouncyng his astate, he became a frier, and so dyed. Orso Baduaro 915

Thā succeded Pietro Candiano, who conquered many townes of Istria, and other places: and ouercame Pietro Candiano 938

Venice, he was persuaded by a pilgrimme monke of Gascoygne to forsake the worlde. And so habandonyng wife, childzen, and frendes stale away: and dyed a frier in Gascoygne.

Than folowed Vitale Candiano, who fallynge sicke, renounced the astate, became a frier, and so dyed. Vitale. Candiano. 975

After whom Tribuno Memmo succeded, whiche either for feare of the emperour Ottone, or throughe the greate debate betwene the familles of Morosini, & Caloprini (than the chiefe of Venice) forsoke the dignitee, became a frier, and within .vi. dayes after sickened and dyed for sorowe. Tribuno Memmo 975

Than folowed Pietro Orseolo, who conquered Dalmatia, with the ilandes soygnyng therunto. And therfore obteined the fyrst tytle of Duke of Dalmatia, and Venetia. Pietro Orseolo 987

The emperours Basilio and Alesso graunted hym free passage for the Venetians throughe theyr domynyons, without custome paiyng. And the emperour Ottone held his sonne at the crisme, and for his sake granted many lybertees vnto Venice.

After whose death, as a recompense of the fathers merite, Ottone Orseolo hys sonne, of the age of .18. yeres, was elected duke, who ouercame the Adrianesi with the kyng of Coruatia, and so retourning victoriously out of Dalmatia, fel into the handes of Domenico Flabenio, wyth others, that had cõspyred against hym, who shaued his beard for despite, and finally confyned hym into Greece: where shortly after he dyed. Ottone Orseolo. 1007. Pietro Barbolano 1026

Than folowed Pietro Barbolano, who endeuoured hym selfe to pacyfye the rumour of the people, offended

for the oultrage doden vnto Ottone: but all in vayne. For at length, by meane of Dſo Patriarke of Grado, brother vnto Ottone, Barbolana was taken, his beard cutte of, clothed in a friers weede, and baniſched.

Dſo Dſcolo 1037

¶ And becauſe the death of Ottone was than vnknowen, the Patriarke Dſo ſupplied the place as his lieuetenaunte. But incontinently vpon knowlage of hys death, the Patriarke called a counſaile, & after a longe Dracion, lamentyng the inſurie doen vnto his brother, ſurrendred the aſtate.

Domenico Dſcolo 1031

Wherupon craftily and in maner by force, Domenico Dſeolo toke the dignitee vpon hym. But fynallye beyng expulſed of the people, he fledde vnto Rauenna, and there myſerably dyed.

Domenico Flabenica 1031

¶ Than ſucceded Domenico Flabenica, who made a lawe, that from thenſforthe no Duke ſhoulde take a companyon to hym. He was the pryncipall cauſe of Ottones exile, as it wel appeared after. For he founde the meane, that the familie of Dſeoli was clerelye put beſydes the counſaile. And finally, hauynge well pacyfied and reformed all thynges, he dyed.

Domenico Contarini 1042

¶ After whom ſucceded Domenico Contarini, that in his tyme recouered Zara, whiche before rebelled, by returning vnto the obedience of the kyng of Dalmatia. He ouercame Roberto Guiſtardo in Puglia, and reedified the citee of Grado, that was halfe deſtroied by Pepo Patriarke of Aquileia: and after dyed.

Domenico Siluio 1068

Than was choſen Domenico Siluio the greateſt man of reputacion that hitherto had ruled Uenice. He maried the ſiſter of the emperour Niceforo, and at his requeſt ſente an armie vnto Durazo, againſt Roberts

Duke of Puglia and Calabria: which army first prevailed, but at length was so discomfited, that Domenico was therfore deposed. Thoughe some wryte that he dyed in the astate. His wife was so delycate a woman, that she woulde haue dewe gathered to make hir bayne wythal, with many other curiouse perfumes and trickes, to longe here to reherse: and yet ere she died, hir flesche did rotte, that no creature could abide hir.

Domenico beyng thus deposed Vitale Falero was elected, who in favour of Alesso, the Greekishe emperour, renewed an armie againste the forenamed duke Robert, whych army was also discomfited. Neuertheless he caused the Venetians to be called lords of Dalmatia, because he valiauntly conquered the same bothe by sea and lande. Vitale Falero 1082

After whose death succeded Vitale Michele, a worthy warriour on the sea, in whose time the Venetian naule was reckened. 200. saile armed of shippes and galleis, which beyng sent into Asia, with Michele his sonne, fel out with the Pisani a littel beside Rodes, and foughte with theim, and toke. 22 of their galleis. Vitale Michele 1095

After which victorye he and many other Christians went againste the Infidels, and gatte Smirna, Soria, and Jerusalem.

Finally this armie beyng retourned vnto Venice, was againe sent out into Puglia, and there toke Brundizi, and ouerraune all those seas aboute, and so retourned loded wyth glory and ryche praye.

After hym Ordelaffo Falero was created duke. In whose time the Venetians sent an other army into Soria to succour Bawdewyne kynge of Jerusalem to Ordelaffo Falero 1098

gette Ptholemaida, otherwyſe called Acres.

¶ About the ſame ſeaſone the emperour Hedrye the 4. agreed the Venetians and Padoanes togither for theyr conſynes, after the Padoanes wyth greate ſlaughter had ben ones diſcomfyted.

There chaunced alſo a fyre, begun in the houſe of one Henry Zeno, that burned a great parte of Venice. Which fyre was no ſoner ceaſed, but newes came, that Calomano, kyng of Hungary, had paſſed the mountaines of Coruatia, and conſtreygned the citee of Zara to rebel. Wherfore an army was made out, vnder the leading of Mdelaſſo, who not only recouered Zara, but alſo paſſed the mountaynes, & conquered the countrey of Coruatia, and ſo victoryouſly retourned to Venice: where he reſted not longe, but woorde came, that the Hungaryens were commen agayne before Zara. To the ſuccour wherof he ſped hym, and there in the fyghte was ſlayne with a darte, and hys army diſcomfited, ſo that the Venetians were fayne to ſue to the Hungaryens for truce, which for .v. yeres (wyth muche a doe) they obteyned.

Domenico Michele. 1115

¶ Nexte folowed Domenico Michele, who at the interceſſion of Calixte biſhop of Rome, with .200 ſaile toke hys way into Soria, to reſcue Joppe, that tyme beſyeged wyth .700. ſayle of Infydelles: againſte whome he obteyned the victorye. And folowyng the ſame, wente vnto Tyre, toke it, and gaue it vnto Waimondo Patriarke of Jeruſalem.

¶ The proſperouſe ſucceſſe of whyche victoryes was occaſion, that Emanuel emperour of the Greekes ſent and forbadde hym, to procede any farther. But he being offended

offended wyth that commaundement, bent hym sese agaynste the emperour, and by force toke from hym the yslandes of Scio, Rodes, Samo, Metellino, and Andro, and so wyth greate honoure retourned to Venice, where he dyed.

Than was Pietro Polano chosen his successour, who brought the citee of Fano vnder the Venetian obedience, and fought sirste with the Pisani, and after wyth the Padoani, bothe whose armyes he ouercame: so that of the Padoani he brought .350. prisoners vnto Venice, and after released them wythout raunsome. Pietro Polano 1130

¶ This Duke fauouryng the parte of the emperoure Emanuell against Rogier duke of Puglia, went in his owne person vnto that enterprise, recouered Corfu, and ouerronne and sackes all Sicilia. And thorough hys great trauayle sycknes and dyed, was brought to Venice and buryed.

After him Domenico Morosini entred into thastate, who besieged Pola, because the inhabitauntes had hindered the Venetian passingers: and at lasse vpon agrement, ordeyned, that in maner of a trybute the Polani shoulde yerely paye to the churche of Saincte Marke a thousande weight of oyle. The like wherof he constreigned theim of Parenzo to doe. Finally, hauyng made a leage with William kyng of Sicilia successour vnto the forenamed Rogier, of whom he obteyned dyuers priuyleges for the Venetian merchauntes commodytee, he dyed. Domenico Morosini 1147

¶ Than entred Vitale Michele: by whose dayes the Veronesi, Ferraresi, & Padoani, through prouocacyon of the emperour Federico Barbarossa, did no small Vitale Michele, 1154

domage

domage to the Venetians. For the reuengeyng wher-of they made one an armie, and toke the Patriarke of Aquileia, wyth xii. of his canons (of the imperiall fac-tion) prisonere: who were after set at libertee, vppon couenaunt to paye yearely tribute vnto the Venetians at Chrystyde, a fatte bull, and xii. hogges.

This meane whyle the emperour Emanuel entrynge secretly into affinitee with kynge William of Sicile, toke Spalato, Trau, and Raugia from the Venetians. Wherfore they armed, & Vitale in person went for the recouered Trau, threw it to the earth, with parte of the walles of Raugia, and so went to Negropone: where by counsaile of the gouernor, he concluded a peace with the emperour. Notwythstandyng, the emperoure had a lyttle before taken Scio. For concludynge of whych peace, and for the pestilence that his infected souldiours brought home with them, the venetians at his retourne slewe hym.

Much adoe was made for his death, but nothynge to effect: saue a certeine noumber were than apointed vnto the election of the Duke: some wryte. x. and some xl. but howe so euer it were Orio Malipiero was cho-sen. who refusynge it, preferred Sebastian Ziani, for his auncientie, rychesse, and wysedome. So his refusall was accepted, his modestie highly commended, and Se-bastiano accordyngly elected.

Sebastian Ziani. 1171

This Sebastian erected the two notable pyllers of marble, that are yet seen in the markette place of saincte Marke: whiche with an other greatter than eyther of them, were brought oute of Candia, but the biggest fell into the water (and for his vnmeasurable weight) can-

not

not be gotten vp agayne.

¶The emperoure Emanuell, who secretelye hated the venetians, constreigned Henry dandola their ambassadour, to stand so longe daryng in an hotte baten, that he lost his syghte. For what cause he wrought thys, I finde not. And though it muche offended the Venetians, yet the tyme serued not to reuenge it. For they had taken part with Alexander bishop of rome againste the emperour Federike Barbarossa: & with an armie by sea Sebastian in person toke Ottone the emperours sonne, with certaine galeis, & broughte him prisoner to Venice. So that throughe the practise of Ottone there folowed a peace betwene Federike, the bishop, and the Venetians. And the duke was rewarded of the saide bishop with licence for him and his successours to seale in leade, to haue a canopye borne ouer hym, a ware taper before hym, with trumpettes and standardes, and finally ones a yere to espouse the sea, with throwyng a golde ryng into it. All whych ceremonies the Venetian dukes vse vnto this daye. Emanuel. Cruelte.

¶After the deathe of Sebastian the forenamed Orio Malipiero was created duke, who wente vnto the enterprise of Zara, that lately had rebelled. Orio Malipiero 1180.

¶He also sent an armie into the holy lande, that recouered the citee of Ptholemaida, with those other place that the Venetians before tyme had gotten there. Finally he became a frier, and so dyed.

¶Than succeded Henry dandolo, who banyshed the Veronesi frō the trade of Venice, so that the Veronesi for theyr parte wolde suffer nothynge to passe downe the ryuer of Adice. But at lengthe they were faine to Arrigo Dandolo 1194

agree

agre with the Venetians, & to restore certaine goodes that they before had taken.

The Pisani also enuying the Venetian glory, made an armie against them, and gatte Pola, whych by the Venetian army was incõtinently recouered, the walls raised to therth, and the enemies ships burned: and before Modone they toke two other Pisane ships, laden wyth merchandise, and made Triesse & all Istria, tributors.

¶ After this they recouered Zara also, and semblably raised the walles thereof to the earthe, in so muche that many of the inhabitantes (beyng fled before) wyth the helpe of the Hungariens, renewed an army, and ouerran all Dalmatia. But at length they were constreigned to make peace with the Venetians, geuynge theyr children in ostaige, submittyng theyr churche vnto the Patriarke of Grado, and bindyng theim selfes to geue yerely three thousand conye skynnes to the Duke for a present.

This meane while came Alesso, sonne of themperours Isaac (than lately expulsed out of Constãtinople) vnto Venice for succours: who obteined, that the duke wyth an army, ioignyng hym selfe with an other armye of Frenchmen, went to Constantinople, and after many prosperouse successes by the waye, toke it, and restored bothe Isaac and his sonne vnto the empire. But the emperour lyued not long after: and his sonne, coueting to kepe his promyse with the Venetians, was betraied & strangled by Mirtillo or Murcifone one brought vp by by his father from lowe degre, vnto so great reputacyon, that after he had murdered Alesso, he toke the Empire vpon him. Wherfore the venetians & frenchemen

abhor-

abhorryng this vnnatural cruelitee, enforced theyr powers of new, reuenged the death of Alesso, toke Constantinople by assaulte, and diuided the dominion betwene them: so that of the Frenche part Baldewine a Flemmyng was made captaine or emperour, & of the Venetians, Thomas Morosini was made Patriarke: adioignynge vnto the Venetian dompnyon the ile of Candia, with the other ilandes of the seas Ionium and Egeum.

So whan they had recouered Raugia, and established the Greekishe empyre, this duke Dandolo dyed, And was buryed in Constantinople.

¶ The Venetians beyng thus entred into an empyre, beganne to contende amongest theim selfes, whether they were better to remoue theyr common wealthe to Constantinople, for the encrease of theyr name and power: or to remaine still in Venice. But finallye it was concluded, that better it was to trust to the perpetuitee of the Site of Venice, than to the brittell chaunge of Constantinoples glorye.

Than was Peter Ziani elected Duke in Venice, and the armie in Greece on the other side elected Marino Ziani Potestate of Constantinople: on condicion that he should receiue hys confirmacion from Venice. Pietro Ziani. 1203

¶ This Peter proued an excellente man: he encreased the army in Greece: by meane wherof Corfu, Modon Coron, Galipoli, Nasso, Paro, Molo, Erma, & Andro were gotten: Negroponte was made tributarye, and the Genowaies armye fought withall, and discomfyted.

¶ He sent also a Colonia of Venetians to enhabyte

Candia, with officers recoyding: whyche many tymes after rebelled.

¶ He ouercame the Padoanes, and broughte .400. of theim pryſoners to Venice: Finally he waryng werye religiouſe, renounced the eſtate, and withdrew him ſelfe into the monaſterie of ſainct George, where he dyed.

James Tiepolo 1225

After hym ſucceded James Tiepolo, who wyth the helpe of Marke Samuto, reſcued Candia, than moleſted by the Greekyſhe Corſales.

Wyſe he reyſed the ſiege of Conſtantinople (Teofilo Ziani beyng Potеſtate there) and gatte many of the enemies ſhyppes. And after makynge truce wyth the Genowaſes, in the fauoure of Gregorye the .ix. byſhop of rome, he ſent an army againſt Federike Barbaroſſa gat Terma, Campo, Marino, and Beſtice: and in the hauen Māfredonia, burned the Cetea: a notable ſhippe that the emperour had made for hys owne perſon, and there ſlew a thouſand men of warre:

¶ About this time Ezelino di Romano gatte Padoa from the Venetians, and entred into the Venetian marſhe as farre as ſainct Ellero and the Bebbe.

¶ This duke vnder the gouernance of his owne ſonne, ſent .60. galleis to Durazo to ſuccour the Genowayes againſt the emperour & the Piſani, who in his returne recouered Pola and Zara, and than peace was made with the kyng of Hungarie, vpon condicion, that from thenſforth he ſhould neuer pretend title to Zara.

Marino Morolini 1247

¶ Herte this James ſolowed Marino Morolini, who whs choſen of the counſaile called Pregadi, and beyng prouoked by the Romiſh legate, made warre vnto the forenamed Ezelino, & recouered Padoa, wherof Auſe-

dino

dino, nephew of Ezelino was capitaine, whilest Ezelino laye at syege before Mantua. For whyche losse and for hys labour spent in vayne before Mantua; Ezelino retournyng to Verona, fel in such a rage, that he caused. 12000. Padoanes, part of his armye, to be hewen to peeces. Such a crueltee as hathe not ben heard of, sens the tyme of Silla, who did the like vnto. 12000. pyrenestines, friendes of his ennemie Marius. Crueltee

Of this name Ezelino were foure, one after another that caused no small trouble in Italye.

The fyrste Ezelino, a Doucheman borne, came into Italie with the emperour Otho the thyrd, and by hym was made Conte di Onara, a towne of the Marca Triuigiana. But afterwardes he gate hym selfe the lordship of Bassano vpon the riuer of Brent, with many faire territories theraboutes, and so became greate, both of dominyon and also of alliance by mariages.

His sonne was called Ezelino Balbo, and the. iii. Ezelino Monaco, all three crewell men of nature. But the. iiii. Ezelino di Romano passed all thother, & dyed rather for choler and despite of the discomfiture, geuen him by the Vicentines, than for the hurte that he receiued in his legge. Whome Peter Gerardo a Padoan writer, describeth thus: He was harde of fauour, terrible in worde and dede, scarce of laughter or speche, ful of despite, suspicious, takyng euery thing to the worse, daungerouse to enterprise, prompte to all euil, cruel to al persones, and out of measure delited in their death and tourmentes, prisons, yron, hunger, colde, fyre, and other suche. So that to extirpe the whole stocke of so cruell generacion, after his death there was no trea- Ezelino di Romano

ture of hys bloud suffered to lyue.

Rinieri zeno 1250

¶ After the death of Marino succeded Rinieri zeno, who sent an armie into Soria against the Genowaies, that discomfited them betwene Ptholemaida & Tyr or besides. vi. other Genowaye shyppes, that were lefte in Candia, and riere vnto Tyro in the seconnd and .3. battayle.

¶ In this meane tyme Baldewyne the captayne, and Pantaleon Iustiniano patryarke of Constantinople. were betraied of the Grekes, and constreigned to flee to Negroponte, leauing the citee & empire vnto Michell Paleologo, that afterwardes through helpe of the Genowaies, gat manye Ilandes: trauailing to extend hys dominion vnto Morea. Wherevpon the Venetians made forth moe galeys by .30. at s tyme, to encrease their armye, that than was commen out of Soria in hope to finde theyr enemies about Sicilia: But al in vayne, wherfore retournyng into Soria, they toke the Cetea of the Genowaies, and began to assaulte Tyre. In which busynesse, the Venetians lost a notable shippe called Castel forte, with .x. others laden with merchandise. Neuertheless renewyng their armie with part of their fayle, that lay in Candia & Dalmatia, they mette agayne with the Genowayes in Sicilia, where after a long fight, they toke .14. Genoway Galleis, burned the rest, slew aboue .1200. men, toke .1500. prisoners, and drowned al the rest.

This notable victorye brought the emperoure Paleologo in such feare, that he sued for truce to the Venetians: and obteined it for .v. yeres.

This meane while was a great muttering in Venice for

for the treasure spent, because the chamber was fould emptie, and that for the maintenaunce of those warres they were aboute to leuey subsydyes. So that the people assembled, and furiously assaulted the Dukes palaice, hurlyng stones at the wyndowes, with other despiteful deedes.

Finally the armie was renewed, and in an other conflict with the Genowaies, they toke .b. of theyr shippes: About which tyme Rinieri dyed.

¶ Than folowed Lorenzo Tiepolo, in whose tyme happened a wonderfull dearth of corne in Uenice: by reason theyr neighbours, for enuie of theyr prosperitee, woulde sucker no corne to come to theim. For remedye wherof the Uenetians made a law, that al merchaunt shippes, passyng betwene the Goolfe of Fano, and the mouthe of the ryuer Po, should paye theim custome after a certaine rate of theyr merchandyse. Whereby to their great gaine, they reuēged them selfes vpon their ennemyes. But the Bolognesi mosse of all others, being offended with this law, made out an army against the Uenetians, and were ouercomen, constreigned to aske peace, to ouerthrowe a castell that they had made at Primano on the Po, and to graunte the Uenetians free entrie into theyr riuers at all tymes.

Lorenzo Tiepolo 1267

¶ About this time, by meane of Philip the french king, who trauayled to succoure the Christians in Soria against the infidelles, the Uenetians, Genowayes, and Pisani made a league together for .b. yeres.

After Tiepolo, Iacopo Contarini was Duke, in whose tyme the warre was well neere renued betwene the Uenetians and Genowaies, for certeine goodes that

Iacopo Contarini. 1273

the Genowaies had taken: whyche beynge reſtored, the armie prepared for them, turned againſte Iſtria, that than newly rebelled, through the prouocacion of the patriarke of Aquileia: who by force were reduced to their wonted obedyence.

They of Ancona beynge offended wyth the forelayde law of cuſtome paynge for theyr merchaundice, began to robbe and ſpoyle alongeſt the coſtes of Iſtria: ſo that the Venetians, to correcte them, beſyeged the cytee of Ancona: whyche dured not longe: for the byſhoppe of Rome entreated the Venetians, to agree wyth them, and breake vp theyr ſiege.

Finally this Contarini perceiuyng hym ſelfe deraye ſickely and vnapte to rule the aſtate, did wyllingly renounce it.

Giouanni Dandolo 1281

¶ Than ſucceded Iohn Dandolo, in whoſe tyme the water in Venice ſwelled ſo hyghe, that in maner the citee was drowned: and after that folowed a wonderful earthquake.

They alſo fyrſte coygned duckates of golde. And at the requeſt of Nicolas, than biſhop of Rome, prepared a new armie to ſaile into Surria: but it went not forthe ſo that the kyng of Babylone in Aegypte, toke and ſacked Ptholomaida, and after raſed it to the earth.

Pietro gradenigo 1290

After Dandolo Peter Gradenigo was elected duke. At whoſe entryng the truce with the Genowaies expired: ſo that a new armie, vnder the leadynge of Roger Moroſini proueditore, was ſent into the eaſt parties: where they toke Pera, a Caſtello delle foglie vecchie and abode there ſo longe, that the yere folowyng Iohn Zoranzo, wyth .25. freſhe galleis, was ſente thither: who

who toke the citee of Casa in Chersonesso.
The Genowaies this meane while prepared an armye of.70.galeys,and vnder their capitaine Lampado d' oria,entred into the Adriatike seas,entendyng to come to Venice.But the venetian armie(beyng the greatest that euer they made)caused them to retyre:yet metyng together vpon the cosse of Dalmatia,they foughte,and the venetians were discomfited,and Andrea Dandolo Proueditor taken prysoner,who so muche despayred, that beatyng his head against the galey bordes,he slew hym selfe. And albeit that the losse of this armye was of great importaunce and peril vnto the venetians,yet incontinently they renforced theyr power, and in the freict of Gallipoli,sometyme called Hellespontus, mette with the Genowaies againe, and were there agayne ouercomen. But the Genowaies for all their victoryes were so wered,that they graunted the venetians peace,and laied warre aside for a season.
Thus the thynges ferre of,beynge appeased, their busynesse at home beganne to awake. For one Marino Bocconio conspired against the duke & Senate, which beynge dysconered, he and dyuers of hys complyces, were put to death betwene the pilers of.S.Marke.
The Padoanes began than also to fortifie at a certaine place,betwene Chiozza,& Albano,called Petabubula which was no lyttel trouble vnto the venetians,for the tyme,how be it at length they remedyed it.
¶After this they made out an other army by sea vnder Belletto Iustiniano,who prospered muche in Greece. For after he had ouercome all those cosses,he returned home with.15000.prisoners,& with a great summe of

 money

money recouered of the Greekysh emperoure that before tyme the Venetians had lente him. Which was no smal counforte to the common wealth that longe time had suffered.

Shortly after Clement bishop of Rome excommunycated the venetians, for aiding of Azo da Este vnto the astate of Ferrara, and wrote his letters throughout al Europe, condemnyng theim as enemies of the church, and gevynge their goodes as a lawfull praye vnto all men, which caused theim to sustaine greate losse.

Besides this, Baiamõte Tiepolo, their owne citezin, entendyng to make him selfe lord of venise, enterprised to assaulte the Duke and Senate in the palaice, where after muche bloudshed, at lasse he was slayne, and hys partakers accordynglie punysshed, parte in Venice, and part at a place there besydes, called Malpasso.

Zara aboute this tyme rebelled agayne, and shortlye after this duke dyed.

Marino Giorgio. 1312

After whom succeded Marino Giorgio, that lyued but.x. monethes, in whose time an army was made ayt to besiege zara.

John Soranzo. 1313

Than folowed John Soranzo, who recouered zara and brought Noua, Spalata, Trau, and Sibenzani, townes of Dalmatia, vnder the Venetian dominion. This meane time Fraunces Dandalo, ambassadoure with bishop Clement, vsed such humilitie, that Venice was not only assoiled, but also priuileged to be no more on that wyse accursed.

These thynges fynyshed, they sente oute, 50. galleys against the Genowaies, because they had taken the venetians goodes. But after they had besyeged Pera,

and

and were promysed amendes and restitucion of theyr goodes, the armie retourned without other expedicion. Than was Iustiniano, that had been captaine therof, sent Proueditor into Candia, where with hys wysedome he quieted the countrey, that beganne to rebell.

Finally, after the Venetians had preserued the Padoanes from the fury of Mastino della scala, that wold haue oppressed theim, this duke Soranzo dyed.

After hym entred Fraunces Dandolo, in whose time hapned a great dearth of corne in Venice: whyche was relieued afterwardes with prouision brought out of Sicilia by Nicolas Falero, for that purpose sente thither, This duke accepted the Polani and Valesi vnder the venetian dominion: and euer after defended them from the power of the Patriarke of Aquileia. Fraunces Dandolo 1329.

He caused Thomas Viaro Proueditor of the armie against the Genowaies, to die in prison: because he had not borne hym selfe prudently in that enterprise.

He sent Peter Zeno with an armie agaynst the Turkes, that than had newly chased the Christians oute of Sozia. Whyche Turkes were foughten wyth, and finally discomfyted.

Than beganne the warres againste the Signori della Scala, the chiefe whereof was Mastino before named: who chasing the Rossi from Parma got Feltro, Belluno, & Ceneda, before time taken by the said Rossi, from kynge John of Boeme. The Mastino thus growynge great, attempted to trouble the Venetians with buildyng of fortresses and bastilions about Peta bubula. Wherfore the venetian entred in league with the kynge of Boeme, and with the most parte of al the

ſtates of Italie, ſpecially with the Flozentines, againſt this Maſtino: and made Peter Roſſo generall of that league: who (aſſemblynge an armie, of the Venetians, Flozentines, Bologniese, Ferrarese, & other theyr colleges (after many ſkyrmyſhes, takyng of foztreſſes and townes: finally did diſcomfite Maſtino in two ſeuerall battailes, and brought hym by foꝛce to requyre peace: whych was graunted on this wiſe, that he ſhould leaue Feltro, Ciuidale di Belluno, and Ceneda vnto Charles ſonne of the kyng of Boeme: Bergamo and Brella, vnto the Viſconti of Myllaine: Treuiſo, with the appurtenaunces, Caſtelbaldo, and Baſſano, to the Venetians, and .viii. caſtelles to the Flozentines.

¶ After the happie ſucceſſe of theſe warres, Dandolo dyed.

Bartholomeo Gradenigo 1340

¶ Than Bartholomeo Grandenigo, ſucceded, in whoſe tyme, the water in Venice foꝛ the ſpace of thꝛee dayes, dyd ſwel foure yardes higher than his wonted courſe: ſo that they thought to haue been all dꝛowned: but at laſt ſainct Nicolas, ſainct Geoꝛge, and ſaynete Marke came into a pooꝛe fiſchers bote, and in the mouth of the hauen dꝛowned a ſhippe of diuels that wꝛought al this myſchyefe. Foꝛ pꝛoufe wherof, this pooꝛe fyſcher the next moꝛnynge after the water ceaſed, pꝛeſented vnto the duke and ſenate a golde ring that ſainct Marke had geuen hym. Thys was taken there foꝛ a myꝛacle, though I thinke no man would beleue it.

The feare of this water was no ſooner ceaſed, but newes came, that the Candians rebelled. Wherefoꝛe a power ſent thither, aſſaulted theim on thꝛe ſydes, and with the coꝛrection of the pꝛincipall rebelles, reduced

theim

theim to their former obedyence.

¶Shortly after happened a great dearth of corne, and Gradenigo dyed

Than folowed Andrea Dandolo, a man for his wisedome and ciuilitee much commended of Petrarcha. Index Dandolo 1343

In whose name Peter Zeno (in companye of other Christian princes) was sent with an armie against the Turkes, whom at the firste they discomfited, and toke Smirna: but afterwardes the turkes assembled againe, and with great slaughter ouercame the Venetians, the Cypriotes, and the Rodianes.

¶This Duke procured licence of the kynge of Babylone, that Venetian merchauntes might freely trafficque in Aegypt, and sent an armye vnto zara than yelded vnto the kyng of Hungarie, who beynge come thyther with. 120000. men, was foughte with by the Venetians discomfited, and zara recouered.

This duke ordeined the office of the three Auditours, for the better erpedicion of matters, because the Auogadori had to much charge on theim to dispatche wel: and he hym selfe wrote a worthy history of the Venetian astate and lawes for the tyme than passed.

He sente .vi. shippes into Sicilia for corne, wherof two perysshed by the way, the other .iiii. relceued the citee in their great dearth. After folowed suche an earthquake, that .iii. or .iiii. steples, with diuers other buildynges in Venice were shaken to the earth: and than such a pestilence that in maner Venice became voyde. Neuertheleſſe a newe armye was made out against the Genowales, that foughte with them at Caristo beſydes Negroponte, where firſt the Genowales were discomfy-

nistee, & made hym a skinner againe, as he was before
¶ After this Marco Cornaro as Vice Doge, ruled for a certeine space.
¶ Than John Gradenico was elected duke, who sendyng out .viii. galleis against the Genowaies, was occasion of the peace, that immediately folowed betwene them. John Gradenico. 1355

In his time Lewis kyng of Hungary entred in leage with certeine princes and nobles of Lumbardy against the Venetians: so that after he had beene before Zara, Spalato, Trau, and Nona, with other places in Dalmatia: he besyeged Treuiso: duryng which siege Gradenico dyed.
Than John Delfino was chosen, who being that tyme besieged within Treuiso, and aduertised of hys election, requyred the kynges saueconducte to passe: which woulde not be graunted. Wherfore at lasse incompany of certeine men of armes, he secretly departed, and came to Venice: and was no sooner in the auctoritee, but he reuoked the Potestate of Padoa, and toke from the Padoanes the trade of salte. A mattier vnto them of great importance. This did he to be reuenged on Carraro, a principal of the Padoanes, who was entred into intelligence with the Hungariens. John Delfino 1356
Finally this king prospered so much against the Venetians, that they were constreygned for a peace to graunt hym al Dalmatia, from the gdolfe Fanatico, to Durazo, with certeine other townes aboute Ceneda and Treuiso, that he had than newly gotten.
¶ To this peace the Venetians at that tyme, were glad to agree, for eschewynge of more daunger. And not

longe after thys Delfino dyed.

Lorenzo Celso 1360

Whom Lorenzo Celso, than capitaine of the armye vpō the goolfe, was elected, who being aduertised therof, incontinently repayred vnto Venice: where he was receiued with such pompe as the Venetians vse. But his owne father, would in no wyse goe againste hym: thynking it vnmete, that the father should vse anye reuerence to hys sonne.

In his time, fyrst the Duke of Austriche, and after the kynge of Cyprus came to see venice for their passetime where they were receiued and honoured accordyngly. Than of new Candia rebelled, for the great tares that the Venetians leuyed of theim. Wherfore fyrste one, and than an other army was sent thither, whiche wyth much adoe (by reason of the Greekes defence) at laste recouered it: and so with triumph retourned to venice.

¶ About this time the kyng of Cyprus toke and sacked Alexandria in Aegypt, from whens he retourned laden with a wonderful praye. And not longe after thys duke Celso dyed.

Marco Cornaro 1365

His successoure was Marco Cornaro, who forthwyth had worde that Candia againe rebelled. Against whom a newe armie was prepared, with priuilege obteined of the bishop of Rome, of clere pardon and remissyon of synnes, for all theim that shoulde beare armes in that enterprise.

¶ Finally the Candiottes were so oppressed, that they were constreigned to aske peace, and with sharpe punishementes were brought to their wonted obedience.

¶ The businesse of Candia being thus wel quieted and reformed, Cornaro lyued not longe after.

Than

Than entred Andrea Contarini, notwithstanding that he oftentymes refused the dignitee, perchaūce through foresyghte of thynges to come. For fyrste they of Andrea contarini 1367
Trieste through succour of the duke of austria, rebelled and beyng in a sharpe battaile ouercommen: were constreigned to retourne to the Venetian obedience.
Than beganne a new bickering betwene the Carrari, lordes of Padoa, and the Venetians, for the interest of certeine confines, betwene whome were many skirmishes with variable fortune on both sides, But the venetians had euer the better, vntil the Carrari had gotten in leage the kyng of Hungary, the duke of Austria, the Genowaies, and the Patriarke of Aquileia, who on all sydes by lande and sea, oppressed the Venetians sore. For notwithstandyng that in this meane whyle, with helpe of the kyng of Cyprus on the one side, they fyrste discomfited Andronico sonne of the emperoure Caloianni with the Greekes in the Ile of Tenedo, and after that diuers of the Genowaies by sea. And than on the tother side with the helpe of Bernabo Visconti, by lād discomfited the Carrato on the Padoan territory, with getting of some townes: yet fortune tourned so againe them, that at Pola they loste .xv. galleis at one time, and by littell and lyttell losse Vmago, Grado, Caorle, Chiozza, Loreo, Le Bebbe, Capo d'aggere, Malamoco, & Pauigia: lokyng euery foote, whan they shuld be assaulted in Venice. Insomuche, that they sente a blancke Charter vnto Peter Dozia, than capitaine of the Genowaies armie, beseching him to prescribe them what condicions he would, and they gladly woulde accept them: but as it happeth commonly in prosperitee,

men

men are not contented with reasonable aduauntage: he would not haue theim but at his owne descrection.

And so droue forth the tyme till Carlo zeno, with the Venetian armye, scoured all the leuaunte seas, toke many riche shyppes, of theyr ennemyes: and wyth the slaughter of. 300. Genowaies, reskoued the fortresse of Constantinople vnto Calotanni emperour of Greece, besieged Pera: & finally after manye worthy victories in those partyes (aduertysed of the perill that Venice was in) retyred homewardes: ioigned wyth Vettorio, Pisani capitaine of the rest of the Venetian armie, and neere vnto Brondolo, Chiozza, and those other places theraboutes, fought diuers tymes with them, with dyuers fortune, and at last slew theyr capitaine beforenamed, recouered Chiozza through famine, and toke 80. Padoan botes, with. 19. Genowaie galleis, besides certeine shippes laden with salte, and noumber of prysoners.

This great victory thus obteined by Vettorio Pisani and Carlo zeno, was not yet enough to end this warre For the rest of the Genowaies armie discoumfited at Chiozza, departed to Trieste, causyng it to rebel.

And than leauing Istria in gouernaunce of the Patriarke of Aquileia, retourned againe to attempt the gettynge of Brondolo and Chiozza. But findynge the passages closed againste theim, they made towardes Pirano and Parenzo, doynge theyr best to gette them: wherin they preuayled not, and so at laste wythdrewe them into the hauen of Marano.

¶ This meane while the Venetians endeuoured themselues to recouer againe Bebbe, & the other place nere

about

about theim. All which they obteined, Capo d' aggere onely except, that was holden by the Carraro.

Than came newes, that Pola was taken, and that the Genowaies, renuyng theyr armie, had also taken Arbe in the Ile of Scardona. Wherefore a newe power was made out, which passing into Istria, sacked Iustinopoli, and besieged Zara. In whyche enterprise Vettorio Pisani died, so that Carlo Zeno rested captaine alone: who with. viii. galleis of newe, scoured all the costes of Dalmatia, toke. xii. Schlauon shippes, and wente forth into the riuer of Genoa, where he wrought wonders: whilest the Genowaies and theyr colleges on the other side sacked Capo d' Istria, toke Conigliano, Nouale, and Treuiso before yelded to the duke of Austria: besides. xiiii. Venetian shippes, that the Gnowayes toke in the porte of Pesaro.

And so longe contended they thus warring one vpon another, that at laste both parties were wery, and by meane of the duke of Sauoie, accorded. In the concluding of which peace the Venetians rendred the Ile of Tenedo with the Genowaies (that by the meane of the emperour Caloianni, came before to their handes.)

Finally, after the Carraro of Padoa had gotten Treuiso by force from the Duke of Austria (the kynge of Hungary being dead) this duke Contarini finished his lyfe.

Than folowed Michela Morosini, that liuyng but. 4. monethes, made a newe lawe for the triall of murders and manslaughters. Michele Morosini 1383

Next succeded Antonio Veniero, a pleasaunte wyse man, that in the gouernaunce of Tenedo, had behaued Antonio Veniero. 1383

hym selfe prudently.

He bare so earnest a zeale to Justice, that hearinge a complainte against his owne sõne, for certain dishonest partes plaied about a gentilmans doze, of whose wyfe he was enamoured, caused hym to be layed in pryson, where he miserablie dyed of the plage. And thoughe he knewe, that the infection was entered into that prison, yet wolde he not at no friends intercession remoue his sonne into any other. Whyche acte one way semeth commendable, an other way unnatural and cruel.

Aboute this tyme the Venetians entred in leage with Giangalezo Visconti, duke of Millaine, and with the marchese Da Este of Ferrara, agaynste Carraro of Padoa: so that betwene these thre the territory of Carraro was diuyded.

Fyrste the Venetians had Treuiso, the marches of Este had certaine castels, that he had before losse, & the Visconti had Padoa, Feltro, & Ciuidale di Belluno: which with Vicenza and Verona, that he had also gotten a lyttle before, set the Visconti of Millaine on suche a height, that immediately he moued warre agaynst the Bolognese and Florentines, whereby he began to be had in Jalousie, and mistruste, of all the other astates, about him. Wherefore the Venetians, with those other two beforenamed, the Mantoan, the Ferrarese, Carlo Malatesta, & Robert duke of Bauiera (unto whome the yonge Nouello Carraro wasfled for succours) entred all iuntes a leage against him: by reason wherof Verona was sacked, Padoa besieged, and the Visconti at length in such wise discomfited, that he was fayne to requyre peace, whych was graunted for .x. yeres folowyng.

After

¶ After the death of Veniero succeded Michele Steno in whose tyme. iiii. Venetian galleis, laden wyth merchaundise were lost in the Arcipelago. michelo Steno 1400

¶ Than Zeno, wyth. xi. galleis was sente oute against the Genowaies: who had ben in Soria, sacked Barutti, and taken certeine Venetian shippes. But in theyr returne, betweene Modone, and Cianchio, Zeno discoumfited them: notwithstandyng that in maner they were double as many.

This meane tyme the yonng Carraro beynge (partely through the Venetians fauour) restored vnto the dominion of Padoa, besieged Vicenza, and straigned it so sore, that in despite of hym they yelded theim selfes to the Venecians: who toke occasion of vnkyndnesse towardes Carraro, because he had ben the principal moner of the Genowaies agaynste theim: and that also he had counsailed william Scala to take on hym the dominion of Verona. Insomuche that the Venetians armed, & fyrste chastised Alberto da Este of Ferrara for partetaking with Carraro, and finally by playne force, gat bothe Padoa and Verona: and led this Nouello Carraro, with hys two sonnes prysoners to Venice, where by nyght they were all thre straungled.

¶ And albeit, that the Venetians were esteemed to haue spent in those Padoane warres better than two myllyons of golde: yet this victorie ouer theyr approued enemie was so grateful vnto them, that forgettynge al expences, they triumphed with feastes and bonefyers so longe, that they set the toppe of saincte Markes steple on fyre: whyche afterwardes (to theyr coste) was made vp againe and cleane gylt outr.

Ceti Thus

Phillip encouraged wyth the money and large offers of the Mylanese, wolde not suffer the articles to be obserued, and inuading the Mantuane territory, prouoked his enemies the colleges, to renewe their power, wyth which, and by the power of the general Carmignuola, the duke receiued such a discomfiture, besides Terentiano, wyth losse of his cariage, plate and money, that if Carmignuola had folowed the victory, he had ben like enough to haue driuen Phillip out of his Duchie.

¶ Finally after sundrye conclusions and breaches, at last a ful peace was concluded, that Bergamo & Brescia, wyth their appertenaunces, shoulde remayne to the Venetians, Cremona, with his territory should be geuen to Sforza for the dower of his wife Biãca, doughter to Phillip Romaningo, wyth the fortresses of Gieradadda to be restored to Phillip by the Venetians (Peschiera and Lanado onely excepted) that Conzaga should haue the rest of the Mantuane confines, and that in those quarters Legniago, Pozzo, Riua, Torboli, Penetra, and Rauenna, shoulde remayne to the Venetians. That within the terme of two yeres Nicolas Piccinino should restore Bononia to the churche. That Astorre di Faenza shuld deliuer vnto the Florentines their fortresses, and finally that Phillip shuld no more meddle with the Genowayes.

¶ This peace satisfied, all the colleges (the bysshop of Romes legate onely excepted) whose part in Bononia semed nothyng honourable in this behalfe.

¶ Duryng these businesses in Lumbardie, the Turkes assaulted Thessalonica, a citee of the Venetians in Macedonia, and by force toke it, with Iames Dandolo, and

Andrea Donato, gouernours of the same.

Not longe after Andrea Dandolo was sent ambassadour vnto the Soldan of Aegypt, to excuse the senate of Venice, for the takynge of certayne of hys vesselles, wythout theyr consent.

In this time the water in maner drowned all Venice, so that whan the floudde was past, the hurt that it had doen, was esteemed aboue a myllion of golde.

¶ The daughter of the kyng of Arragon, wyfe of Lionello da Este of Ferrara, came to see Venice: and the furye of the people was so greate to see hir, that they brake the bryge of the Rialto: in the fall whereof .xx. men were slaine, besides a noumber mained and hurt.

¶ Eugenius the bishop of reme, impacient that Piccinino shoulde so longe kepe Bononia, entred in league with Alfonso kyng of Naples, and with duke Philip, against Sforza: and so renuyng the warres in Italie, the Bolognese, through helpe of the Venetians and Florentines, recouered theyr liberte, and for aduauntage, gatte dyuers of theyr enemies castels. By meane wherof Philip fel in hand againe with the Venetians and Florentines, that came to theyr succoure: so that theyr captaine Michelle Attendulo fought wyth him besides Casale Maggiore, put him to flight, toke foure thousande horse of his, ranne to the gates of Pyllayne, and brought Philip so lowe, that besides Pyllayne he had no more lefte, but Crema and Lodi. Wherefore he sought peace of newe: but it woulde not be graunted hym.

This meane time James Foscaro, son vnto the duke, for certeine his ill demeanours, was twise cõfined into

Candia,

Candia, and there dyed.

¶ Than Sforza takynge parte with duke Phillip losse Casale Maggiore, and the Marca d' Ancona, that the bishop of Rome toke from him, but finally Phillip dyseased both with a feuer and the flixe, dyed.

Incontinently vpon whose death Lodi and Vicenza, submitted them selues to the Venetians. Wherefore Sforza, capitaine of the Milanese, came with an army to Vicenza, toke it, and sacked it. And Attendulo on the other syde walked a great part of the Milanese, vntyl suche tyme as Sforza agreed hym wyth the Venetians, to haue 4000. men, and 130000 duckates of yerely prouision, vntyll he myght gette the state of Millaine: promisyng them, whan he were Duke, he would be contented to renounce to theim all that, that Philip had gotten on that syde the ryuer of Adda. So that whan Sforza obteyned the state of Millaine (whyche happened shortly after) he obserued his promyse, and peace folowed.

¶ About this time a certaine Greeke, called Stamato, robbed the treasure of saincte Markes churche, after he had been two yeres in cuttyng an hole through a very myghtie stone wal: but beyng bewrayed through a tailoure, that he trusted, the treasure was recouered, the Greeke taken, and for hys longe pacyence and worthy theefte, hanged with a golden halter.

¶ Than came newes oute of Sicilia, that Loredano, capitaine of the Venetian army, had foughten with the Genowaies and Sicilians: and had burned. 47. of their shyppes. After whych victorie a generall peace folowed for a tyme.

The

¶ The kyng of Bosina sent for a present to the Venetians certaine vesselles of siluer .iiii. goodlye horsed, and manye Faulcones.

Liberalitee

¶ Frederike the emperour, retournyng from hys coronacion at Rome towardes Almaine, passed the Venice, where the Senats presented to the Empresse: a ryche crowne, sette with the iewelles, wherof some one stone was estemed at .3000. duckates, and besides that gaue hir two couerynges for a cradell, richelye embrodered with stone and perle: because she was at that time great wyth chylde.

¶ A new leage made betwene the Venetians, and the Senesi, the duke of Sauoie, the marques of Monferrato, and the lordes of Corregio, agaynst Sforza, than newly made Duke of Millaine. For defence whereof Sforza had secret helpe of the Florentines: so that the Venetians, with their colleges, procured Alfonse kyng of Naples, againste the Florentines, who after made warre vpon them in Tuscane, whilest the gentill Leonello, capitaine of the leage on the tother side, toke Lodi, Gotolengo, Manerbio, Pontoglio, and ranne euen to the gates of Millayne.

About this tyme the Turke wonne Constantinople, in the takyng wherof the emperour of Grece, with diuers gentilmen Venetians, valiauntly resistyng their ennemies, both by sea and land, were slaine, besides a number of others taken prysoners, with the losse of theyr nauye and substaunce. Wherefore the byshop of Rome toke vpon him the appeasynge of the Italyan warres: agreyng the parties on this wise: that Sforza shoulde restore vnto the Venetians all that that he had taken

from them in those warres(the castels of Gieradadda onely excepted)that the kynge of Naples should do the like to the Florentines(Castiglione excepted)and the Florentines to do the like to the Senese, And that whē any controuersie should happen of newe betweene them,the bysshoppe of Rome shoulde order the matter wythout any businesse of warre.

The Genowayes were left out of this peace,by meane of the king of Naples.

¶Federike emperour of Almayne requyred ambassadours from all the princes of Europe,to make a newe league against the Turke.

But this meane whyle Bartholomeo Marcello returned from Constantinople with an ambassadour of the Turkes,that broughte certeyne articles of agreemente to the senate,which the Venetians accepted:and therupon was confyrmed amitee betweene the Turke and theim.

Pasquale malipiero, 1457

After the death of Foscaro succeded Pasquale Malipiero,of whom I fynde nothynge of importaunce,saynge that in his time hapned the terrible earthquake in Italy,that specially in the realme of Naples dyd so much hurte:and that empryntynge was than fyrste inuented.

Christofero moro. 1462

After him succeded Christofero Moro,in whose time the Turkes wanne by force,and rased to the earth the Venetian walle,made upon Istmus of Morea,and after did in maner what they would thoroughout al that region.

morea.

¶This Morea,auncyentlye called Peloponnesus,is the chiefe parte of Greece,a very riche countrey,com-

passed about with the sea, except in one narowe place, that it seemeth tacked vnto the maine lande: in whyche place beynge aboute syre myle ouer, was suche a walle made, as with reasonable furniture had been sufficient to resist a wonderful power. But the venetians (because they kyst of Christian princes, entred in amitee with those infidelles) trustyng to much in theyr newe friendshyp, attended more to the vndoing of theyr neighbours at home, than to the earneste pronysion that so worthy a countrey, agaynste so puissaunte an enemy, the Turke, requyred. So that shortlye after the losse of that wal, they were shamefully discoumfited at Parasso, Iames Barbarico beyng theyr Proueditore. And than also they losse Negroponte, where was suche a slaughter of Christians, as would make any Christian herte wepe to heare it. Besides a huge summe of money, that they were constreigned to geue to the king of Hungarie, to resist the Turkes passage, that with an other armie by lande was than coming towardes Dalmatia.

Than succeded Nicolo Trono, who was cause of the establishmēt of Ercole da Este in ỹ duchie of ferrara. He entred in league with Vsnucassan king of Persia (whose successour is nowe called Sophie) againste the Turke.

Nicolo Trono. 1471.

In his time the Venetians gatte the realme of Cyprus by this meane. Iames, laste kynge of the same, for the great amitee betwene hys forefathers and the Venetians, came vnto venice, and requyred the Signoria to adopte one of theyr daughters, as daughter of theyr common wealth: and than wouldе he be contented to

ted to accepte hir vnto hys wyfe.

¶This large offer was soone accepted, and Katheryn Cornaro, a goodly yong gentilwomá espowsed to the kynge, who therupon retourned into his realme continuyng in peace the tyme of hys lyfe. At his death, (leauyng his wife great with childe) he ordeyned, that she and hir child not yet borne, shold enioy the realme, But the chylde after the birth lyued not longe. Assoone as the Venetians heard of the kynges death, they armed certaine galleis & sent them with Georgio Cornaro, brother to the Quene into Cipzus, to comfort hir on the Signorias behalfe: wyth this wyle, that whan Cornaro shold arriue before Famagosta (the principal citee of Cyprus) he should feigne him selfe so sicke, that he myght not goe out of the shippe, and whan hys sister the Quene, with hir barons should come to visite hym, than should he kepe them sure from retournyng, and sodeinelye enter the citee, subduynge it wyth the whole realme, vnto the Venetian obedyence. As it was deuised, so it happened from poinct to poinct, albeit that the Quene was counsailed not to go abourd the galey, and that some businesse was made after for it, yet in effect the Venetians preuailed, & the quene was brought to Venice, where she passed the rest of hir yeres. Some esteme this doing treason, but many men allow it for good policie.

Cyprus wonne.

After Trono folowed Nicolas Marcello, in whose tyme happened no notable thyng, other than the victorious defence of the towne of Scodra in Albania against an infinite number of Turkes.

Nicolo Marcello 1473

Next hym succeded Peter Mocenigo, whyche at the

Petro Mocenigo, 1474

tyme of hys election, was capitaine of an armie by sea, wherwith he had in Cyprus quieted a great rebellyon, preserued Scodra from the Turkes fury, and restored the kyng of Carramania to hys affate.

¶ For these worthy deedes, and for hys other vertues was in hys absence first made Proctour of. S. Marke, and than (as I sayde) created Duke. And beynge called home from the army, to gouerne the dominiõ, Antonio Loredano was sente for the in hys stede: who delyuered Lepanto from the Turkes siege, and vsed greate dylygence in the conseruacion of the countrey of Morea.

Andrea Vendramino, 1476

After Mocenigo, Andrea Vendramino was elected duke. In whose tyme the Turkes retournyng into Albania, came fyrst before Croia, & after ouerran all the countreis betwene that and the ryuer of Tagliamento in Friuli: so that the Venetians were faine to cal backe the capitaine Carlo Montone, who not longe before put out of wages was than gone into Tuscane.

¶ This Duke attempted a peace with the Turkes, but hys purpose was interrupted by meanes of the kynge of Hungary and of Naples.

John Mocenigo 1478

After Vendramino folowed John Mocenigo, brother to Peter before named.

¶ Thys man agreed wyth the Turke, after they had warred wyth hym. 17. yeares. The articles of accorde were, that the Venetians should yelde into the Turkes handes Scodra, the principal citee of Albania, with the landes of Corfu, Tenaro, and Lemno, and besides that should pay hym. 8000. duckates a yeare. In consyderacion wherof the Turke for his parte graunted them safe passage for traffique of merchaundise into the sea

now

nowe called Mare Maggiore, and auncientlye named Pontus Euxinus: and that the Venetians shuld haue power to sende an officer of theirs vnder the name of Bailo to Constantinople, to iudge and order all their merchauntes busynesse.

¶ Not longe after this agreemente, the Ile of Corfitta in Dalmatia, was brought vnder the Venetian dominion.

¶ And in the .iiii. yeare of this mans rule, warre was moued against Ercole duke of Ferrara, for the breache of certeine articles betwene hym and the Venetians.

After that Robert of S. Seuerino was sent wyth an armie against Ferrando kyng of Naples, in which enterpryse the Venetians discomfited Alfonse Duke of Calabria, sonne of the foresayde kynge. But those warres, by meane of other Princes of Italye, were soone appeased, whan the duke of Ferrara (besydes the losse of Comacchio) had sustained very great damage for hys parte takynge.

¶ Nexte to Vendramino succeded, Marco Barbarico who neuer seking to be auenged on his enemie, woulde say. It suffised a discreat prince, to haue power to reuenge, wherby his enemy shuld haue cause to feare him. Therfore he vsed seueritee against the transgressours of the common wealth, & not against them that priuately offended him. In his dales happned litel adoe. Marco Barbarico 1485.

The contrarye whereof folowed in the tyme of hys successour Agostino Barbarico. agostino Barbarico 1486

Fell by reason of the warres with Edmonde duke of Austreiche, for the interest of certaine mines of yron, in which enterpryse the Venetian capitaine Robert of S.

Seuerino died: than thorough the comyng of Charles the.viii. frenche kynge into Italye, who at lengthe, partly thorough the Venetian force was constreigned to retyre into Fraunce: but most of al they were troubled with the Turkes, who fell out with them, ouerranne al their countreis as farre as Tagliamento, slew aboue. 7000. persons of the Venetian parte, and toke from them Lepanto, Modone, Corone, and Durazo. Neuertheles this meane whyle the Venetians gatte Cremona, and diuers other townes in Italy, which is rather a reproche to thē, than an honor that wold suffer warre vpon their christen neighbours, than bend their power to resist the Turkes.

Leonardo Loredano 1501.

After Barbarico, Leonardo Loredano was electe to the estate: in whose tyme all Christian princes about the Venetians, conspyred by one accorde vtterly to destroye them. And the league was suche, that in one selfe time the emperoure Maximilian, Lewys the.xii. frenche kynge, Ferrando kyng of Spayne, and of Naples, Iulius bysshop of Rome, with the Dukes of Mantua and Ferrara, should warre vpon them, beginning about the yere of grace. 1509. So partely by force, after many discomfitures of the venetians power, partly by accorde: in maner all the venetyn dominion within the maine land was diuided amongest these princes. The frenche kyng had Bzella, Bergamo, Cremona, and Crema: the emperoure Maximilian, Verona, Vicenza, Padoa, and part of Friuli: The kynge of Spayne, the cities and portes in Puglia, that the venetians before had gotten: The bisshop of rome, Arimino, Faenza, Ravenna, and Ceruia, with the rest of Romagnia, and the

Duke

Duke of Ferrara the Polliſene di Rouigo. So that the Venetians had ſo littel dominion left on the maine lande, that ꝑ emperour Maximillian came to Maeſtre .v. little myles from Venice, as neere as the ſea would ſuffer hym to approche: and there for a triumphe or deſpyte, ſhotte of his artillerie to Venicewardes: thoughe he coulde doe it no hurt. Wherefore the Venetians, prouoked in maner by deſpayre, & throughe an oracyon made by theyr duke, that encouraged theim rather to die lyke men, than to ſuffer theim ſelfes thus vilye to be eaten vp and deſpyſed, renued an armie by land, recouered Padoa, than negligentlye kepte, fortifyed it and Treuiſo, fought dyuers times with variable fortune againſt theyr enemies, ſought to be reuẽged on the duke of Ferrara, againſte whome they ſent .xvii. galleis and 400. botes to aſſaile the Ferrareſe dominion by the riuer of Po: and ſynallye behaued theim ſelfes ſo manfully, that the kyng of Spaine, and the biſhop of Rome, made a new leage with them againſt the french kynge: who at that tyme, beſydes the ſtate of Mylayne, had gotten Bononia, & was become ſo greate in Italy, that they were all afearde of hym. Vppon concluſyon of whiche league the citeſins of Breſſa retourned to the Venetian obedience, ſo that for defence of that citee againſt the frenchemen, Andrea Gritti, with certeins other noble venetians and capitaines, and a conuenient nombre of ſouldiours, were ſente thither: where after a ſore conflict with the frenchemen, they were all diſcomfited, ſlaine or taken, and the principall priſoners ſent to Mylaine to Mounſer du Foys, thã gouernours there, who ſent Andrea Gritti, as a ſinguler preſente,

priſoner

pryſoner to the frenche kynge.

The Venetians not a little troubled for this losse, caused the campe of the league, that than lay before Bononia to draw towardes Ferrara: and in succour of that campe made a new army by water, wherwith they sacked Argenta, toke Pirandula, and did muche hurte to the Ferratese dominion, tyll at laste the Vice Roy, of Spaine generall of the sayd campe, came before Bononia, and from thense to Rauenna for feare of the frenche host, that from Pyllaine pursued hym. Unto whyche frenche armie the Duke of Ferrara united his power, and so together folowed the armie of the league to Rauenna: where on Easterdaye in the morninge was fought the bloudiest battaile betwene theim, that hath ben heard of in our dayes: and so many thousandes slaine on bothe sydes, that it coulde scarcelye be iudged who had the better: Sauynge that the Frenchemen obteyned the victory, toke Rauenna, put it to sacke, and after gatte dyuers other townes in Romagnia.

Douchemens hall in Venice.

Whilest these thinges were doing, the Douchemens hal in venice, called Il fondago di Tedeschi, was reedifyed a very faire and great house: and of a meruaylouse rent. For they affyrme, that it yeldeth to the Venetians aboue. 100. duckates a day: whyche after ours old reckenyng amounteth aboue. 7000. pounde sterlynge by the yere.

Antonio Grimani.

After Loredano succeded Antonio Grimani, who beyng in exile, was called home, made procutour of saincte Marke, and finally Duke.

Andrea Gritti.

Than Andrea Gritti, before named, newlye retourned out of Fraunce, was elected Duke: by whose meanes

the

the Venetians entred in league with the frenche kinge and so recouered Bressa, redemed Verona for a great summe of money, and ayded the frenchemen to recouer Pyllaine, and to doe many feates in the realme of Naples: how be it, the frenchemen not longe after, loste all againe through theyr ill gouernaunce and tyrannie.

¶ Finally practisyng now with fraunce, now with the emperour, now with the bishop of Rome, as best serued for the common wealth: this duke left it in good order, tranquillitee and peace, and so died, greatlye bewayled of his citesins.

¶ Than folowed Peter Lando, in whose dayes the Turke made warre to the Venetians, because they forgned with the emperour against him: so that they to obteine peace, were faine to gene hym the strong and notable citees in Napoli, and Maluagia in Greece: and besyde that the summe of. 300000. duckates. Petro Lando

¶ It was thonghte, that the Turke woulde haue been appeased with a muche lesse gifte, but beynge secreatly aduertised by the frenche ambassadour, how the Venetians had gene theyr Bailo or ambassadour commyssion, that rather than the warre should continue to make this offer: he would none other wyse agree with them.

¶ This knowlage came through intelligence, that the french ambassadour had with one of the Venetian Secretaries, who through corrupcion of money, disclosed all the procedynges of the priuie counsayle: whyche at length beyng discouered, the same Secretary fledde into Fraunche, and. ii. other Venetians of his confederacie were taken and hanged.

By this mans time Andrea Doria, with a great nauy

of the Emperours, of the bysshop of Romes, and of the venetians together, enterpised a iourney against Barbarossa, admiral of the Turkysh nauie: and yet meting with him at great aduauntage, both of power, & place, Dozia retyred: for what cause no man can tell. He lefte the Venetian Galeon, the notablest vessell of the woorlde, in the middest of the Turkes naupe. And yet after she had been assayled .v. houres on all sydes, she came hir waies safe, in despite of them all, leauynge an infinite number of hir shotte in the Turkish beten shippes and galleis.

Francesco Donato.

After Lando Francesco Donato was elected vnto the astate, about two peres and an halfe before the wisetyng hereof. And because in his time hitherto hath not hapned anye woorthy thynge to the Venetian, I woulde referre the rest to theim that hereafter shal fynde occasyon to wryte.

The

THe cite of Naples (some tyme called Parthenope) is one of the fairest cytees of the worlde, for goodly streetes and beautiful buildynge of temples & houses, specially the Castel Nouo, wherin the kings were wonte (as the Uicere now is) to be most commonly resident: beyng one of the rarest buildyng (for greatnesse and strength, that any where is lightly to be fonnd. Castel Nouo.

The countrey aboue is so pleasant, that in maner euerie village deserueth to be spoken of, aswel for sumptuouse buildynges and noumbre of commodites, namely habounndaunce of delicate fruites, as also for the holsesome ayre (for in most places it semeth alwates) yea at the deadest of the winter) to be contynuall springe tyme. In deede the heate of sommer doeth somewhat greue them, but they are so prouided of large and open buildynges, that it doeth not much annoye them. Temperature of Naples

And one thyng amongest al the rest is to be merualled at, whereof it should procede, that manye tymes the fyre breaketh out of the earth in diuers places vpon the sea costes, like to the flambes of Mõgibello, aunciently called Ethna in Sicile, as in the first yere of the emperour Titus, it hapned besides Naples in the hil Vesuio, now called Summi, where Plinie the same time (seking the cause therof) ended his life, not by violence of the fyre (for he approched not so nere) but by the vehement opilacion of the sulfure, that stopped his breath Plinies death.

It is true, that the natural hote baines (whereof there Hotte baynes.

be many in Italy, and namely, in the realme of Naples come of the naturall heate that is in the sulfure, thorough the veynes wherof the water maketh his course: but what shuld be cause of this flambe, that (as it were against nature) ascendeth out of the cold earth: almoste no man can make any reason. In deede, the best opinion that I gather, is, that the veyne of sulfure in the earth, receiuyng sometymes through the extreme heate of the sonne, a certaine kynde of fyre, kendleth: and as the veine is great or smal, so worketh it the effect. If it be nere the vpper parte of thearth, & haue vent, it breaketh oute in fyre or smoke, if it be so deepe, that for the great weyght of the earthe, it cannot issue, than dooeth it cause thearth to quake: as in those parties (most subiect to the sonne) earthquakes are commō, and somtime whole townes and countreys are destroyed withal.

Fire breakyng out of the erth.

Some thinke the fertilitee of the realme shoulde proceede muche of the heate that this sulfure geueth the ground (seyng there is more plenty than elswhere) but whereof soeuer it cometh the countrey is surely repleniished of all thynges necessary for mans lyfe, & so pleasaunt withal, that Pandolfo Collenuccio (a notable writer of the Neapolitane hystories) thinketh, the wonderfull mutations that haue happened in the same, to procede of the desire that men had vnto the pleasers and commoditees of the countrey. And further speakynge of the inconstancie of the people, he sayth these wordes: It seemeth, that the realme of Naples is predestynate to haue in it continuall tyrannies, seditions, fallhead, rebellions, warres, destruction of cities, ransshmentes, and slambe, with all the other calamitees that of auarice and

Fertilitee of Naples

rice and ambicion(true mothers of such plages)maye growe. And allegeyng the auctozitee of diuers auncient writers,affirmeth,that the prouinces of the realme which he calleth Regnicoli,doe perseuer without rebellion as longe as they fynde none to rebel against. Neuertheleſſe Titus Liuius,& the auncient Romayne hiſtories shewe,that Naples it ſelfe was of all other citees moſte constant in their faieth towardes the Romaines,aſwel in tyme of daunger as of prosperitee. And for the space of these.30.yeres and moze they haue perseuered in quyete obedience vnder their princes. Neuertheleſſe in this the abbrigement of their hiſtories ye shal see,that sens the decay of the Romaine empire,no realme in al the world hath ben so much subiect to alterations and warres,principally through occasyon of the inhabitauntes them ſelfes,who alwaies were diuided in partetakynges to their owne confusion. And you shal yet to this houre see,that the Neapolitanes are scarcelye trusted on their wordes. Not that I thynke they deserue leſſe credyte than other men, but because the wonted general ill opinion of their vnstedfaſtneſſe,is not taken oute of mens hertes. Yet is the Neapolitane for his good entertetment reckened to be the verale courteſie of the worlde, thoughe moſte men repute him to be a great flatterer and ful of crafte. What wol you moze? They are ryche, for almoſt euery gentyleman is lorde and kynge within hym ſelfe, they haue veray fayre women,and the worlde at wyll,in so muche as Naples contendeth wyth Venice, whether ſhoulde be preferred for sumptuouſe dames. Finallye the court about the Vicere,was wōt to be very princely,and

lye, and greatter than that of Apllayne for trayne of gentilmen: but now it is somewhat diminished as you shal perceiue in the ende of this history.

¶ The saiyng (of theim that best can gesse) is, that it yeldeth the emperour. iii. millions of gold by the yeare, which after our reckenyng is about. 700000. pound. A great parte wherof is consumed in mainteining the Uiceres assate, and keping of manye fortresses, & in the wages of. 300. men of armes, continually mainteigned there, that muste kepe euerye one hys. iii. horse, for the whych he hath as good as. 50. pound stipende yearelye, and many of theim haue more. And one greate faute there is, for almost no straūger can trauaile the realme vnrobbed, specyallye betwene Rome and Naples. It is in maner closed about with the sea, except. 150. mile. that is cutte ouer from the mouth of the riuer of Vfente now called Maseno, vnto the mouth of Tronto, and is of compasse in all, measuryng it by the banke, about. 1400. miles, hauing vpon the sea costes such a number of hauens and good townes, as few realmes christened haue the lyke.

¶ The historie of Naples.

After Charlemayne had taken on hym the occidentall empyre, and agreed wyth Nicefore Emperoure of Constantinople for their confynes, leuing (as I sayd before) the Duchy of Benenento for a mere betwene both, wherin he placed Grimoalde a noble man descen-

ded

ded of the Lumbards nacion, the realme of Naples re-
sted in peace about the space of 27. yeres, til the coming
of the Saraſines into Italye, who landed at Ciuita 829.
Vecchia, raſed it to the earth, went to Rome, ſpoilyng
and burnyng there what they wolde, paſſed by Monte
Caſino, & by the monaſtary of S. Bennet, deſtroiynge
all before them, and laded with wonderful rychesse, re-
tourned to their nauie in the riuer Garigliano, and ſo
paſſed home into their owne countrey agayne.
Not longe after the Saraſines vnder their Capitayne 845
Sabba, retourned into the realme, & beſieged Taranto
to the ſuccours whereof the Greekiſh emperour ſent his
capitaine Theodoſius, with a great army by ſea, of the
whyche. 60. ſayle were Venetians, who metynge wyth
the Saraſines, fought with them, were diſcomfyted,
many taken, ſlayne, and drowned: and finally Theodo-
ſius him ſelfe put to flyght.
Than the Saraſines toke the ile of Candia, and the 864.
more part of them arriuyng in Italy, toke all the town-
nes on the ſea coſtes from Ancona to Otranto, and
ſo about to Taranto, ſpoiling and burning ouer al, vn-
till at laſte, the Venetian armie mette with theim, diſ-
comfited theim, and droue them cleane away.
Within a while after Conſtantine a chilwe, ſonne vnto
Leo late emperour of Conſtantinople, was depriued of
his eſtate by one Romano, generall of his fathers army.
And this Romano (being alſo a Romaine borne of vile
condicion) vſurped the empyre by force, whyche cauſed
much ruffling, namely the countreis of Calabria and
Puglia rebelled againſte hym. But he to be auenged
on them, cauſed the Saraſines againe to come into Ita-
lye, who

The fyrſte comyng of the Saraſines into Italye.

lie, who not onely ouerronne those two countreys, but also al the rest of the realme of Naples, and Campaine almost to rome: entendyng to assaulte and sacke it, had not Johñ the.x. than bishop of the same made a greate armie, that so fought with, and discoumfited them, that they were fayne to flee vnto the mounte of Gargano, now called saincte Angelo: where they fortifyed themselfes & dwelled many yeres, renuyng now here nowe there throughe the realme, burnyng, spoylyng, and kyllynge in suche wyse that whan they came before anye towne, and promised, not to kyl the people nor to burne the houses, incontinently the inhabitantes would yelde them selfe: because they had been so often beten, that they thought resistence naught auayleable.

And thus triumphed the Saraslines in one parte and an other of the realme, but most in Calabria & Puglia, til the comyng of Otho, the fyrste of that name, emperour of Almayne, into Italye. Otho the fyrst. Who being arriued at rome (from pacifiyng of certaine rumours moued against Johñ the xiii. than bishop there) was persuaded by Pandolfe, prince of Capua, to lend the armie he had brought out of Germany into the realme: it shoulde be an easie matter for hym to dryue all the Saraslines awaye. And so it proued: for the emperour had no sooner sent his sonne (also named Otho) with hys power into those parts, but incontinently the Saracens made what they coulde to carye with them, and so departed. 964. By reason whereof, this Otho the secounde, helde the realme as his owne certeine yeres, til the Greekish emperour Basilio, sent a mighty armye of Grekes and Saracines into Puglia, & there discomfited Otho in suche Otho the.xi.

wyse

the w yſe, that if the Greekes had knowen how to haue
vſed t heyr victorie, they myght eaſilye haue recouered
Rome and all Italye. But they contented with the re-
couerey of Calabria and Puglia, fortified the ſame and
kepte it, not without warre, ſometyme of one prynce,
ſometyme of an other, and many tymes of the Saraſi-
nes, that (ſtil enioyng the ile of Sicilia) wold by ſtelth,
here and there, be doyng miſchiefe agaynſt their Chri-
ſtian neyghbours.

¶ Finally Henrie the fyrſt emperour of Almaine, Mi- 1008
ghel Catalaſco emperour of Conſtantinople, and Ser-
gius the .iiii. byſhop of Rome, the realme of Naples
ſtode thus diuided into ſundrye domynions, Calabria
and Puglia (as I haue ſayde) was in poſſeſſion of the
Greekes: the romaynes some here, some there in Cam-
payne and therabouts, had theyr parties, and some o-
ther vnder the name of princes, occupied the reſt.

Than one Tancredi, Conte d' alta villa, a Normain Tancredi the Nor-
borne, came into Italie, who hauyng .xii. ſonnes of hys maine.
owne, and a certaine nounber of other Normaines be-
ſydes, toke wages of Pandolfe prince of Capua, to ſerue
in his warres againſt Guaimaro prince of Salerne: in
which warres the Normains ſerued ſo wel, that Pan-
dolfe preuailed as he woulde wyſhe hym ſelfe. But be-
cauſe he ſeemed to ſet little by thoſe Normaines, after
he had obteined his purpoſe, therfore whan the tyme of
they appoinctmente was expired, they lefte Pandolfe,
and wente to ſerue Guaimaro, whoſe affaire by theyr
helpe was ſhortly after much encreaſed.

Finally Tancredi being dead, his ſonne Guglielmo Guglielmo
Ferrabach, was made generall ouer the normains, that Ferrabach

as their owne quyete possessyon.

Hunfrede. After the death of Drogone, folowed his brother Hunfredo, who continued .vii. yeares in the estate wythoute any notable thyng that happened in his tyme.

Godfrey. Than succeded Godfrey another brother, in whose tyme the prince of Salern happened to be slayne of his owne me, and Gisulfo a Normaine made prince in his place. This Gisulfo had diuers tymes attempted the getting of Beneuento, and now of new made preparacion for the same, wherefore Leo the .ix. than bysshop of Rome, required succours of Henry the .2. emperour of Almayne than beynge in Rome. So the emperour sent for his Germaines, that laye at Vercelly in Lumbardy and deliuered them to the bishop, that in his owne person, with the rest of those Italians he coulde make, entred into the realme, entendyng vtterlye to expulse the Normans. But Gisulfo, herynge of his comyng, hasted to Beneuento, rose and fortified it, and afterwardes abyd the bishoppes army at a place called Ciuita, where in conclusion was stricken a sore battaile, but the Normains gat the victory, taking the bishop with certayne of his Cardinalles prysoners, whom (after veray gentill intreatyng they lette goe wythoute raunsome. For reward of whyche courtesie, the bysshop afterwardes confirmed vnto the Normaines, all that they helde in Italy, to be their lawful possessions.

Wagelardo. Not long after this dyed Godfrey, and lefte the erledome of Puglia to his sonne Wagelardo. Wherewyth Robert (surnamed Guiscardo) brother vnto Godfrey, was so much offended, that by force he chased hys nephew out of the estate, & than occupied bothe the coun-

treys of Puglia and Calabria, adioignyng also vnto it, the citee of Troia, whyche vnto that daye perteyned to the Romaynes.

Robert Guiscardo

This Robert was a man strong, hardy, and wise who perceiuyng the great contencion betwene the Romaynes and Nicolas the secound their bishop (the better to establiche his dominion) he sente his ambassadours to the bishop, who in cõpany of those ambassadours came to the citee Aquila, and there mette with Robert: & had suche communicacion together, that Robert was contented to restore to the byshop, the citees of Beneuento and Troia, with those other landes, that he before had taken from the churche, for the which the byshop created him lawful Duke of Puglia and Calabria, and inuested him in the same duchy, with gift of the standard of the churche, so that Roberte became liege man and vassaile of the Romaine see, and by the byshops commaundement brought his armie to Rome, where he so chastised the Romaines, that they gladlye obeyed their holy Romaine father.

Robert created duke.

¶ Not longe after, leauinge his brother Guglielmo in Puglia, he passed into Calabria, & fortifyed the towne of S. Marke, and departynge thense encamped besydes the riuer Moccato, nere to the baines, and shortly after gat Cosenza & Martirano. Than wente he to Squillaci & so a long the sea costes to Reggio: whithe he besieged, and finally did so much, that he gat whole Puglia and Calabria, the landes of Brutij, and the rest of the whole realme of Naples, geuyng vnto certayne of his brethern such part as pleased hym. By reason whereof the same brethern (who a little before had ben his contraries)

trarles) consented wholy to call hym from thensfoorthe Duke of Calabzia and Paglia.

¶ And though I couet to be bzefe, yet I woul not passe ouer one thyng that happened in the tyme of this Roberte.

There was found in Paglia a certeine image of marble, with a cercle of bzasse in maner of a garlād aboute his heade, in which were wzitten these wozdes Kalendis Maiis Oriente Sole aureum caput habebo, the exposicion oz meanyng of this sentence was diligently sought foz by Robert, but none coulde declare it, tyll at last a Sarasine, learned in artemagike came foorth, and (beyng pzysoner) required his libertee foz the interpzeting of it, which being graunted, incontinently he said: The first day of the kalendes of Maye, at the rysynge of the son, marke where the end of the shadow of this head shalbe, and diggyng there, you shal know the meaning of these wozdes, which time was obserued, and ere they had dygged depe, they founde a wonderfull treasure, that afterwarde dyd no small seruice vnto Roberte in hys warres. Treasure founde vnder ground.

¶ Than was the realme of Sicile vnder the Moozes, whose pzince Beftauerto, made one Bettimeno his admyzal oz chiefe capitayne ouer the same. This Bettimino came secretely into Paglia to Roger, duke Roberles bzother, and shewed hym, howe Sicile was in poincte to rebel, so that foz a reward and other agreementes betwene them, he finally opened to Roger the meanes, how he might get it. Whyche Roger by the helpe of his bzother Robert, immediatlye enterpzised, & passynge with a power into Sicile, the kyzke towne he

Sicile conquered by the normayns

toke was Messina, and at length chased awaye all the Saraslines, the whole Iland became subiecte vnto hym and his brother, so that for a token of this victorye, Roger sent vnto Alexander the secound: than bysshoppe of Rome. iiii. camelles laden with part of the praye of the Saraslines, for a presente. And wonder it was to see the speede of these victories, for Robert Guiscardo and his brothren, had broughte all these domynions before rehersed vnder them within the space of. xviii. yeres.

¶ Not longe after, Gregorie the. vii. bysshop of Rome, fyrste fel out with Robert, but afterwarde beynge sore persecuted by Henrye the. v. Emperour of Almaine, he agreed with Robert, and receiuynge of hym onelye the marke of Ancona, he confyrmed to him al that Nicolas the. ii. had before graunted wyth rather more. For the whych, whan the same Gregory was after besieged in the castel. S. Angelo at rome, by the forenamed emperour, Robert Guiscardo came thither with an army, and repsed the siege, leadyng the bishop (who was mache yated of the Romaynes) with hym to Salerno for his more suretie, where he shortly after dyed.

Bysshoppe of rome besieged

¶ Thus Roberte, after manye worthye feates doen in Italy and Sicile, by occasion at last minded to driue Alesius, emperour of Costantinople out of hys astate and to be emperour him selfe, so that he passed the sea wyth an huge armye, conquered Durazo, Valona, and dyuerse other cities in Dalmatia, Albania, and Gretia: fought by sea with the Greekish and Venetian armies both, and ouercame them: and was like to haue preuailed in his enterprise, had not death preuented hym. Finally as he was goyng into Greece at Calsiopoli,

in the

in the ile of Corfu, he sickened and died, ledynge a glo-
rioule and victorioule lyfe .60. yeres. 1082

Than succeded him in the duchie of Calabria and pug- Roger.
lia Roger his yonger sõne, who in the counsaile holden at Melfi, was confyrmed by Urbane the second bishop of Rome. But Boemonde the elder brother (who euer had folowed the fayth, and at that tyme remained capi-
tayne ouer the armie in Grece) herynge that no part of the dominion in Italye was reserued for him, waxed so wroth withal, that (habandonyng all his fathers enter-
pryse) passed the sea with his army, to driue hys brother oute of the astate: and dyd so muche, that after muche feyghtinge, by agremente parte of Puglia was assig-
ned vnto hym, though he enioyed it not longe. For im-
mediately after folowed the greate viage into the holye land vpon the conclusion of the counsaile made in Chi-
aramonte d'aluerna in Fraunce. In which viage a- 1094
mongest the other princes, Boemonde him selfe would nedes goe, and so worthily behaued him, that by assente of all men he was made prince of Antioche, and so con-
tinued honorablye till hys laste day. By reason wherof hys brother Roger remained quietly Duke of Puglia and Calabria, from the beginnyng of his reigne aboue xvb. yeres.

After him succeded his sonne Guglielmo; that thyn- Guglielmo.
king to mary one of the daughters of Alesio emperour of Constantinople, toke shippynge to goe thither: and commended his astate to the protection of Calixte the second than bysshop of Rome. But whyle Guglielmo was absent, Roger than Erle of Sicile, sonne vnto Ro-
ger brother of Robert Guiscardo, without any regarde

of the

of the bysshop, assaulted Calabria, and gotte the better parte ere euer Calixt coulde succoure it. And albeit the bisshop reised suche an armye as the hasty tyme woulde serue, and came forth as farre as Beneuento, sendynge a Cardinal before with exhortacions and excommunycacions, yet wold Roger nothyng decline from his purpose: but was rather more hotte in hys enterprise, and fortune so muche fauoured hym, that after a noumber of the bisshoppes armie were fallen sicke, and manye of his dere frendes dead, the bysshop him selfe sickened so sore that he was caried in a horselitter backe to Rome, and all hys people desperpled. By reason wherof roger in maner without resistence, in shorte time gat all Puglia and Calabria into his owne possession, and so kept it, that whā Guglielmo retourned, deceiued of hys pretended mariage (findynge him selfe also spoyled of hys dominion) he was fayne to repayre to his cousen the prince of Saern, where not longe after he ded, leauing none issue.

Roger. 2. ¶ So Roger remaignyng successour by inheritaunce, woulde no more be called Duke, but entitled hym selfe kynge of Italy, whych Calixt and Honorius (nexte bysshop after him) dissembled, because thei could not chose: but Innocence the second, theyr next successour would not abyde that name, and therefore moued of disdeyne without measuryng his force, sodeinely assembled such people as he could make, and went against Roger with so great a furie, that ere euer Roger coulde make anye preparacyon, he draue hym from. S. Germaynes, and sate of all the abbey landes (where Roger thought to

haue

haue defended hym selfe) and finally constreigned him to fle into the castel Galuzzo, and there besyeged hym, till william duke of Calabzia, sonne of Roger, coming with an army to succour his father, discoumfited ẏ byshops power, & finally toke the byshop him selfe, withal his cardinals pzisoners whō Roger the father entreated very courtesly, and at last licēced them to departe at theyr pleasure. In consideracion whereof the byshop graunted roger al his owne requestes, the title of king onely excepted: and amongest other thinges the citee of Naples, which till that tyme had alwaies ben the emperours. For loye wherof Roger at hys entrie made an hundzeth and fiftie knightes. But innocence returnyng to rome, found a new byshop made in his absēce, one Peter, sonne of Pierleone, and was called Anacletus. Wherefore Innocence fledde with certayne shippes of Pisa, into Fraunce. The meane whyle Roger visityng this other bishop Anaclete, obteined of him the title of kynge of bothe the Sicles, on this syde and beyonde the Faro. But within thzee yeres after, Innocence by helpe of the Pisani returned, & bzought wyth hym Lothayze Duke of Saronie, whome he crowned emperour. After which Cozonacion they bothe with a puissaunt army went against Roger, & toke from hym al that he had gotten in Italye, as farre as the Faro di Messina, but within few yeres, whan Innocente was dead, Roger recouered agayne all that they toke from hym, and did afterward many notable feates agaynste Emanuel emperour of Constantinople, whose ilandes and townes he toke by force, as Corfu, Corinthe, Tebes, and Negroponte, & burned the suburbes of Con-

The citye of Naples gotten by the Normayns.

Roger entitled kynge of Sicile

Cantinople, assaulted the emperours palaice, and for a memorie of his beyng there, gathered apples in his Orchard.

1149 ¶ He also foughte with the Saracines and rescued Lewys the.viii. Frenche kyng out of their handes, taken by them by the way, goynge into the holie lande. And so reigning.24. yeres lord of Sicile, he died in the citie of Palermo.

Guglielmo.3 ¶ Than succeded his sonne william before named, who immediately ouerran the church landes, and was therfore excommunicated, insomuch that many of his owne barons conspired with Adrian bishop of Rome against hym. But finally after much a doe he humbled hymselfe to the bishop, of whom he was assoiled, & inuested kynge of newe in the dominion of both the Sicilies. And after that made an armie into Barbarie, where by force he toke and sacked the citie of Tunyse: In his retourne from thense he vanquished the grekish army by sea, though they were many moe in number than he. But because he wared afterwards somwhat cruell, and burdened the people with tares and subsidies, hys barons rebelled, toke him in hys palaice at Palermo, and put him in prison. Than toke they his eldest sonne Roger, and made him ryde thrugh the streetes. After whom the people went crying. Life to kinge Roger, and death to the tiranne king wylliam.

Wylliam deposed.

¶ But the inconstante people repentyng them of their errour, or fearynge leste Roger would reuenge the iniurie done to his father, retourned to the palaice with a new rumour, and findyng it closed, began to assault it, so that roger thinking to appeale them, came to a win-

dowe

dow, and as he would haue spoken, was shotte into the heade with an arrowe, wherof he dyed. William restored

¶ Than was william taken out of prison and restored to his kyngdome, wherin after he had reigned in al. 21 yeres, he died, leuynge his sonne also named Wyliyam in the astate.

¶ This william for his good and peasible gouernance was surnamed. The good kynge Wyliyam. For in 26 yeres reigne, he neuer had warre with any christian prince, excepte that litte, that (moued onelye of a noble courage) he made against Andronico, who beinge lefte tutour to Emanuel the second, a child, vsurped his empire of Constantinople. But the Constantinopolitans them selfes arose against him, and hewed him to peeces creatyng Isaac emperour in hys place. Guglielmo. 4

¶ Many worthy feates did this William with his galleis agaynste the infidelles: specialiye in the viage that the two kings Phillip of France, and Richard of englande made into the holy lande. Duryng whose beynge at the siege of Acres, the good kynge William dyed in Palermo, without issue of hys body. 1191

¶ Than the barons fearing the bishop of Rome should subdue theim (whose subiectes they wolde in no wyse be) incontinently elected Tancredi (baskarde sonne of the lasse Roger before named) to be their kynge. But shortly Celestine the. iii. bysshop of Rome, founde meane to trouble hym on this wyse. Tancredi

¶ He crowned Henry the. vi. emperour on condycion, that he at his owne charges shold conquere the realme of both Sicilles, to hold it in fee of the church, rendryng certaine citees, and paying a certayne tribute. And to

make his matter the better, he secretlie toke oute of the monastarie of Palermo Constance a nunne, doughter of the forenamed roger, and (despensyng withall) gaue her in mariage to this emperoure Henrye, crowninge them both with the title of the foresayde realme. And so folowyng that title the emperour besieged Naples, but by reason of a greate plage in his armie, he was sayne to leaue his siege and retourne into Almayne. Before whose retourne (which was .iiii. yeres after) Tancredi dyed, not reignyng fully .ix. yeres.

1191

Immediately after, his wyfe Sibile caused William their sonne to be crowned. But the forenamed empe-

Guglielmo. 5

roure (pretendyng title in the right of his wyfe) with a puissaunt army entred the realme, & in maner without resistence obteined the whole, dryuing the Queene & hir son william from place to place so longe, that at length he besieged theim in a stronge holde, where fallynge to composicion, it was agreed, that william shoulo enioie the principate of Taranto, with the Erldom of Leccio, yeldyng therfore due obedience to the emperoure, who was sworne to obserue this conenaunte. But contrary to his promyse the emperour assoone as he had the mother and sonne in his handes, sent them bothe into Almaine, and made Willyam to be gelded, to the entente there should folow no more issue of that bloudde. And so ended that noble house of the Normaines miserably that about the space of .200. yeres had prospered, and at length reigned in Italy & Sicile, as you haue heard.

1195

Ende of the house of Normains.

After Henry the .vi. emperoure of Almaine (borne of the house of Suenia) had thus extinguished the domynion and power of the Normayne bloud in Italye, he

Henrico. 6 Imperatore.

obteined

obteined the realme of Naples and Sicile, and reigned
ouer them wel neere iiii. yeres, and died. Leauynge the 1198
realme by testament vnto his sonne Federike, whō his
wife Constance bare after she was. 50. yeres old: whi-
che being but a babe, he committed to the protection of
his mother Constance, of innocent the. iii. than bysshop
of rome, and of his brother Phillip duke of Sueuia.

Federike.

So Federike not fully e. iii. yeares olde was crowned
kyng in Palermo: shortly after whose Coronacion his
mother constance died, commendyng the tuicion of the
estate wholly to the bysshop of rome, that accordyngly
mainteigned the same to his power: notwithstandynge
that during the nonage of Federike, diuers businesses
happned in the realme. First by Marquarde an Almain,
made Marques of Ancona: by Henrye the. vi. after by
Gualtiero di Brenna a Frenchman, who in the right
of his wyfe, one of the systers of the last king wylyam
the Normaine, pretended title to the realme. Finally
by Otho duke of Saxonie, whyche after he had obtey-
ned the imperyall crowne at rome, disposed hym selfe
wholly to conquere Naples and Sicile: till the forena-
med Innocent by ways of excommunicacion had made
so many of his nobles and prelates to forsake him, that
he was fayne to leaue hys enterprise. At last Federike
beyng growen sufficiētly in yeres, was called into Al-
maine, and there elected emperoure after the deathe of
Otho, so that returning to rome, he was triumphant- 1220.
ly crowned by Honorius the. iii. than bishop: in recom-
pence whereof he gaue the erledom of Fondi, with cer-
taine other landes to the church: but shortly after Ho-
norius excommunicated federike, the cause why I find

not: so that Federike to annoy the landes of the church gathered together a noumber of disperpled Saralines, placyng theim in Luceria: and did so much hurte, that neither Honorius, nor yet Gregorye the .ix. that was bysshop after hym .xiiii. yeares, had in maner anye good dayes rest. Some holde opinion, that Gregorie died onely for sorowe. Neuertheleſſe this Federike was a worthy man. He had .iii. wyfes, the fyrſte named Conſtance, ſyſter to the kynge of Caſtile, by whome he had a ſonne named Henry, that afterwardes for rebellinge againſt his father died in priſon: the ſecõd was Iolante daughter of Iohn di Brenno, king of Ieruſalem, with whoſe maryage the tytle of the Realme of Ieruſalem was geuen him, which title all the Napolitane kynges haue kepte euer ſens, as the emperour doth at this day: the thyrde was Iſabell, daughter to the kynge of Englande. This Federike went into the holy lande with a puiſſaunt armie, and there behaued him ſelfe ſo valiauntlye, that the Soldane ſued to hym for truce, and vpon agreement deliuered to him the citee of Ieruſalem with the whole realme thereunto belongynge (a fewe ſmal forteresſes onelye excepted) inſomuche, that in the myddeſt of Lent, he was in Ieruſalem crowned, & before his retourne reedified the citee of Ioppa, now called Zaffo. And after a notable victorye had againſte the Milaneſe, wyth other their confederates of Lumbardie, he entred into Cremona in maner of triumph, leadynge after hym a noumber of priſoners with theyr Carroccio, on the which Piero Tiepolo Poteſtate of Millaine was hanged by one of the armes with an halter aboute hys necke. This Carroccio was a carte dra-

The kynges of Naples intitled kynges of Ieruſalem

1229.

Carroccio.

wen by

wen by certeine oxen, trimmed aboute with greeces or steppes in maner of a kingly seate, and decked with ornamentes of tapestrie and silkes of the beste sorte, wyth the standardes and baners of all the confederete citees and nobles. Unto whiche as to the principall place of iudgement or of audience all men used to resorte. And whan so euer the Carroccio, in any battaile was losse, than was the fielde wonne, for aboute it was alwayes the strength of the battaile.

Of this battaile and triumph one wrote these wordes, Hæ occisis non sufficiunt sepulturæ, nec Cremonæ palatia multitudinem non capiunt captiuorū, which is as muche to saye. To them that are slaine sepultures suffice not, nor the palaices of Cremona are not able to receiue the multitude of prisoners.

Than Gregorie lette crie the Croisse against him, and so much prouoked hym, that all the prieستes he toke, he caused their shauen crownes to be cutte a crosse, with a number of other despytes. And beynge at siege before the citee of Faenza (which he toke at last by compositi-on) wantyng money to pay his souldiours, he coygned leather, and valewed it, whiche for the tyme serued as wel as siluer or golde. Afterwardes beyng returned into the realme, he receiued the lether and gaue the valewe of gold for it againe.

Entio kyng of Sardegna, and sonne of this emperour Federike, by his fathers commaundement, fought with the Genowaies by sea, and ouercame. 4. saile of theim, in whyche. iii. of the bishoppe of Romes legates, with a number of other prelates (goynge to the counsayle at Rome made against Federike) were taken prysoners.

And

Entio beforenamed, kynge of Sardegna, Manfredo prince of Taranto, and Federike Prince of Antioche, with diuers others not so notable.

As soone as the Conrade being in Almaine, heard of his fathers death, he came with a great army, first into Lumbardy, where he recouered many cities that newly had rebelled: and after passed into the realme, reduced synge also vnto his obedience those townes that before his comming were in a rumour, of whiche some he destroied and put to sacke, as Capua and Aquino, and so finally besieged Naples, which at length he toke by famine: ouerthrowinge the walles and principall houses therof, with banishement of diuers of the nobles. Thus whan he had got Naples, the whole realme was clerely his owne: so after he gaue hym selfe altogether to huntyng and houndyng with other like pastimes. And beyng so in peace, his mother Isabell sente hys brother Henry, than tender of yeres, to do reuerence vnto him, whom Conrade caused secretely to be murdered by the way. A child in witte and beautie verye towarde. But the crueltee was not long vnpunished for conrade hym selfe, by procurement of his bastard brother Manfredo (as it was sayde) was poysoned within. v. monethes after. Conrade Crueltee

Now it is to be vnderstanded, that Henrye the eldest sonne of themperour Federike, who (as I saide before) died in prison, had a lawful sone named Corradino, to whom after the death of Conrade all the dompnion of Federike descended. But Innocent the. iiii. yet liuing, and consideringe Corradino beinge but a child in Almaine, made an armie, & withal spede went to Naples, Conradine next heire vnto Conrade.

1254. where he was receiued, and (as it was thought) had in short space obteined the realme, had he not dyed immediatelye.

Manfredo ¶ By reason of whose death, Manfredo by title of tutour of the younge Corradino (yet still in Germanye) sodeinely assaulted and discomfited the bishops army, and within very short space brought the whole realme to obedience, ere the ryghte tutours of Corradino in Almaine, knew of this victorye.

¶ Than craftily he hyred certaine Almaines to feigne, that they came freighte oute of their countrey with newes of Corradines death: wherfore Manfredo with all his, clothed in blacke seemed greatly to lamente the thing, insomuch that he caused the funeralles honorably to be executed.

¶ Not longe after appered him selfe in kinglye habite, and was saluted and called kynge. Wherewith Alexander the. iiii. than bishop of Rome was sore offended, excommunicated Manfredo, and sent an armie against hym, which was discomfyted. For Manfredo gathering into his handes the treasures of his predecessours, waged so many Saraslynes, and banished men of the Florentines and Lumbardes, that he was alwayes to stronge for the bishop.

¶ After Alexander succeded Urbane the. iiii. who to ouercome Manfredo lette crie a Croysie, vnder colour to expulse the Saraslines oute of Italie and Sicile. But the army of that Croysie was not sufficient to furnish the enterprise. So that Urbane of newe began to deuise a better way, calling charles Duke of Anglo and erle of prouance, brother vnto Lewys the. x. french

kyng

kynge vnto Rome, where firſt he made him Senatour and after crowned hym kinge of Sicile and of Ieruſalem, vpon condicion, that he ſhould paye yearelye to the churche. 48000. duckates. Purſuyng the title, charles with his frenche armie inuaded the realme, and at laſte in plaine battaile fought with Manfredo beſides Beneuẽto, where Manfredo was ſlaine, and hys power diſcomfited, ſo that Charles findyng after in maner no reſiſtent, gat the dominion ouer the whole realme, and at length toke the wife and ſonne of Manfredo priſoners, which ſonne had his eies put oute, and after dyed myſerablie in priſon in the caſtel De Louo. 1265.

Ende of the houſe of Sueuia in the dominion of Naples. Cario Dates de Angio.

¶ Than wente Charles royallye to Naples, where he found an infinite treaſure that Manfredo had gathered, the third part whereof he deſtributed amongeſt hys ſouldiours: and wared ſo great, that Clemente the. iiii. who ſucceded Urbane, made him vicare of the Empire in Italye: ſo that at his pleaſure he rode aboute the Aterbo and into Tuſcane vntil the comyng of Corradino before named, right heire by title of the houſe of Sueuia vnto the crowne of Naples, who hauinge certaine intelligence in Italie, came with a mighty power oute of Almaine to recouer his enheritaunce. But Charles ouercame him more by polycye than ſtrengthe in the playne of Palenta.

¶ And albeit Corradino and his couſen the Duke of Auſtriche beray ponge men, fledde in the diſcomfiture of the battaile, and did diſguiſe them ſelfes in vile apparaile, truſtyng to eſcape: yet their yll fortune at laſte diſcouered thẽ, ſo that they were taken, brought to Naples, & there after a peres impriſonmẽt (againſt al law 1268

Corradino beheaded.

armes or reason) openly beheaded: some saye, throughe counsayle of the bysshop of Rome. For whan Charles had asked counsaile of the bysshop, what he shoulde doe with Corradino, he aunswered these wordes, Vita Corradini mors Caroli, mors Corradini vita Caroli.

Cruelte

¶ But surely Peter, than kyng of Aragone, sufficiently reproued this cruelte in a letter written to Charles with these wordes, Tu Nerone Neronior, et Sarracenis crudelior, that is to say, thou art more Nero than Nero him selfe, and more crewel than the Sarasines. For indede Charles wente into the holy land with his brother Lewys the Frenche kynge, and there being taken prisoners of the Sarasines, were courteisiye entreated and sette to theyr raunsome. Whiche thynge gentylnesse and reason woldehe shoulde haue vsed towardes Corradino.

¶ But see what followed. The frenche officers and souldiours in Sicile, behaued them selfe so proudly with a certaine kynd of tyrannie, as wel against women as men, that Sicilians conspyred agaynst them, throughe the instigacion of one John di Procida, sometime physicion to the kyng Manfredo, who after he had obteined promyse of maintenaunce by kyng Peter of Aragone, wrought this conspiracie the space of .xviii. Monethes (a wonder it could so long be kept secrete) and so well it came to passe, that at the daye appointed, with the fyrst ringyng of a bell to euensonge, the Sicilians beyng armed, slew all the frenchemen, whersoeuer they founde them, they left not in all Sicile one frenchman on lyue, nor one woman that was knowen to be wyth chylde of a frenchman. Wherof yet vnto this daye, the

Rebellion in Sicile. Slaughter of Frenchemen.

Sicili-

Sicilians euensonge, is vsed as a prouerbe in Italy.

Peter kynge of Aragone.

¶ And than by accorde came to the kynge of Aragone and receiued Sicile vnto his dominion, the rather because he had a certaine title therunto, as in the right of his wife Constance, daughter to the late kyng Manfredo. Unto whom also the bishop of Rome graunted his consent, and in deede inuested him kyng therof by his ecclesiastical power.

¶ Many thynges happened betwene king Charles and king Peter, & amongest other a defiaunce to fight hand to hand with the place appointed at Burdeaux, before our prince Edwards, than ruler of Gascoygne: where bothe kynges kepte theyr daye: but nother mette, nor fought. And ere euer kyng Charles retourned, Rogier di Loria, admyral to kyng Peter, had fought by sea with Charles prince of Salern, onely sonne of kyng Charles before Naples, and taken hym prisoner, with a number of the Neapolitane barons and gentlemen, that were all sent (except charles with xr. of the chiefest) into Sicile, and there for a reuengement of Conradinos death. 200. of thois nobles and gentlymen were beheaded on a daye.

Charles sonne taken prisoner.

Cruelte

Finally kyng Charles vpon his retourne, made in Caopygne greate preparacion to inuade Sicile, but er he could bringe it to passe, he died for anger and melancolye, after he had reigned. xix. yeres. 1274

Title of the kyngdom of Jerusalem 1276.

And for as muche as some holde opinion, that thys Charles was the fyrst Neapolitane kynge, that obteyned the title of kyng of Jerusaleum, it is necessary to declare, by what meane.

The lady Marie, doughter of the prince of Antioche,

in prison the forenamed charles the secounde.

¶ Finallie Aufus the elder brother beyng dead, James to haue the kingdome of Aragon in peace (fore vexed at that time by the french kyng) fell at composicion wyth charles, to renounce Sicile vnto hym, and so dyd. But Federike yonger brother to James, assoone as he hard therof, got a certaine power, went into Sicile, and gat it to hym selfe: by reason whereof betwene charles and Federike was continual warre many yeres, tyll at last charles to haue calabria in peace (the most parte wherof Federike had gotten by force) consented, that Federike duryng his life, should quietly enioy Sicile. Federike kynge of Sicile.

¶ So charles bringing all his thinges to a quiet, reigned. 24. yeres, and died, leauyng issue by his wife (Mary doughter of kyng Stephen of Hungary). xi. sonnes and v doughters. The eldest named charles Martell, afterwardes kynge of Hungarye by the mothers side, Lewis the secound sonne bishop of Tolonse in Spaine Robert the third sonne kynge of Naples. As for the rest, though they were princes, Quenes and princesses, yet I passe them ouer, and wyll onely speake of Lewys duke of Durazzo, because charles Dadurazzo (who was next kyng after the firste quene Johan) descended of hym. 1309.

At the death of charles, Roberte his. xi. sonne beynge in Auignion, was called from thens to the dominion of Naples, and confirmed kyng by Clemente the. v. than bishop of Rome, howbeit not long after Caronumberto kynge of Hungarye, and sonne of hys elder brother charles, pretended title therunto: but after longe debatyng therof, the lawiers finallye determined, that Roberts Roberti.

bert shoulde continue, and Caronumberto shoulde content hym with the Realme of Hungarie. And thoughe Robert was muche troubled by the comyng of the emperour Henrye the.vii. into Italie, yet (after the emperour was poisoned by a blacke frier, in ministryng him the sacrament of communion at Bonconuento besides Siena, by order (as they say) of the Romish legate, king Roberte prospered so well in Italie (by reason he was taken as heade of the Guelfi) that he subdued Genoa: and the Florentines with their whole estate submitted them selfes vnto him, & accepted his sonne Carlo senza terra to be their lorde. Whiche Charles not longe after his establishment in that dominion, retourned to Naples and died.

1342. Finally Robert hym selfe sickened and died, without heyres males. And so the inheritance remayned in the two daughters of his forenamed sonne Charles. Vnto the eldest named Johan, he by his testament left the realme, vpon condicion, that she should mary with his nephew Andrew, yonger son of the abouenamed Caronumberto. In whose tyme lined Petrarcha and Bocchacio, the one laureate, and the other for prose, famouse in their Italian tongue: and for their vertues muche cherished of this kynge Robert.

Petrarcha Bocchacius.

According to the testament of kyng Robert, his nephew Andrew came out of Hungary, & maried Quene Johan, with whom he reigned scarcely.iii. yeares, but that she caused hym to bee hanged out at his chamber wyndow, because (as the fame went) he was not cocke enough to satisfie her appetite.

Quene Johans husband strangled

Than maried she Lewys prince of Taranto, an excel-

lent

lent beautifull man. But Lewys kyng of Hungarie, elder brother to Andrew, to reuenge his brothers death came with a puissaunt army into the realme, insomuch that the Queene and hir husband bothe fledde to Auignion in Prouance, leauing charles da Durazzo, sone of Lewys da Durazzo before named, theyr lieuetenãt to defend: but the Hungarien so muche prospered, that in short space he gatte the whole realme, and toke thys charles da Durazzo, with his son Charles prisoners. The father was beheaded, as giltie of the death of Andrew, being of secret faction in armes with the quene: the sonne was ledde prysoner into Hungary. Finallye kynge Lewys, after he had been .iii. monethes in the realme, leauyng a stronge garrison of Hungariens at Naples, retourned into his countrey.

Than Clement the .vi. bishoppe of Rome entreated a peace betwene kyng Lewys and the Queene, in suche wyse, that Johan retourned into hir state, with couenaunt, that hir housbande shoulde in no wyse beare the tytle of kynge. But what auailed that: for she was no sooner in possession of the realme againe, but she by fauour of Clement, caused hir husbãd to be crowned king in Naples, and by Clement's procurement, got the con- 1352.
sent of the kynge of Hungarye therunto. For the whyche she gaue to the bishop the citee of Auignion, that the churche euer sens hathe kepte. But Lewys couetynge to satisfie hir fleshelye appetite, fell in a consumpcyon, and dyed, within .iii. yeres after.

Than she maried James of Tarracone, a ponge gentilmã borne in Maiorica, than reputed the goodliest fellow in the worlde: But to hym she graunted not the ty-

tle of kyng. Within fewe yeares he dyed: ſome ſaye by natural infyrmitee: other ſaye, ſhe cauſed his head to be ſtricken of, for companyng with another woman. After ſhe maried Otho, Duke of Brainſwich in Saxonie, who than at that time ſerued in the warres of Italye, retreigned with the biſhop of Rome.

Finally, Queene Johan, who fauoured not Urbane the. vi. elected biſhop, immediatelye procured certaine Cardinalles to elect one of the French faction: ſo they elected clement the. vii. by reaſon wherof grew a great ſchiſme in the churche. For Italy, Hungarye and Almaine fauored Urbane: Fraunce and Spaine fauored Clemente. And Urbane to be reuenged on the quene, made an armie, and dyd ſo muche, that he conſtreigned both clement and the quene, to flee from Naples to Auignion: where the quene conſidering ſhe had no chyld, adopted Lewys Duke of Angio ſecound ſonne to kyng Johan of Fraunce to be hir heire of the realmes of Naples and Sicile, and therof made ſufficyente writynge: wherupon the ſecounde line of the houſe of Angio haue euer ſens mainteigned their tytle that they haue to the Realme.

Title of the ſecond lyne of the houſe of Angio.

Shortly after the quene returned to Naples. But Urbane this meane while, had inuited Carles da durazzo (who as you haue herde before, was ledde priſoner into Hungary) kynge of Naples, and wroughte ſo well, that charles by helpe of the kynge of Hungarye (that than fauored him much) brought a greate armye with him, and inconcluſion toke Naples and the quene with hir husband priſoners.

1381.

The husbande Otho was ſette at libertee upon condi-

cion

vpon he shoulde departe out of the realme. But the quene by sentence of the king of Hungary, was hanged at the same wyndowe, where she caused hir first husbande to be hanged. Hir sister Marie (of hir counsaille in that matter) was beheaded. Queene Johan hanged.

¶ This Marie was she, of whome Boccace was enamoured, and for whose sake he wrote the two bokes, Fiammetta and Filocolo, And amongest other verses writen of this quene Johan, I finde .ii. verape notable. Marie

Regna regũt vulue, gẽs tota clamat simul, oh, veh,
Interitus regni est a muliere regi,

Which in englysh are of this effect,

Helas crien the people all,
A womans shappe weareth the crowne,
Womans rulyng the wealth turne shal,
Of realmes, quite vpside downe.

¶ Quene Johan beynge thus dyspatched, Charles remeigned peasably in possession of the realme, til Lewis duke of Angio beforenamed (heire adopted) came with a great armye out of Fraunce to recouer the realme as his enheritaunce: and by the helpe of certaine prynces of Italy, passed through Lumbardy, La Romagnia, & la Marca, & so entred into Puglia, where manye townes yelded vnto hym: continuing so a yere and more, and to strength his armye, Mounser de Couci was sent after him with .12000. horsemen from the frenche kyng. Carlo.3

But he not folowing the duke, passed through Tuscane and besiegeing the Castel of Arezzo taried so long, that er ener he coulde come to the succours, the Conte Alberico, general of the kynges armye, had discomfyted the frenche armie, and slayne the duke in the fyelde.

For whose death Charles withall his courte, mourned in blacke a moneth, Mounser de Couci hearing of the Dukes death, solde the towne of Arezzo to the Florentines for. 400000. duckates, & immediatelye returned into Fraunce: so Charles had the realme in peace, till Urbane the bishop, who called him vnto the realme, fell out with him, because charles wold not cõsent to make Butillo the bishops nephewe, borne of a vyle stocke, prince of Capua. Vppon which breach Urbane cursed him: and because he had not power to reuenge him vpon Charles, he tourned his wrathe vppon .vii. Cardinalles that he suspected. Of whom he put .v. into a sacke and threw them into the sea, and the other two he put to death at Genoa, and dried their bodies in a furneise, carying them afterwardes on moyles before hym for an example to the rest.

¶ Finally kyng Lewys of Hungarye deceasyng without heire male, the barons of the realme called kynge Charles to the dominion therof, who at lasse went thither, and was crowned in Alba, but afterwards going to Buda, he was frendely called to a supper by the olde quene and hir doughter, and there traiterously slaine at the table.

Murder. 1386.

¶ This Charles had geuen to hym to wyfe by Lewys kyng of Hungary, Margarete yongest sister of Quene Iohan before mencioned, on whom he begat two children: Ladislaus and Iohan. But assoone as the Napolitanes hearde of Charles death, they toke their owne libertee vpon theim, so that quene Margarete, with hir children, was faine to flee to Gaeta, where she remained in muche care and trouble .iiii. yeares, whyles the

whole

whole realme was tourned and tossed: first by Otho late husbande to quene Johan, who gatte a greate parte therof, and died at Foggia, than by Lewys the secound Duke of Angio, who folowynge his fathers title, sente certaine galleis to Naples to maintayne those Napolines that toke his parte. Finallie Bonifate the.ix. than bishop of Rome, admitted the excommunication made against Charles: and caused Ladislaus to be crowned kynge at Gaeta. And albeit the forenamed Lewys of Angio came to Naples with an army by sea, and was there receiued, yet Ladislaus by litell and litell so allured the barons to hym, that he not only constreigned Lewys to withdraw hym into Prouance, but also brought Naples and the rest of the realme obedyent to hym. Thies he attempted the getting of Rome, which the fourth time he obteigned, insomuche that entrynge tryumphantly, the Romayne nobilitee did him homage. But what folowed: Alexander the.v. beyng made bishop of Rome in the counsayle at Pisa, receiued the forenamed Lewys of Angio that than was newly comen thither to doe hym honour. For the which he obteigned of Alexãder the inuestiture of the realme of Naples, and prouysion was made for recouery of Rome and thother landes of the Churche, whiche within short tyme was brought to passe.

Ladislaus. 1370

Rome gotten 1408.

Finally Lewis conducted an army out of fraunce, and augmentyng it with the Florentine & bishop of romes powers, entred the realme: where in playne battaile he so discomfited Ladislaus, that if Lewys had knowen how to vse his victorye, he mighte haue had Ladislaus in his handes, and also the whole realme: as Ladislaus,

 talkyng

talkynge of this battayle was wonte to saye, that firſte day (sayd Ladiſlaus) if thei had folowed it, they mighte haue been lordes both of my realme and person, the ſecond daye of the realme, but not of my person, and the thyrde day nother of my realme nor person. For the leyſure that Ladiſlaus had after this diſcomfiture, ſerued hym so to fortifie the paſſages, that Lewys notwithſtanding his victorie, was faine to retyre to rome, and so backe into Fraunce. By reaſon wherof, Ladiſlaus remaynynge quyet in his eſtate, diſpoſed hym ſelfe of newe, to recouer rome, & partly by intellygence, partly by force did ſo: puttyng to ſacke onely the Florentynes gooddes, that be founde there. And at laſte ſickened in Perugia, ſome ſaye of a feuer, ſome ſaye of poyſon: ſo that he dyed, whan he had reigned. 29. yeares. And leauing none iſſue of his owne body, the realme deſcended to his ſiſter Johan Da Durazzo.

Rome the ſecound time gotten by Ladiſlaus.

1414

Ioanna. 2.

THus Johan, late Ducheſſe of Sterlich, attained the realme, without impediment, by reaſon of. xvi. thouſād horſemen that ſerued hir brother at hys death, wyth good captains, as Sforza da Cotigniola. gli Attendoli, Iacopuccio, & diuers others. But becauſe ſhe was ſomewhat noted for keppynge company with a goodlye yong man named Pādolfello, whom ſhe made hir chāberlaine, hir barons perſwaded hir to marye: ſo that ſhe toke to huſband James of Nerbona in Prouance, than Erle de la Marca in Italye, vppon condicion, that he ſhuld in no wyſe take on hym the title of kinge. But he was not long maried til by comforte of the barons: he toke the kyngly name vpon him, and cauſed Pādolfello to loſe his head: whyche Sforza bereaue hardlye, and

al thoughe

all thorough the instigacion of Iulio Cæsar da Capua who therfore by the quenes policie lost his head.

And though the erle James (suspecynge hys wyles courage) would not suffer hir to goe oute of the Castell where they lay: yet at last with lowly behauiour, growyng out of suspicion with hir housbande, she had libertee to goe so often abroede into the towne of Naples, that finally she made a conspiracy against him, and gat him into prison: reignynge afterwardes hir selfe alone. Than toke she John Caracciolo to be hir high steward whom she loued more than enoughe: so that by him all thyngs were gouerned. And vpon contencion betwene hym and Sforza (who was in maner as a generall amongest the men of warre) the Queene defied Sforza. Muche a doe there was, but at length the Sforza was reconsiled, and the steward banyshed. And partlye thorough the bishoppe of romes intercession, the Erle James was deliuered out of prison, & restored to the Quenes fauour. But for all that, not long after the erle James began to worke against Sforza, who (perceiuynge it) found the meane to bring the steward home againe, and therby not only purchased the Quenes fauour, but also broughte the matter so to passe, that the Erle James fled into Fraunce, became an heremite and there dyed. After whose departure, by commission of the bysshop of Rome, Quene Johan was crowned in Naples but er the yere was ended, the Queene lost the bishops fauour and banished Sforza: who by the bysshops procurement became captaine vnder Lewis, the .iii. duke of Angio, than newlye entitled kynge of Naples) and reysyng an armie, camped before Naples, abydinge the 1419.

comyng

comyng of Duke Lewys: who within an other army arriued there.

This meane while, Queene Johan (ſeyng the power of hir enemy duke Lewys to be ſo ſtrong for hir alone) practiſed with king Alfonſe of Aragone, to accept hym as hir ſonne, to enherite the realme after hir: and therof made ſufficient writing, with delyuery of two ſtrong caſtels in Naples, Caſtel Nouo and Caſtell di Louo, that in king Alfonſe name were receiued as a pledge of poſſeſſion. Wherupon kinge Alfonſe in perſon, with a great armye by ſea came to Naples, and there foughte with the duke Lewys and his Capitaine Sforza. And though fortune for a tyme was fauourable to duke Lewys, yet at length through practiſe and lacke of money, Sforza became the Queenes man: ſo that Lewys was fayne to leaue the enterpriſe, and drawe to Rome: by reaſon wherof the Queene with Alfonſe remayned in peace: till diſcorde fell betweene them. The cauſe occaſion was becauſe the proclamacions were made in the Queenes name, without any mencion of Alfonſe: which moued the barons of Aragone to conceiue a great diſhonour, that a kyng of ſuch reputacion, ſhoulde lye there in that affaire. So muche grewe this matter, that at laſt kyng Alfonſe toke the quenes beſt beloued ſeruant priſoner, and beſieged the Queene. Howe be it, Sforza hauing receiued hir letters, came ſtreight to Naples fought with Alfonſe power, had the better hand, entred into Naples, and conueighed the Queene awaye with hym: Wherfore kinge Alfonſe augmented hys power, and after harde feight with Sforza, recouered Naples, reſeruyng the realme ſo muche, that by counſayle of

Alfonſe adopted heire to quene Johan

Diſcorde

Sforza,

Sforza, the Queene finally agreed with Duke Lewys, and adopted hym for hir sonne and heyre: by whose meanes Naples was recouered againe to the queenes vse. And so.x. yeres after, the Queene and Duke Le- 1424.
wys reigned in peace, and than dyed both. The queene by hir testament, lefte the realme to Raynold Duke of 1434.
Lorraine, brother to the forsayde Lewys. Thus ended the succession of charles of Anglo first king of that hous Ende of the house of Durres 1330.
¶ Whether the Queenes testamente were feygned or true, it was vncertayne: For incontinentlye vppon hir death, the citee of Naples, ordeyned amonge theim a common wealth, & made no mencion of any testament, vntill they saw plainely, that the bishop of Rome wente about to bringe theim vnder hym. Than they not onely publisshed Raynolde to be theyr kyng, but also sente for him, to come & receiue the possession of the realme. ¶ This meane while in the warres betwene England and Fraunce, Raynold happed to be taken prisoner, so that he coulde not come to Naples. Than kynge Alfonse Alfonse came into the realme through intelligence that he had with many of the nobles, and besiegeing the towne of Gaietta (than defended by certaine Genowaies, sent thither by Duke Filippo Maria of Millayne) at laste fought with the Genowaies army by sea, in which conflicte were slaine of the kynges part, about. 5000. and the kynge hym selfe, with hys. ii. brethren. the mayster of saincte James in Galice, dyuers of the greatest princes and barons of Spaine, and of knightes to the numbre of. 200. taken prisoners: and all brought to the forenamed Duke Phillip to Millaine: who after very gentill interteinment, deliuered theim without raunsome.

Kynge Alphonse taken prysoner.

Hym So Al-

So Alfonſe beyng reſtored to libertee, & waxing ſtrong through the amitee of the Duke of Mylayne, diſpoſed hym ſelfe to recouer the realme, and came thither immediately with his power obteined Gaietta, and went to Capua, which had been alwaies kepte for hym: how be it, during the time of his impriſonment, the Neapolitanes ſeeyng they could not haue, Raynolde, ſette his wyfe Iſabel Ducheſſe of Angio vnto naples, and dyd their beſt by waye of aſſaulte to winne Capua. But now that kyng Alfonſe was retourned, the part of Angio ſo muche declined, that Iſabel was faine to reſorte for helpe to Eugenio than biſhop of Rome, who ſente the Patriarke Vitelleſco to Naples.

Patriarke Vitelleſco.

¶ This Patriarke was a ſtoute man, meter for the feelde than for the churche. For firſte he diſcomfyted the armye of the prince of Taranto, and toke the prince him ſelfe priſoner, and long time valiauntely bare hym ſelfe in the warres againſte Alphonſe, one whyle wyth force, an other while with policie, ſo that beynge fallen with his army in the daunger of the king (through beſettyng of the ſtreictes and lacke of vittaile) he handled him ſelfe ſo humbly, that the kyng (embracing his faire offers) graunted him truce, and vnder coloure of the ſame truce, he (beynge armed, and the kyng vnarmed) came to Villa Giuliana, and ſo narowlye beſet it, that wyth muche a doe the kynge eſcaped his handes. Leauyng all his baggage and cariage for a pray to the Patriarke. Finally Raynolde beforenamed, beynge putte to hys raunſome, came with. xii. Genowaye galleys to Naples, where with kyngelye honours he was tryumphantly receiued: and ſo muche encreaſed hys power,

Raynoldes comyng to Naples.

that

that it was doubted, whether of the two parties were the better. Raynolde defyed Alfonse bodye to bodye, whiche Alfonse refused not. Howbeit at the daye and place of battaile appoynted, Raynolde appeared not. And albeit that Raynolde for a time prospered and gat into his handes the castel Nouo, and castel di Louo, that kynge Alfonse had alwaies kepte sens he receyued them at quene Johans handes, til that time, yet at laste (after the death of Iacomo Caldora, one of the principallest of the Angloyne parte) Alfonses power so much encreased, what by battaile, and change of diuers of the barons affections (who leanyng the Angloyne part became Aragonese) that he recouered Naples and all the whole realme: entrynge into the citee in maner of triumphe: where for a perpetuall memory of his victorye, the Napolitanes before the castell gate, erected a notable faire arche of marble.

¶ Thus Alfonse, obteignyng the quiet possession of the realme, vsed new meanes of amitee with Eugenio thā Bishop of Rome: & did so muche, that Eugenio confirmed him in the estate, and inuested his bastarde sonne Ferdinando successour to the crowne. For whyche inuestiture, kynge Alfonse vpon couenaunte inuaded the countrey De la Marca, and takynge it by force from Francesco Sforza (afterwardes Duke of Myllayne) restored it to the churche. And than in recompence of the great courtesie receiued of Philip Duke of Myllaine, he made warre in his fauour against the Florentines, and atchieued manye worthy enterprises, beynge in maner the onelye staye of duke Phillip in his later dayes: so that the duke by his testament made hym hys

heire of the astate of Pyllaine, but he enioyed it not, as in the history of Pyllaine appereth.

¶ Finallye, after a generall leage made in Naples betwene all the astates of Italie, excepte the Genowayes. Alfonse made an armie, and besieged Genoa for breach of certaine articles concluded longe before at the making of a peace betwene them: whiche the Genowayes were bounde to gene to the kynge yerely in maner of a tribute a bason of golde, and the cause of their witholdyng, was for that the kyng would neuer receyue it otherwyse than sittyng in his maiestee, as though he triumphed ouer them.

¶ The prouision made for the continuance of that siege
458. was so greate, that by common opinion the citee muste nedes haue ben his, had he not dyed, the .66. yere of hys age, and the .22. yere of his reigne in Naples. Leauyng for successours in the realme of Aragone & Sicile hys brother Iohn, and in the Realme of Naples hys sonne the forenamed Fernando.

¶ Of this kyng Alfonse are written many great prayses, for his valyauntneste hys temperaunce hys learning, his liberalitee and other like vertues.

Ferdinando. Ferdinando, bastarde sonne to kynge Alphonse, succeded his father, in the beginning of whose reigne Calisto, thā bishop of rome, pretēding the title of the realme to be fallen to the churche for lacke of lawfull heyres, excommunicated Fernando: and made greate preparacion to inuade: but death preuented hym. So that Fernando (warned therby) vsed such meanes of frendshyp with Pio hys nexte successour, that he was not onelye confirmed in the astate, but also crowned by certayne

Cardi-

Cardinalles sent to Naples for the purpose.

¶ Nowe assoone as the newes of Alphonse deathe was knowen, Duke John, sonne of the forenamed Rainold (in hope of mutacion in the realme) made an armye by sea, with helpe of the Genowaies, and landynge within the territory of the duke of Sessa, ouerranne diuers prouinces, and gotte dayly townes and frendes, so that fernando was like to be put to the worse, had not the bishop of rome and the duke of Millaine taken his parte: by whose helpe duke John at length was by force constreigned to leaue his enterprise, and most part of those barons that toke his parte came and submytted theim selfes vnto ferdinando, who graciously pardoned them and restored theim to their astates.

Than died Pio, and Paule the secound succeded, who oftentymes troubled the realme.

After the death of kynge John of Cyprus, ferdynando coueityng to conquere that realme, was resisted by the Venetians: betwene whom happened crewel warre, so that the Venetians toke truce with the Turke, and (as the fame wente) were occasyon that he assaulted and toke Otronto in Puglia by force, whiche shoulde haue caused greatter mischiefe in Italie, had not the Turke (than Mahomet the.ii) dyed. The turke in Italye.

¶ Immediately vppon whose death kynge ferdynando sente his eldest sonne Alfonse duke of Calabria, to conquere Otronto, which after long siege and sore feight, was (for lacke of succours) recouered.

¶ Nexte Paule the seconde, succeded Sixte the.iiii. bysshop of Rome, and after hym Innocence the.viii. who both wonderful inconstantly one while were frendes,

and an other whyle foes to the kynge.

Tonctouſ-
neſſe.
1489.

¶ Finally this ferdinando was noted to be verye coue-
touſe. For callyng a counſaile of his barons in the ci-
tee of Chieti, he wold haue encreaſed his ſubſidies and
tares. And becauſe diuers of his nobles diſſuaded him
from it, he put ſome of them to death, ſome he impriſo-
ned: from ſome he toke their goodes, and ſome willing-
ly rebelled againſt hym: in which trauaile and tranny
he continued til he died, leauyng iſſue males, ii. ſonnes,
Alphons and federike.

1494.

Alfonſe, 2

¶ After the death of ferdinando, hys ſonne Alphonſe,
than Duke of Calabria, with conſent of all the barons
and nobles, was admitted kynge, and ſendyng to rome
to Alexander than biſhop, for his confirmacion, the car-
dinall Borgia, with a number of prelates was ſente to
Naples, where by auctorite of the Romiſhe bulles, he
inueſted and crowned the kynge.

Than the kyng fell at variance with Lodouico Sfor-
za, duke of Millaine, becauſe he vſurped the eſtate
that of right appertained to his nephiewe Giangaleaz-
zo, ſonne in law to kyng Alfonſe, ſo that Lodouico (mi-
ſtruſtyng the kynges power, that in deede was bent a-
gainſte hym) founde the meane to bringe Charles the
viii. Frenche kyng, into Italie, who pretendyng to goe
againſt the Turke, found no reſiſtence: by reaſō wher-
of he not onelye ouerronne Tuſcane & toke theſtate of
Rome from the biſhoppe, but alſo conquered the whole
realme of Naples: although he enioyed it not longe:
For all the princes of Italie immediatelye ſo colleged
them ſelfes againſte hym: that he was faine to retyre
with ſpede, and was neuertheleſſe ouertaken & fought

with

with beſides Parma, where he loſt the greateſt part of his cariages, and diuers of hys nobilytee were taken pryſoners.

¶ Now aſſoone as kyng Alfonſe heard, that the french kyng was arriued in Lumbardy, conſidering him ſelfe to be hated of his barons, and his ſon ferrandino contrariwiſe welbeloued, incontinentlye renounced the eſtate vnto his ſonne, toke his treaſure with hym, & ſayled into Sicile, where for the ſpace of hys ſhorte lyfe (that dured ſcarce one yeare) he diſpoſed hym ſelfe to ſtudie, ſolitarineſſe, and religion.

Ferrandino.

¶ Than ferrandino was embraced of all men, in ſuche wyſe that he was thoughte hable to reſiſte the Frenche kyng. Yet notwithſtandyng that the freſcies and paſſages were kept, and the Neapolitanes armye great in the field, the french men preuailed not onely in the conqueſt of the realme, but alſo in the gettynge of that dyſeaſe, that for euer ſhal be a memory vnto theyr name. Horibus Gallicus

¶ In effect king ferrandino, ſeeyng his owne debilitee in reſpecte of Charles force, determined with pacience to ouercome his aduerſe fortune: and ſo with .vii. galeis departed out of the realme, and went into the ile of Procida, where he remained till he heard of the french kynges departure, and than beyng reuoked by the Neapolitanes, not onely Naples, but alſo diuers other citees theraboutes expulſed the frenchemen, and raiſed theyr owne kinges ſtandardes. 1496.

Upon this, Ferrandino ſent for ſuccours to the Venecians, offeryng theim Brunduſio, and .iii. other hauen townes in Puglia, to helpe hym to expell the Frenchemen out of the realme. Whyche offer was accepted, and

and Fraunceſco Gonzaga, Marques of Mantua, wyth an armie ſent thither: who together with the Neapolytane power, within the ſpace of one yere, dryue the frenchemen cleane awaye. Not longe after recouerye of his whole eſtate, Ferrandino (without iſſue) died of the flixe: Leauynge hys vncle Federike inheritoure to the realme.

¶ Note here, that within the ſpace of .xvi. monethes were .iiii. ſeuerall kynges of Naples, that is to wete, Ferdinando, Alphonſo, Ferrandino, and Charles.

Federike

¶ Finally Federike, brother to the laſt Alfonſe, ſucceded to the crowne, but er he had fully reigned .iiii. yeres bearyng of the French kynges comyng Lewis the .xii. and conſideryng him ſelfe deſtitute of money, fryendſhip, and abilitee to reſiſt, he ſold his armures and municion for .30000. ducates to the Duke Valentino Borgia, ſonne to the biſhop of Rome: and with the reſte of his treaſure and implementes, went into france, and there yelded bothe hym ſelfe and hys Realme into the Frenche kynges handes: who receyued hym, and appoincteynge hym an honourable prouiſion, kepte hym in Fraunce tyll he dyed. And thus ended the reygne of the houſe of Aragone in the realme of Naples.

Ende of the houſe of aragone in Naples. Lewys the .xii. of Fraunce.

And though vpon the ſurrender of this Federike (who many charge with cowardiſe for the vile ſubmitting of him ſelfe, without any proufe of force) the french kinge obteined the whole realme: yet he died, not lõg enioyng it, either by reaſon of the intollerable proud behauiour of the french gouernours, or els through the inconſtant nature of the Neapolitanes, Ferdinãdo king of Spaine (commonly called Il Re Catholico) coumforted ther-

1501.

vnto

vnto by many of the barons, and specially by the citesins of Naples, sent a puissaunt armie into the realme againste the frenchemen: Who within lesse than two yeres, partly by force and partly by treatie, were cleane expulsed: so that in fine, the realme rested wholly in peasable possession of the Spanishe kyng.

¶ Ferdinando the.v. of that name, kynge of Spayne, chasynge awaye the frenchemen, enioyed quietlye the realme of Naples vnto his death: and easilye recouered of the Venetians the foure portes of Puglia, that Ferrandino had geuen them. By reason that whan all the Christiã princes were entred into a league at Cambray againste the Venetians, they at that tyme made none offer of resistence, but rather consented vnto the rendering of them: like as in hope of peace they graunted vnto all the other princes what they would aske, Venice onelye excepted.

King Ferdinando of Spayne.

¶ Finally ferdinando deceasynge, Charles the.v. nowe emperour of Almaine (sonne and heyre of Philip duke of Burgoyne, and of Johan his wyfe, eldest daughter and heyre of the forenamed kyng ferdinando) succeded in the realme of Naples, and he did in al the other realmes and dominions that ferdinando had: and hytherto enioyeth the same.

Charles the v. Emperour 1515

¶ It is true, that the french kynge sente Mounser de Lautrech his general, with a puissaunte armie to conquere the realme. Where betwene the parties French and Spanish were done many worthy deedes of armes Naples it selfe was besieged by sea and land, vntil Andrea Doria, general of the french kynges army by sea, revolted from the french kyng to the seruice of the em-

1528

peroure. From whyche tyme the hope of the Frenche armies proſperites began to abate: & fortune ſo muche to goe againſt theim, that what through extreme plage, and through the hardineſſe of the Imperialles, that began to take courage, the frenchmen were conſtreigned to reiſe their affiege, Moũſer de Lautrech, wyth many other of the beſt Frenche capitaines beynge deade, ſome of the plage, & ſome of ẏ ſworde: ſo that of. 60000. which vnder the French ſtandarde came thither to the ſiege, eſcaped not fully. 2000. on lyue. From whyche tyme hitherwardes the emperour hath had no notable trouble there, ſauyng that now of late is begonne a litle ſtrieke betwene the Vicere Don Diego di Tolledo, and the barons of the realme, for the makynge of 1547. certaine lawes, and ſome bickering and ſlaughter hath hapned betwene the Spaniardes and theim, and many gentilmen are fled to Rome and other places for feare of punichmente. But becauſe the thing is not of ſuche importaunce as ſhould ſeme to moue warre, I ſhal not nede to make further reherſal.

The

Florence, an excellent faire citee, standeth at the foote of the Appenine hilles, in a lyttle valey named Arno of the riuer Arno, that renneth throughe it. Comynge to it (excepted by the riuer syde) the descendyng is such, that a man may easily behold euery part of the citee: without the which, downe along both sides of the valey are so manye fayre palaices & sumptuouse houses, that for the space of .viii. or .x. myles it seemeth in maner but one towne.

¶ The citee it selfe is esteemed to be .viii. myles in compasse, walled with square stone in maner as harde as flynte, and of a great heighte, with a number of goodly toures after the auncient buildyng, stronge enough to defende, but nothyng apte for artillerie to offend after the maner of these dates: For they were builded before the inuencion of gunnes. The circuit of the citee.

¶ Ouer the riuer within the citee are .iiii. verye fayre bridges of square stone, on the furtherest downe the riuer hath ben a litle marble image of Mars, which was set there by an astronomer about the first buildyng of the citee, in suche a conjunction of the celestial bodies, that it promised prosperitee to the citee allõg as that image should stand: threatnyng the decaye of the same, assoone as it were gone. And as I haue ben credibly enformed within lesse than these .xx. yeres, it fell, and is gone no man can tel howe. Shortlye where vpon the Emperours armye besyeged the Florentynes, and toke their Bridges.

Arno. libertee from theim.

The riuer Arno is not lightlie bigge, but ones a yere, whan the ſonne hath power to diſſolue the ſnow on the mountaines, it ſwelleth ſo, that it maye in maner be compared to Thames at London, ſauyng it ſerueth not for veſſel to come from the ſea: by reaſon of the ſwyfte ſtreame. Wherefore the Florentines are faine for the moſt part to fetche their merchandiſe that come by ſea, from Piſa. 40. miles of by lande.

Edifices Within the citee are many goodly temples and other edefices, amongeſt the which the cathedrall churche is an excellente faire buildynge. For the walles without are all couered with fine white and blacke marble, wõderfully wel wrought, and ouer the queere is an whole vault called Cupola, facioned like the halfe of an egge riſyng betwene. iii. ſtes and the body of the churche: ſo artificially made, that almoſt it ſemeth a miracle. For it is ſo hygh, that the pomell on the toppe beyng able to conteigne. vii. perſons, ſeemeth a verye ſmall thynge to theim that ſtande by lowe. And the compaſſe of it by the baſe, is aboute. 260. paces. Beſides that the flooze vnder this vaulte round about the quiere is laide with fine marble of diuers colours ſo faire, that it yeldeth a delite to theim that walke vpon it.

The ſteple ſtandyng beſides the churche, is likewiſe of fine marble a verie faire and ſquare tower, equall in height to the circute of the baſe, with diuers ſtoryes and thinges grauen in it, ſo artificial and coſtlye, that it deſerueth ſinguler prayſe.

The temple of. S. Iohn, called Il Batteſimo, is lykewiſe of fine marble both within and without, hauing a

number

number of goodlye pyllers and. iii. brasen gates verye sumptuouse and faire. Many other goodly churches there be, whiche should be to long here to reherse.

¶ The dukes palayce, with the place before it, representeth a verie stately and auncient maiestee. On the backeside therof, is the house, wherein the wilde beastes are kepte, as lions, tigers, beares, wolfes, apes, egles, gryppes, and suche other, wherof there be not fewe. Wylde beastes.

The. ii. principal houses of Strozzi and Medici seme rather the buildynges of princes than of priuate men. And generally the citesins houses for their beauty are worthy of much praise. Howbeit, they may make them good cheape, because they haue marble & stone plentye in the mountains there by, insomuch that al their stretes: which are verie faire, large and streight, are paued with flatte stone. But amongest all other they haue dyuers goodlye hospitalles, for relefue of the sicke and poore, and one very faire, so wel ordred, that it receiueth a great number of men and women, but into seuerall houses: where they are applied with good phisicke, and their beddes, their sheetes, and euerye other thynge so cleane, that many tymes right honest men and women be not ashamed to seke their health there. For that hospital alone may dispende yerely aboue. 20000. crownes: by reason whereof they haue excellente phisicyons, good pottaries, dilygente mynisters, and euery other thinge necessarie. Hospitalles.

¶ Finally there is a verie faire and strong castell, called Cittadella, more than a mile and halfe in compasse builded by the lasse duke Alexander, for a bridell to the Florentines, because he had thā newly taken their

liberties from theim: they beynge for the moste parte so variable and inconstãt, that the other Italians haue vsed to cal them Bizzari, which signifieth wylde headed.

¶ Thre myles without the citee, the Duke hath made a gardein at a little house that was hys fathers. Wherin is a laberinth or mase of bore sal of Cypre trees, hauinge in the middest one the fairest conduyte of white marble, that euer I sawe: besides that it hath dyuers other conduites, and such conueighances, that in maner euery flowre is serued with renning water; and all the chanels are of white marble so fayre, that it is in my iudgement at this presente, one of the excellentest thinges in all Europe.

¶ The Florentines customes.

The common opinion is, that the Florentines are commonly great talkers, coueitous, and spare of liuyng: but they be fine and clenly.

¶ In deede he that byeth at the shambles more meate than they maner there sheweth, is incontinentlye noted and spoken of. But for all the lacke that is layed to theim as a reproche, yet dide I never see it so scarce, that a reasonable man ought to finde faulte wythal. And if men generally in other places coulde folowe it, the riche shoulde liue more healthfullye: and the poore fynde more plentie.

I continued there a certaine space at mine owne charges, and lay a good while with Master Bartholomew Panciatico, one of the notablest citesins: where I neuer saw the fare so sklender, but any honest gentilman

would

woulde haue been ryghte well contented wythall. And yet I dare auowe, he exceded not the ordynarye. Beſydes that the fine ſeruice, the ſweeteneſſe of the houſes, the good order of all thynges, and the familiar conuerſacion of thoſe men, were enough to feede a man: yf wythoute meate men myghte be feede. I woulde not denie, but many of theim vſe much talke, which I thinke proceded of the deſyre they haue to ſeeme eloquent. For he is not reputed a man among them, that cannot plaie the Oratoure in his tale, as well in geſture as in woorde. And therfore I ſuppoſe they Academie was fyrſt ordeined: which is one of the goodlieſt orders that I haue ſeene.

The Academie.

¶ A certaine number of the chiefe of theim, being well learned, are drawen into a company, whereof the duke hym ſelfe is one. Theſe euerye holidaye at .iii. of the clocke at after noone, aſſemble in an halle appoincted, where one of them mounteth into a place called the Harange, a litteli hygher than the reſte, and in his owne mother tounge maketh an Oracion of an houre long, of what matter ſo euer he thinketh beſt him ſelfe. This Oratour hath warnyng ſo to doe by an officer a great ſpace before hys daye. For they chooſe euery halfe yeare a Conſull, who appoincteth a ſundrye man to the Harange for euery holydaye. And whan the houre of aſſemblie approcheth, the moſt parte of the companye repayre to the Conſull, and ſo bring hym honourablye to the place: where he ſitteth hygheſt, thoughe the Duke him ſelfe be preſent. And for my part I neuer heard reder in ſchole, nor preacher in pulpitte handle theim ſelfes better, than I haue heard ſome of theſe in the Harange.

The

Women. ¶The Florentines wyues are nothynge ſo gaye as the Venetians. For they loue a modeſtie in their womens apparaile: and ſpecially if ſhe paſſe the age of .xl. yeares ſhe weareth but plaine blacke clothe. And they kepe their maidens ſo ſtreict, that in maner no ſtraunger maye ſee them.

¶The common people are verie religious, and for the moſte part full of ſuperſtition: but they that are reckned wyſeſt, beleue muche wyth Plinie. And where they haue been much burdened with Sodomie in time paſt. I can not perceiue there is any ſuch thyng now.

¶Of the Dukes dompnion and reuenewe.

BEſydes Florence, the duke hath vnder his dompnion .vi. cities, Piſa, Volterra, Piſtoia, Arezza, Cortona, and Borgo, wyth dyuers other good townes, and the greateſt part of Tuſcane, and may diſpend better than .500000. crownes of yerely reuenewe the greateſt part wherof riſeth vpon the .x. that is paied hym of all the landes within his dominion.

Of

Onferryng the dyſcourſe of dyuers authours togethers, touchinge the Florentine hyſtoryes, and fyndyng the effectes of them al gathered in one by Nicolas Macchiauegli, a notable learned man, and ſecretarie of late daies to the common wealthe there: I determyned to take him for mine onely auctour in that behalfe,

It is manifeſt, that from the auncient citee of Fieſole (the olde rewynes whereof are yet to be ſeen, on the toppe of an hill two myles from Florence) the citee of Florence had hir beginnynge pryncipallye. For by reaſon Fieſole ſtode highe, and was paineful for merchantmen to bring theyr cariage vnto the citezins: kept their market on the ſide of the riuer Arno in the plaine where Florence now ſtandeth: & buildynge there ſhoppes for theyr wares, from ſhoppes they grew to houſes and from a fewe to many, ſo that at length it became a towne, which encreaſed much through certaine Colonies of the Romains ſent thither fyrſt by Sylla, and after by thoſe three Romaines, whiche after the death of Cæſar diuided the empire betwene them.

And albeit, that ſome haue contended vpon the name, affyrming, that it was fyrſt called Fluentia, and after corrupted Florentia: yet myne opinion agreyng with Macchiauegli, is, that from the beginnyng it was called Florentia. Vnder the romaine empyre, & about the beginning of themperours, it ſeemeth to take firſt name

and reputacyon. For whan the Empyre beganne to be afflicted of barbarouse nacions (as the Italyans call theim) than was Florence also destroied by Totila king of the east Gotes. 250. yeares after it was reedyfied by Charlemaine, and so continued as one of the principall citees of Italie, vnto the yere of our lord. 1215. alwayes as subiectes, fyrst to the succession of Charlemayne, after to Berengarii, & lastly to themperours of Almaine, by whyche tyme the Florentines coulde doo nothynge worthy of memorie, for the power of theim whose subiectes they were: Neuertheles in the yere. 1010. they toke Fiesole and destroied it vtterlye, either by the emperours consente, or els betwene the death of the one emperour and the election of the other.

Florence destroyed and reedifyed.

1010

¶ But whan the bishoppes of Rome beganne to growe great, and the emperour littel, moste parte of the citees of Italye ganne to gouerne theim selfes wyth smalle regarde towardes their prynce: so that in the tyme of the emperour Henry the. iii. all Italie was deuyded betwene hym and the Churche. Notwythstandynge the Florentines in all those troubles kept them selfes vnited togethers, and obeied the strongeste. Vntyll the yeare. 1215. But lyke as after long health sickneste is more perilouse, so the longer Florence forbare to folow the sectes of Italie, the more affliction they suffered, whan they fell to diuision amonge theim selfes. The first occasion wherof was.

¶ Amonges their noble familles were two principall, Bondelmonti, & Vberti, nere them were Amidei and Donati. In the familie of Donati was a ryche wydowe, that had a wonderfull faire doughter: whiche the

purposed

purposed to bestow on a yonge knyght, chefe of the famille of Bondelmonti. But he, not knowynge either the faire doughter or the wydowes purpose, was betrouthed to a maide of the house of Amidei. Wherwith the wydow was wonderfully offended. And thinkynge wyth the beautye of hir doughter to breake that mariage, on a day as the gentilman passed alone by hir doze, she called him, and hauing hir doughter with hir, sayd: I reioyse at your good mariage, notwithstanding I haue a great while kepte my doughter here for you. At whose beauty the gentilman being astonied, and considerynge hir dower should be greatter than the others, without respect to his trouth geuen, or to the inconueniences that might folow for the breache thereof, forthwith answered, that syns she had kept hir for hym he should be muche vnkynde to refuse hir, and so inconuenientlye maryed hir. Whiche iniurie the famille of Amidei, with helpe of the Vberti determined to reuenge. So waityng their tyme on Easter day in the morning at the foote of the bridge Ponte Vecchio as maister Bondelmonti was ridyng to churche, they slewe hym. Whereupon the whole citee was deuided in two parties, the one with Bondelmonti, and the other with Vberti. And because these two familyes had manye stronge houses and towers, specially in the countrei, they warred together many yeres with diuers fortunes. And although they neuer concluded a full peace, yet many times they toke truce: In whych estate Florence continued vntill the tyme of the emperour Federike the.ii. who beyng kynge of Naples, and at variaunce with the churche of Rome, to make hym

Diuision

selfe the stroger in Tuscane, toke part with the Vberti, by reason whereof the Abertine parte prenayled, and chased cleane out of the citee the Bondelmonti.

Guelfi and Ghibellines faction.

Here is to be noted, that in the comencion betwene the emperour and the bishop of Rome, the whole Italyan nacion was so diuided in two parts, that in many houses you shold haue the father against the sonne, brother against brother, and commonly one neighbour and one house agaynst an other. And to encrese the mischiefe, ii. brethern dowchemen dwelling in Pistoia (20. miles from Florence) fel out for this matter, and ofttimes mes openly fought in maintenaunce of their diuision.

Wherupon it folowed, that all the imperiall named theim selfes Ghibellini, after the name of Ghibelli, one of those brethern, and the church part Guelfi, after the name of Guelfe the other brother. So that the parte of Bondelmonti were Guelfi parte: and they that were wyth Vberti were Ghibellines. Betwene whom not onely the nobilitee of Florence, but also the moste parte of the commons were deuyded. Thus by the emperours fauoure the Guelfes were chased out of Florence, and lyued in theyr fortresses and castelles in the dale of Arno, defendyng them selfes as wel as they could against their ennemies, vntil Federike died: and than by meane of certayne of the citee that were newters, both parties were reconsiled, and the Ghibellines brought home to Florence. Where (lainge all suspycyon aparte) they framed theim selfes to procure a lybertee vnto their citee, ere the new Emperour shoulde hace power to oppresse them. And so deuyded the citee into. vi. partes, appointynge .xii. citizens (ii. vnto

Florentines omnium wealthe constituted

euery parte) to gouerne the same, naming them Antiani: chaungable euerye yeare. And to eschew occasion of variaunce, that myghte happen betwene the parties for iudgment geuing, they chose two straunge iudges, one named captaine of the people, & the other named Potestate, to iudge all matters both ciuile and criminall. And because there is no certaine order, where no defendour is, they ordeyned. 20. standardes or bandes in the citee: and. 76. in the countie, wherein were written all the youthe and able men to be readye in hys appointed kynde of armure whan so euer they should be called, either of the captaine, or of the Antiani. And the better to establishe the thynge, they deuised a carte drawen of two oxen, to cary their baners and ensignes couered with white: vnto whiche, as to the maiestee of their common wealthe, or as it were to the generall of their armie, the men of warre shoulde alwaies resorte. For whan soeuer they set forth any army into the field than was this carte or chariote drawen forthe into the strete called Marcato Nouo, and there by the people committed to the charge of the chiefe gouernours of the army. Besides that they had a bell called La Martinella, which before the settynge forthe of anye armye should rynge a moneth, to the intente their ennemyes myghte prepare to defende theim selues. This bell did they also cary into the fielde with theim, to set their watche, and to cal souldiours together.

Their procedynges herein were so commendable and so well handled, that in short space they grew to a wonderful auctoritee, so that Florence became the heade of all Tuscane: and had (no doubte of it) attained furthe

reputacion, that it myghte haue been well compared to the notable cities of the worlde, if the new and often diuisions within them selfes had not hindered theyr prosperytee.

¶ After this maner they endured .x. yeares, in whyche time they enforced the citesins of Pistoia Arezzo and Siena to entre in league wyth them: and in the retourne of theyr campe frō before Siena, they toke Volterra, and destroyed certaine other Castelles, the inhabitaunces whereof they caried with them to Florence. All this was dooen throughe counsaile of the guelfes, which were of greater power in Florence than the ghibellines, as wel because the ghibellines throughe theyr proude & ill gouernaunce had prouoked the hate of the people, whan they ruled in tyme of the emperoure Federike: as also because the commons fauoured more the churche part than the imperiall, trusting with the helpe therof to haue theyr libertee maynteined, whyche at the emperours handes they feared to lese.

¶ Wherfore the ghibellines, seeynge theyr reputacyon decaied, disposed thē selfes to recouer it, thinking their occasion to be good: wt an Manfredi sonne of Federike had taken the realme of Naples vpon him, and had sore troubled the churches power. Than practised they secretly with hym, to recouer theyr libertee. But their practises were discouered to the Antiani, who incontinently sent for the Vberti to appeare before them: and they not onely disobeied, but also fortified theim selfes in theyr houses, and so prouoked the furie of the people, that at laste the commons arose, and with helpe of the guelfes chased the ghibellines out of Florence, and cō-

ſtreigned theim to withdrawe to Siena. From whense they ſent to kyng Manfredi for ſuccours, and through the diligence of Maiſter Farinata delli Vberti obteined ſuch ayde, that the Guelfes ſhortly after were vyſcamfited vpon the riuer of Albia: with ſo great a loſſe, that they which eſcaped, fled not to Florence (thinking it to be loſt) but vnto Lucca. The generall of the kinges men in this iourney was one Conte Iordano, a man in armes muche renoumed, who folowyng his victory went ſtreight to Florence, and reduced it to the obedience of the kynge Manfredi, adnullyng al magiſtrates and lawes, with euery other thyng that ſemed to ſerue the cities libertee: the iniury wherof bredde double malice agaynſte the Ghibellines in the hertes of the commons, and was occaſion of theyr vndoing, as after ſhal appeare.

The Conte Iordano ſetlyng Florence after his owne faſion, was reuoked by the kynge to the ſeruice of the realme: and therfore appointed as lieutenaunte generall there, the Conte Guido Nouello, lord of Caſentino, who immediatelye called a counſaile of Ghibellines at Empoli, and there concluded, that (to maintaine theyr part in Tuſcane) it was neceſſary to deſtroy Florence: but Maiſter Farinata delli Vberti principal of the Ghibellines, onely amongeſt all the reſt withſtode this opinion, allegeyng the perilles that he had ſuffered were in hope to enioy his countrey, and thinkyng himſelfe no leſſe hable to defende it than to gette it, as he had doen, he profeſſed openly to become no leſſe enemy to theim that ſhould take the contrary, than he was already to the Guelfes: and ſo with his onelye reaſon and

auctozites dissuaded the reft from theyr purpose.
¶This meane while the Guelfes, whiche were fledde to Lucca, were commaunded thẽse by the citesins, who feared soze the thzetnynges of the Conte: and so wente to Bolognia, and from thense vnto Parma to helpe the Guelfes of Lombardie against the Ghibellines there. Where after dyuers victozies, they grewe to so muche wealth and reputacion, that the bishoppe of Rome toke theim as his, and gaue theim the ensigne of the church whyche they vse in Flozence to this daye.
¶Than iuent the Guelfes wyth Charles of Anglo against Manfredi, and were partetakers of the victozy, whyche soo muche encreased theyr reputacyon that the Conte, with the reste of the Ghibellines, that than ruled Flozence, deuised howe to gratify the commons, to gette theyr fauour (which before they had vtterly lost) and therfoze diuided the citee into artes, appointynge officers of the commons vnto euerye arte, so that in all there were 36, Citesins called to rule agayne, and to make newe lawes as before. And where the Conte with the Ghibellines thought by these meanes to drawe the peoples fauour towardes theim, the contrary immediately followed. For when the Conte Guido had set a tare vppon the people, for payment of hys souldyours, they not onely refused the paiement, but also withstode his forze and the Ghibellines bothe, in suche wyse, that with losse of dyuers men slayne in the bickerynge, the Conte with the Ghibellines (through cowardyse of the Conte) forsoke the citee, and went to Prato: and wylyng to retourne, was more easily kepte soothe, than he couldo haue been expelled, in case he had fortifyed hym

selfe whyle he was within. Thus the people recouered libertee vnto theyr cites, and (in hope to make all thynges well) reuoked aswell the Ghibellines agayne as the guelfes. But all in vaine, for the Ghibellines rested still in the auncient mortall hate of the Guelfes, for dyuers iniuries, and the people loued theim not, as ofte as they remembred theyr passed tyrannie, besides that the Ghibellines, whan they heard of the puissaunt comyng of Corradino out of Almaigne, to winne the realme of Naples, began to deuise how to recouer their astate againe. Wherfore the guelfes sent to the forenamed Charls thā king of Naples for helpe to defēd themselfes, whilest Corradino should passe. And vpō the compyng of ayde from the kynge, the Ghibellines .ii. dayes before fled. And so had the guelfes libertie to make new lawes and new magistrats, which they did immediatly: First deuidynge the Ghibellines goodes in .iii. partes one to the common wealth, another to the chiefe magistrates, & the .iii. to them selfes, in recompence of their owne hurtes. And the bysshoppe of Rome the better to maintaine Tuscane guelfe, made kyng Charles imperyall vicare of Tuscane.

¶ After this Gregorie the .x. passynge through florence towardes Fraunce, deuised with the guelfes for reconsiliacion of the ghibellines, and did so muche, that certayne men for the ghibelline parte came into the citee, and after longe communicacion agreed therupon. But because the thing tooke no effecte, therefore gregory excommunicated the citee. Whiche Innocente the .v. hys next successour alloyed agayne.

¶ Thus the Guelfes forgettynge theim selfes in theyr

prosperitee, became so proude, that they regarded neyther magistrate nor people, but for euery light occasion wouldo feight, and many tymes kyl without abidynge any iustice: which moued the people to murmoure, and gaue occasion to the bishop of Romes legate to practise the reuocacion of the Ghibellines vnder pretence of vnitee, and brought it to passe in deede: and than was there new orders of magistrates appointed, & the Ghibellins so united, that for verye werynesse of longe stryfe both abroade and at home, the names of diuision began to decaie, so that Ghibellines and Guelfes were almost forgotten, whan there began a newe diuision, betwene the nobilitee and the commons. In suche wyse that they armed them selfes, and had tried the matter wyth the swoorde, if certaine religiouse and other indifferent men had not taken vp the matter.

¶ In effecte the pride of the nobilitie was abated, and parte of the commons wyl bridled, so that they agreed agayne, and were quiet a whyle.

There were two notable families in Florence Cerchi and Donati, betwene whome had ben an olde grudge, but no fightynge of a longe tyme. In Pistoia also two ponge gentilmen Lore and Geri at playe fel oute and foughte: so that Lore harte Geri. The father of Lore beyng offended therwith, and thinking to pacifie the matter gentilly, sent his sonne to the father of Geri, to submitte hym selfe and aske forgeuenesse. But the father of Geri toke hym and carte of his hand, saiyng, that woundes were healed with yron, and not with woordes. This matter so grewe, that the whole citee of Pistoia was deuided in two parties, the one calling them

selfes

selfes Bianchi, that is to saye, the white, and the other Neri, that is to saye the blacke. After longe tryfe within them selfes being wearied, the blacke band went to Florence, and fell in fauour with the Donati: the like whereof did the white bandes with the Cerchi: so that the auncient grudge betwene those two familyes encreased, and at last vpon a lighte occasion fell oute and foughte in Florence. By reason whereof the whole citee aswell nobles as commons were deuyded, and oftentimes armed, so that the rulers (as newters) were faine to resigne their power, and partly by force, partly by auctoritee, causyng the parties to vnarme themselfes, they banished certaine of the chiefe, specially of the Neri: whiche beynge exiled, resorted to the bishoppe of Rome: and obteined of hym that Charles of Valois, brother to the French kynge (than beinge in Rome for certaine practises of the realme of Naples) shoulde be sente to Florence: by whose meane the Neri recouered the citee, and by force expulsed the Bianchi. And lyke as the Neri were first by the bishops meanes restored, so also the Bianchi, at the bishops intercession were receiued home, but not to rule: whiche greued them so muche, that vpon new contencion (their intent beynge discouered) they were vtterly expulsed.

¶ Thus Charles of Valois (atchiuyng his purpose in Florence) departed thense, leauynge the Neri in quyete possession. But it endured not longe: for Corso Donati, chiefe of that part (thinkyng his astate very small to remeigne as a priuate man, of the common wealth) moued businesse in the citee, in hope to haue al the rule hym selfe. Wherein he preuailed not, for the commons

sente for the Lucchese to succoure theym, and by theyr helpe did so ouermatche Corso and his partakers, that they remaigned still in their libertee: and procured a legate from Rome, to stablishe an order amongest them. Who in stede of order (thinking to bring certaine purposes to passe) sette theim further oute than euer they were, and departyng in greate anger excommunicated the citee.

Thus as the Florentines were dayly at stryfe and warre within them selfes, there chanced so great a fire that it burned .1300. of theyr houses: so that what through the wonderful bloudshed, and greate losse of the fire, for verye werynesse they layed downe their weapons, and though the legate had craftely gotten .xii. of the chiefe citezins to Rome, in whose absence he so comforted the Ghibellines and Bianchi (that than were in exile) that folowyng his aduise, they sodeinely entred the citee. Yet the commons so resisted them, that they were repulsed. Not longe after perceiuynge the purpose of Corso prepensed againste their libertee assaulted his house, put him to flyght: and in fleyng toke and slewe hym.

After that the Florentines lyued in quiet tyll the comming of Henry the emperour, who comyng from rome (where he was crowned) besieged Florence on the one side, and at length departed without doyng much hurt, the rather because the Florentines had receyued succours from Robert king of Naples, to whom they had submitted their citee for .v. yeres. 1308.

Not lōg after Vguicione della Faggiola, with helpe of the ghibellines, became lord of Pisa and of Lucca, so

that

that the Florentines for dread of hym, requyred kynge Robert of Naples to send his brother Peter to succour theim. Betwene whom and Vguicione was a battaile stricken in Vale di Nieuole, where the florentines were discomfyted, lost .2000. men, and the kinges brother slaine in the fielde.

¶ And though the kynge did his beste to succour them, yet of their naturall inconstancie, they beganne a new diuision amonge theim selfes, parte with and parte against the kynge. And for lacke of other the kynges aduersaries gatte one Lando d'Agobio to be theyr capitaine, who with the multitude folowing him, wold kyl and murder as he wente by the stretes suche as the people appointed: so that the citee was no lesse afflicted with bloudshedde within, than scourched wythoute by Vguicione, that euen than ouerranne al the countrey aboute.

¶ Not longe after Castruccio Castracani, a citezin of Lucca, gatte the dominion of Lucca and of Pisa, & became so great, that he was made chief capitain of al the ghibellines in Tuscane, so that folowyng his good fortune, he attempted to get Prato, whiche the florentines prepared theym selfes to defende, so makynge oute an armie, and promisyng reconsilemente to their banished mē, Castruccio retired to Lucca: wherof folowed two inconuenientes: one, the commons and rulers were deuided, for the people wouldе haue pursued the enemye, but the rulers wolde not: the other, by reason their enterprise toke small effecte, they refused their promyse concernyng their banished men, who therefore dyuers tymes attempted by force, to haue their promise kepte.

Finally makyng out a new army againſt Caſtruccio vnder the leadynge of Raimondo da Cardona, the florentines a little beſides Alto Paſſo were diſcomfi-ted, and Raimondo ſlayne: in ſuche wyſe that the Florentines were no more able to holde vp their heades, but ſuffered Caſtruccio to ouerronne al their countrey ſpoilynge and burnyng what he wolde. Wherfore the florentines were faine to ſue to king Robert of Naples for helpe: who enforced them to take his ſonne charles, Duke of Calabria, to be their lorde and conſequentlye ſent the duke of Athens, as his lieutenaunt to gouerne the citee, vntil the comyng of Charles.

1326. And like as the coming of charles was a ſtay againſt Caſtruccio: euen ſo it was in maner as paineful to the citeſins. For within leſſe than a yere, he leuyed of the citee, 400000. florines, notwithſtanding he had couenãted before, not to take of them aboue. 200000. beſides that, after they had gotte Piſtoia, Caſtruccio laied ſiege therunto, ſo longe, that at laſt he gatte it from the florentines: how be it, he immediatelye therupon died, and about the ſame tyme, the forenamed Charles, lord of florence dyed alſo. So that the citee was at ones deliuered bothe of the tyranne (as they call hym) and of the enemy: and therupon recouerynge their liberte, thei returned to a new order of their common wealth. Not long after the emperour returnyng from Rome, and paſſynge towardes Lumbardie. 800. horſemen of his retinue taried behind him, and ſodainly take Lucca which they offred to ſell to the florentines for. 20000. florines, and beyng refuſed, ſolde it to a Genowaye for 30000. pound, wherewith the florentynes were ſo of-

fended

fended, that they made open warre to gette it, but al in vaine, though they spent yet a greate quantitee of money more than the summe that quietly they might haue had it for.

¶ As for the ciuile contencion within the citee hapned none frō the death of Castruccio, vntil the yere. 1340. 1328

¶ Certaine of the chiefe of the citee, the better to maintein their owne auctoritee, called straungers to gouerne some offices, which appertained to the electiō of the commons. Amongest al other one Iacomo Gabrieli da Gobbi was made captaine of a warde, and dyd diuers iniuries, namelye to some of the nobilitee, as to Pietro Bardi, and Bardo Frescobaldi. So that they (not wel supportyng the wrong, specially at a straungers hande,) conspyred with dyuers other againste the rulers: mindyng not onelye to be reuenged, but also to reforme the estate of the whole citee. And as it hapneth most commonly, the deferrynge of the matter was occasion, that some fearefull conspiratour disclosed it: so that the larme bel beinge ronge, and the people armed assemblinge in the markette place, the houses of Bardi and Frescobaldi were assaulted in such wise, that they (with the most part of their friendes (forsoke the citee, and were banished: some that remayned were taken and beheaded.

¶ Not longe after the florentines and Pisani practised with Mastino della Scala for the purchase of Lucca, that than was in his possession, so that the Pisani (seing their bargaine ouerdeere through the offers of the florentines) disposed them selfes, with helpe of Visconti than lorde of Millayne, to get it by force, and so layed

siege

affate and title to the dominion, departed wyth bagge and baggage. Wherupon not only Florence but also Arezzo, Volterra, Piſtoia, and other cities theraboutes toke on them theyr libertees though they within ſhort ſpace after, yelded to Florence theyr wonted obedyence. Than the citizins deuiſed a new order in their common wealth, wherin the nobles had ſo great auctoritee, that they vſed theyr lybertee in all thynges ouer the people: but that endured not longe: for the people rebelled, and by force depryued theim, erectyng magyſtrates of theim ſelfes. And thoughe the nobles openlye practiſed with theyr frendes abroade for ſuccours, and fortifyed theyr houſes withinforth, in ſuche wyſe, that Florence was ful of armes: wherupon they attempted to recouer theyr affate. Yet at length after manye ſkyrmiſhes, much bloudſhed, and fyre, the people preuailed, and brought the nobilitee ſo low, that they neuer durſte arme theim ſelfes more, but became in maner vile and abiecte: ſo that from that tyme forth Florence decayed both in courteſie and chyualrie. Nobilitee ſuppreſſed.

¶ Thus they reſted in quyete, tyll the yeare. 1353. In whiche tyme happened that notable plague, that John Boccaccio ſo pitifully mencioneth in the beginning of his Decamerone, thoroughe whyche dyed in Florence. 96000. perſones. And thoughe the nobilitee was than oppreſſed, yet fortune wanted not meane to reyſe new diſcencion amongeſt them agayne.

¶ Two families in Florence, Albizi and Ricci, fell at variaunce, betwene whom the whole citee was ſo deuided, than it was firſte betwene Bondelmonti and Vberti: or betwene Donati and Cerchi. And were

as long before this time the names of Guelfe and Ghibelline was in maner extincted and forgotten, Vguiçi one de Ricci (thynkyng to abate the reputacion of the Albizi) renued the olde law, that no Ghibelline shold enioye magistrate within the citee. But the purpose of Ricci was cleane disapointed. For where he thought to proue the Albizi to be Ghibellines, they cõtrarywise not onely proued them selues Guelfes, but chiefe of the guelfes: and became so great in the citie, that at length they determined to vsurpe the dominion, which beynge discouered to the people, was occasion, that their houses were sacked, and some burned, and they for the most parte fledde: and those lawes, that the Guelfes had made before in preiudice of the other citesins, were reuoked. So that those which were noted for Ghibellines, finding them selfes recouered in credite, not contented to be partetakers, but rather desirynge to rule their whole commen wealth, practised a newe meane, howe by force they myghte atchieue their enterprise: and persuadyng the multitude to rebell against the lordes, they did so muche, that (notwithstandyng the conspiracy was discouered before) yet the people so assembled out of all order, rennynge vp and downe here and there, spoilyng and burnyng, where as liked them best, that the power of the rulers coulde not reforme the matter, & at length it grew to so great inconuenience, that the lordes were cõstreigned not onely to habandone the palaice, but also the whole dominiõ vnto the people's fury, so that Michel di Lando a carder of woull, bare legged and all to torne, mounted vppe in to the hall of the palaice, with the standarde in his hand, and findyng

no man

no man there, tourned him towardes the people: Now you see this palayce, with the whole citee your commaundement, what would you doe, whereunto the multitude aunswered, they wolde haue hym theyr Gonfalonere and lord: whyche incontinentlye he toke vpon him: and disposyng him selfe to quiet the rumour to finde the people occupied, he sente theim straigyte to seke one Muto, that had been minister of iustice before: whom he caused to be hãged by the legge in the market place, and there torne to peeces: and consequentelye proceded the other reformacions and lawes, as it semed best to hym. But because the commons perceyued, that he preferred the chiefe men to dignytees & offices, and dyd not so much regarde the commons as they lo-ked for, they rebelled againe againſt him, & drewe them together to the churche of Santa Maria di Nouella, where they began to erecte newe officers, and to make newe lawes after their owne maner. The meane while Michel makyng him selfe stronge, departed oute of the palayce to mete theym: but missyng one another by a wronge waye, Michell at his retourne found theym in the byghe streete: assaultyng of the palayce. Where he sette on theim, and so discomfited them, that part he constreigned to flee out of the citee, and part to caste a-waye their weapons. And (notwithstandyng hys vile birthe) he was a man him selfe of a ryght good nature, wise, and able to gouerne, yet coulde not his auctoritee so much bridel the communaltee, but that they deuided theim selfes in partes, the one of men of estimacyon, whyche called theim selfes the people, and the other of the meane crafts, whiche called theim selfes the com-

as they lined fighting and brauling togethers
newes came to the counsayle, that Giannozo da Salerno (a capitaine of Charles of Duras, than bente to conquere Naples) lyng at Bologne, determined, with helpe of the banished men, to assaulte the citee beynge promysed by theim of the citee to haue a gate deliuered vnto them. Wherupon diuers were accused, amongest whome Piero, the chiefe of the Albizi was taken and put to execution, and Charles Strozi fledde.

The Florentines the better to maintaine theim selfes, reteigned John Sharpe (surnamed Acuto by them) an englisch capitaine, than abidyng in Italie with a great retinewe, whose reputacion was suche, that well was that prince in Italie, that myghte haue hys seruice in tyme of neede. For his power was so great, that whan he was oute of wages, he woulde take one citee or an other, and vse it as his owne for the tyme, till occasyon of seruice happened againe, and than wolde he sell it to that prince or common wealthe, that wolde geue moste for it.

John sharpe

About this time two the chiefest citesins in Florence, George Scali & Thomas Strozzi, with their authorities and credits amongest the people, dyd what they wolde right or wronge, so that whan the capitayne of iustice wolde haue put to execucion a certaine offender their friende, they by force assaulted and sacked the capitaines palaice, and deliuered the giltie: whyche acte offended not the capitaine alonelie, but also the magistrates, so that George Scali was therefore taken, and against the commō opinion (notwithstanding the great fauour of the people, whyche euermore prouyth inconstante)

Common people.

Kante) was beheaded: and diuers of his deerest frendes with hym. Upon occasion of whose death moste parte of the citee was armed to strengthe the iustice. But whan he was deade, they were not so soone vnarmed againe. For the partyes betwene the people of reputacion & the commõs did so kendle, that for the space of a whole yeare, there was daylye fightynge betwene them: in suche wyse that at lengthe by agreemente of both partes, the Guelfes were reconsyled and restored to their wonted honour and rule ouer the citee, and the other magistrates and rulers were deposed, amongest whom Michel Lando before named, was one, whose vertues and merites (beynge so notable as they were) could not yet saue hym from the peoples fury. 1381

Thus the Guelfes being in auctorite, and fearyng no man but Benedetto d'Alberti (a good man, riche, & of great auctorite) because he was not of their secte, they found the meane to banish hym, and diuers others that they thoughte contrarye to them, and so setled the common wealth after their maner, and kepte it in quyet til the yere, 1387. At whiche time Giangaleazo Visconti, Duke of Millaine toke hys vncle Bernabo prysoner, and made sharpe warres to the florentines, so that (notwithstandyng their valiaunte resistence) gettyng all the countreis aboute, as Bologna, Pisa, Perugia, and Siena, he was in so greate towardnesse to wynne Florence, that he caused a crowne of golde to be made, to the intent to crowne him selfe there kyng of Italye, and had done it in dede, if death had not preuẽted him. 1390

Not long after the commons vpon light occasion, rebelled of new, & in greate noumber ranne to the house

of Veri di Medici, offeryng hym the rule of the affaire: but he leadyng them with hym to the high ſtreete, and leauing them there, aſcended into the palaice amongeſt the lordes, excuſyng him ſelfe, that the people made him to come by force, and ſo with thankes of them returned to the people, and perſuaded them, that they ſhold haue theyr willes, ſo that they would laye downe theyr weapons. Whyche at his requeſt they dyd. Immediately wherupon the rulers ſecretelye armed theyr power, and eſtabliſhynge the order of the citee, put dyuers of thoſe commons to death, that had been cauſers of this diſorder.

Not long after certaine of them that were baniſhed, beyng at Bologna, determined vppon hope of the peoples inconſtancy, to attempt the recouery of their countrey, and to alter the affaire of theyr citee, and ſo thoroughe the coumforte of one Piggiello, and of Barroccio Cauicciuli, than dwellynge in Florence, ſecretly they entred the towne, and ſlew one or two: to the rumoure wherof the people beyng aſſembled, they declared how theyr compynge was to deliuer theyr countrey from the tirannie of them that ruled. &c. But for all that, there was none that woulde aſſiſte them. Wherefore they withdrew into a churche, and there ſome in the taking were ſlaine, and the reſt taken, examyned and put to execution.

Beſides this the Duke of Myllaine, whileſt he warred with ỹ citee, practiſed ſecretly by meane of the baniſhed men, to winne it, but the thing being diſcouered was occaſion of the baniſhement of a nomber of citezins, and than within two yeres died Giangaleazzo, af-

1400

ter he

ter he had warred with the Florentines.xii. yeares. So that the Florentines beinge peaced outewardlye, and indifferent quiete within theim selfes, made oute theyr power against Pisa, and valiauntly gatte it. 1405.

Than had they warre with Ladislaus kynge of Naples about the citee of Cortona, whyche the Florentines had before purchased. And that warre was so perillouse, that (as most writers affyrme) they procured a phisicion of the kynges to poyson hym. By reason of whose death, thei recouered hert, being before in maner desperat of the affate of theyr common wealth: because the king hauing already taken Rome, Siena, la Marca, & Romagnia, wanted no more but Florence onely to make his full waye into Lumbardye. Wherfe he determyned with hys power to prone hys fortune. So that the death of these two princes, the Duke of Mylayne and the kynge of Naples, was more auailable to the Florentynes, than theyr owne force. But they (whose nature could not wel beare any reft) lyued not fully .viii. yeares in peace, but that not onelye the parties within them selfes renued theyr wōted contencion againe, but also the citee attempted warre against Philip, than Duke of Mylaine: in whiche warre theyr armie at Zagonara was discomfited, and consequently al theyr holdes in Romagnia loft, Caftracaro & Modigliana excepted. Wherupon they made fuite to the Venetians, & obteined them in leage againfte the duke. By whose meane at lengthe they recouered their townes in Romagnia: notwithftāding the charges of that warre had ben so great (amountinge to the fūme of three millions and, 500000. duckates) and that the Florentines 1414

tine affate) he so coldely proceded, that whan it came to passe, that he myghte haue streigned Lucca, he neuerthelesse was occasion of peace betwene the Florentines and the Lucchese, in such wyse that Lucca styl remay- 1438.
ned in theyr libertee.

¶ Not longe after folowed the counsaile of Florence: at whiche the emperoure of Greece, with the chiefe of the Greekishe churche assembled, and agreed with the Romayne churche, though they stode not by it longe.

¶ Than arose Nicolo Piccinino, and wythout any iust grounde moued warre to the Florentines, wherein he dyd theim no small displeasures. But finally he was discomfited at Anghiari: and immediatelye after the Conte di Poppi (who before had assysted Piccinino) was besieged in his owne towne: and his whole affate, with the towne of Poppi taken from hym by the Florentines.

¶ And though the warre, whiche Piccinino made, was as well against the churche as the Florentines, so that the bishop of Rome, of the victory of Anghiari, enioyed as well his parte as the Florentines: yet the charge before, and the cost that the bishop was at in pursuing the victorye, was suche, that for verye neede of money: he solde Borgo san Sepolchro, vnto the Florentines for 25000. duckates. All this whyle were the Florentines in league with the Venetians against the duke of Myllaine, in suche wyse that the better to dysburdeine his owne charge, the duke steered kyng Alfonse of Naples against the Florentines, who entred vpõ Tuscane and did theim much hurt, though at last laiyng siege to the towne of Piombino) through sickenesse that fell in

his army) he was constreigned to remoue his siege, and vtterly to habandone hys enterpryse. But after Duke phillip of Millaine was deade, and Francesco Sforza in possession of the astate, the Florentines (by meane of Cosmo di Medici) did enter in amitee wyth hym: for whiche occasion, whan the Venetians were oute wyth Francesco, they procured kynge Alfonse to warre of new on the Florentines, whyche warre was not so sharpe, but that the Florentines at lengthe dyd passe it ouer without any great losse.

1464. Cosmo di Medici.

Than died Cosmo di Medici, whan he had gouerned the citee aboute .31. yeares. He in his tyme was one of the notablest men of the worlde, the ritheste private man that hathe bene hearde of many yeares, and so lyberall wythall, that he relieued a number of his citesins, not onely with lone, but also with the gift of large summes of money: and many times he wolde him selfe consider who had neede, and helpe them vndesired. His wysedome was suche (and was vnlearned) that he ruled the vnrulliest citee of the worlde in peace withoute ciuile sedition, which before his time was neuer in quyete. And though he might haue taken on him selfe the absolute power without difficultee, beyng in such auctoryte, yet ledde he stil a private life: nor for all hys greate richesse, neuer sought other mariage for his doughters than amongest his owne citesins. He builded .v. princely houses, one within the cite, and .iiii. without, besides .iiii. monasteries. .ii. churches, and dyuers chappelles, so that he that wil consideryth his doynges, shall iudge them rather mightie kynges than citesins.

Finally his factions were suche in Venice, in Naples,

in Rome

In Rome, and in other chiefe cities of traffique, that whan he was so disposed, he wolde make them all bare of money, so that with his only reputacion many times he wrought suche quyetnesse and commoditee to his citee, that all the florentine powet was not able to doe. ¶ The rule that he bare was not grounded on force or tirannie, but upon such a loue to the people, that whan he died, the commons bewailed hym as a father of the countrey. The proofe whereof was well seen, what time throughe the yll procurement of Diotisalui (one that he helde as his dere and secrete friende) a conspyracie was made against his sonne Peter.

¶ Whan the olde Duke francesco Sforza was deade, and his sonne Galeazo stablished in the astate, the ambassadours of Millaine came to the florentines for confirmacion of their former amitee, which Peter the sone of Cosmo, persuaded, was necessary to be maintcigned In debatynge of whiche matter Peter began to perceiue the intent of his aduersaries, and at length fully ascertained thereof he wrought so, that all the citee armed theim selfes in his fauour, in such wise that beyng very weake of bodie, and sicke on hys bedde, the chyefe magistrates of the citee were faine to resorte to hym, and to offer theim selfes at his pleasure. Wherupon it folowed, that the principall of hys ennemyes were some banished and some slaine, & his reputacion suche, that (though he ruled not in office him selfe) yet might he at all times commaunde and doe what he wold, and folowyng alwaies the steppes of his father in the same reputacyon dyed.

¶ After whose death Italye happened to be deuyded,

the palaice with certaine men with him, prinkly armed in hope that whan the rumour shoulde ryse he myghte haue not onely the palaice but also all the chiefe rulers of the citee in his handes: but his purpose beyng espyed er he could atchieue it, he with certaine of his complyces were immediately hanged and throwen out at the wyndowes of the palayce. This foule ende had theyr cursed conspiracie: for whan Julian was slayne, and Laurence returned to his house, it was a wonder to see howe soone the people were armed, rennyge by and downe the stretes, and cryng, Medici Medici, killing and drawyng as many as they could know of the contrarye parte. And almoste there was no citezin of anye reputacion, that came not vnto the house of Laurence, to offer him selfe and his goodes to succour him, in case he neded.

¶ Finallye the tumulte beynge quyeted, as manye as coulde be founde of the Saluiati and Pazi, and of the other conspiratours, were put to execucion: and the rest that fledde, were banyshed.

¶ But for all this theyr trouble ceased not. For whan the byshop of Rome sawe that this prynte treason toke not effect in alteracion of the astate, he attempted openly the destructiõ of the citee, not vnder pretence of hate to the Florentines, but to the house of Medici onely. First he excõmunicated the citee, & after sent an armye of hys owne agaynst them, and procured the kynge of Naples to inuade them with an other army: protestyng alwaies, that he desired no more, but to haue Laurence Dei Medici in his handes: whych done, he offered to be at peace. Wherfore Laurence, to be the better assured

Venetians al theyr dominion in Lumbardy: so that Italie was full of warre, vntill by procurement of the kynge of Spaines ambassadours, a general peace thorough all the estates of Italie was concluded (the Genowaies excepted.) By meane wherof the Florentines with theyr more ease warred vpon the Genowaies, and gat Pietra Santa, with other townes from theim, and gaue them a notable discoumfiture besides Serezana. 1486

¶ Finally the most renoumed priuate man of his time Laurence D' i Medici died, leauyng one of his sonnes a Cardinal (who was called therunto beyng not fully 13 yeres old) and his eldest sonne Peter in great reputacion, and his doughters also very wel maryed. Laurence d' i Medici

¶ He fauoured cunnyng men, specially them that were learned: he was eloquent in reasonynge, quicke of inuencion, wise in determining, and hardy in doing. Besides the conspiracy wrought against hym, whan hys brother was slayne, he was twyse in perill of death by treason, and yet preuented theim both to the confusion of the conspiratours. All the princes of Italy honoured hym, the kyng Mathew of Hungary shewed hym great signes of loue, the Soldan of Aegypte sente hym presentes & ambassadours, the Turke deliuered Bernardo Bandini, that slewe his brother Iulian, into his handes: and his owne citesins so much loued him, that I thynke of his tyme died no man happier than he.

Contrarywise his sõne Peter di Medici, who notwithstandyng his gentle interteigment of al men at the beginning (whiche made the worlde to hope well of hym) did at length proue so ambicious, so wilfull and so vndiscrete in his procedynges, that neither the magistra-

tes, the

name were receiued and made partetakers of the common wealth: whiche by little and little so encreased againe, that in the tyme of bishop Clemente the.vii. who also was of the Medici, when the duke of Burbon passed by Florence to Romewardes, the commons of the citee made a commocion against Hippolito di Medici then gouernoure of the same: he than beynge departed out of the citee in company of the Cardinal of Corrona, to goe visite the duke Urbine. But assoone as he retourned, he did so much, that they yelded theim selfes agayne vnto him, vpon couenant he should hurt no man for that matter.

Than bishop Clement made this Hippolito a Cardinall, whervpon he left the admynystracion of the common wealth, and so was the citee at libertee agayne.

But Clement beyng determined to make it perpetuall subiecte to hys owne familie, handled hym selfe so well towardes the emperour at his coronacion at Bologne that he obteigned the imperiall power to the oppression of his owne naturall countrey, and brought to passe, that the prince of Orenge, with the Emperours armye besieged Florence.

This siege, endured a whole yere, which for the many enterprises and battailes foughte on bothe partes, may be compared to the best Traiane, Greekish or Romaine warres, namely because the common wealth alone, without helpe or any other prince or state, sustteigned the violence of two so mighty powers as the emperours and the bishops of Rome, vntill famyne and not force ouercame them.

Finally the prince of Orenge, and dyuers other no-

table capitaines beyng slaine in the often battailes and skyrmisshes, at last the Florentines for lacke of victailles, were faine to fall to composicion, and yelded vpon these condicions, that the citee shold continew in hir libertee, referryng the reformacion of thestate to the emperour, who within the terme of.iiii. monethes shoulde therupon declare his pleasure. That all banyshed men should be reconciled without remembraunce of any iniurie before passed. That the Medici should be restored to theyr goodes taken from them by violence of the magistrates. That the citee shoulde paye. 80000. crownes to the dispatche of the armie, with other couenauntes of lesse moment. Upon whyche accorde Bartholomew Valori, commissary for the bishop of rome, entred with dyuers of the imperial capitains, and there behaued theim selfes so stoutely, that (notwithstanding the couenauntes of peace) they found the meane wythin lesse than a moneth to behead, vi. of the chiefest citesins, and to confine. 150. besides a noumber of others that habandoned and fledde the citee of them selfes: so that theyr promysed libertee was tourned into a moste cruel seruitude.

Shortely after came Alexander Di Medici, nephewe to bishop Clement, sente by the emperour out of flaunders, who at his first coming made a shew of sobrietee, in goyng priuately vnto his house, and receiuing the citesins amiable: but yet at length by little and lytle he vsurped the offices and magistrates, and finally dyspossed theim all at his pleasure, causyng him selfe openlye

1532 to be called duke.

1534. Than died Clement the Bishop, wherupon the Cardinalles

kinsmen Di Medici and Saluiati, with the principal of the other banished Florentines (couetyng the recouery of their cities libertee) sent ambassadours to the emperour, beseechyng hym to consider the tyrannye of Duke Alexander (who thā newly had builded the Cittadella) and to regarde the condicions of peace. Whyche ambassadours arriued at Barcelona ere as the emperour was takyng shippe towardes the enterprise of Tunise: so that being returned to Rome, the Cardinall Hippolito di Medici opposed hym selfe to goe vnto Tunise therfore. And takyng his iourney towardes Naples died at Itri by the way: poysoned (as the voyce went) to procurement of Duke Alexander.

¶ This duke Alexander was yet but ponge, who by bishop Clements procuremēt had maried the emperours bastarde doughter, he was so leude, that without anye respecte he wolde haue hys wyll in all thynges, and namelye in feates of loue and chaunge of women was his speciall delite. And amongest all other he delyted more in the company of Laurēce di Medici (that shold succede him in the astate) than of any other man. But Laurence in steede of that loue hated the duke, and had long time determined to slea him, whan he might finde occasiō, whether he did it in hope the rather to atteigne to the dompnion hym selfe, or to restore to the cites his auncient lybertee, be diuers opinyons.

¶ In effecte without makyng any man priuie to his entent, other than a seruant of his awne, the duke beyng on a nyght all alone in Laurences house, and sleppyng on a bedde, Laurence and his man slew him: and therupon counsaillyng with certayne of his friendes, and

ſeeyng no man diſpoſed to ſtand with him in purſuing of his purpoſe, the ſelfe ſame nighte he fledde, and went ſtraight to Venice, where in companye of the Strozzi he liued, till of late certaine perſõs, in hope of the Taglia (a reward proclaimed for the kylling of notable offenders) he was alſo ſlayne.

¶ Immediately vppon knowlage of the death of Duke Alexander, the three Florentine Cardinalles, that were than in rome, departed thence, and makyng all the men they coulde by the waye, came with an armye towarde Florence. Wherfore the Medici, with their frendes in Florence (to make their party good, that the baniſhed men ſhoulde not preuayle to their deſtruction) elected Coſmo di Medici to their duke, a yonge man of .20. yeres of age, whoſe father Iohn Di Medici had bene a man righte valiaunt in armes. And therupon ſente to the Cardinalles, praiynge them to ſtaie their armye by the way, and to come them ſelfes priuately to Florence, where they ſhould fynde ſo much reaſon offered them, that they ſhoulde neede to vſe no force. So they ſtayed their power beſides Cortona, and beynge come to Florence were entreated with ſo faire promiſes, that they licenced their men to departe. By reaſon wherof the Duke that now is, with his frendes had time to make theim ſelfes ſtrong, and than wolde conſent to nothing that the Cardynalles loked for: ſo that with a playne mocke they departed, lamentyng their folie: that they had chaunged the ſureteé of their force, for the vnſureteé of fayre wordes.

1538. ¶ This chaunge in Florence, and the mocke that the Cardinalles receiued, ſo much encreaſed their malyce,

that

that they with the helpe of Phillip Strozzi and Bartholomewe Valori, assembled & waged the number of 4000. men: which by Peter Strozzi (that yet lyueth and serueth the Frenche kynge) shoulde haue be conducted to Monte Murlo, and from thense to Florence, had not Phillip and Bartholomew (who with a smalle company came before to Monte Murlo) ben set vpon by Alexander Vitelli, taken and led awaye prisoners to Florence, where the whole conspiracy of those confederates, that were in the towne was discouered, and diuers taken and put to execution: and so the whole enterprise broken and destroyed. Amongest the rest only Phillip Strozzi was preserued from deathe: notwythstanding he was kept in prison in the Cittadella, and there dyed. Some saye he killed him selfe rather than he wolde vndoe his children by paynge the raunsome that was required of him, beynge in deede one of the richest priuate men that was in his time, as it doth well appeare by the wealth of his sonne Peter, and of his other children, which beyng banished men, and hauing nothyng in their owne countrey, doe neuertheless liue abroade in so muche reputacion, that fewe brethern of christendome vnder the degree of princes doe the like. Cittadella

I haue spoken before of Cittadella buylded by duke Alexander for the more suretee of his dominion, which at his death remaygned in the keppynge of one of the Dukes capitaines. But assoone as Alexander Vitelli (one that had serued well the emperour in his warres) hearde of the Dukes death, he came to Florence and entred into the Castell to speake wyth the cappytayne, where he handled the matter so well, that he excluded

the capitayne and kepte it hym selfe. And thoughe he made many faire promises to duke Cosmo, yet at lēgth he delyuered it to the emperour: who therfore rewarded hym with fayre possessions in the realme of Naples.

¶ This duke Cosmo sued firste to marrie with the wife of Duke Alexander the Emperours doughter, but the bishop of Rome that nowe is, purchaced hir (to his no small coste) for his sonnes sonne, Duke Octauio. For the whyche there hath ben mortal hate betwene Duke Cosmo and the bysshop. And beyng thus preuented, the duke to obteigne the more fauy towardes the emperour maried the doughter of Don Diego di Tolledo, Vice Re of Naples, by whose meane he hathe redeemed the Cittadella of the emperour for the summe of 400000 duckates, and is nowe absolute lorde and kynge within hym selfe.

¶ He hath diuers faire children by his wyfe, and loueth hir so wel, that in maner he neuer goeth abrode (vnlesse it be to church) without hir; and is reputed to be a very chaste man. He is learned and wyse, he vseth fewe wordes, and is neuertheleffe in hys owne tounge eloquente. In the administracion of iustice he is so syncere, that syns the tyme of his reigne, whyche is nowe aboue.x. yeres, I haue not hearde, that he hathe pardoned any person condemned to dye. He hath restreigned the Vice of Sodome (which heretofore reigned more in Florence than elswhere in Italy) with payne of death: and hath broughte hys astate to suche quyetnesse, as it hath not ben this.300. yeres past: so that Florence may wel saye, that in hym she hath founde hir longe desired libertee. For though he absolutely hath the whole reue-

newes

newes to his owne vse, yet the suretes that the Florentynes haue in their owne thynges (whyche heretofore they neuer had) is muche more worthe to theim, than the common reuenew was beneficiall to the cites.

¶ Finally the vertue of this Duke Cosmo, besides the worthinesse of his dominion, hath brought hym in suche reputacion, that he is numbred as one of the rarest prynces of our tyme, and feared also, as one in whom there be hydde thynges of greater moment than the rule of that onely estate.

¶ The state of Genoa.

Genoa standeth in maner betwene the Alpes and Appenine hylles, and hath hys prospecte towarde the south. For it hangeth so on the sea vnderneth a man may almost discerne euery part of the cittee. It hathe no playne countrey neere it, but on the one side hilles and mountaines and the sea Mediterraneum on the other. And yet those hilles that renne alonge the sea coostes, bryngе forthe many kyndes of pleasaunt fruite, with much wyne and oyle, for the mosse parte not thorough the fertilytee of the ground, but thorough the inhabitauntes peinefull dyligence.

¶ The circuite of Genoa is little lesse than. v. myles, the walles about are very newe, fayre and stronge: specially the. ii. gates Di San Thomaso and del L'arco are so large, that they seeme almost. ii. fortresses.

¶ The hauen that cometh into it, is exceedyng fayre and bigge enough to receiue any naule, beyng forced somewhat narowe at the mouthe, with a wonderfull costely piere of stone made out into the sea: at the ende wherof is a stronge toure, called Il Mole: wherby the hauen is defended from all wyndes, the southweast excepted.

¶ Within this hauen they haue an Arsenale, hable to receiue. xviii. or. xx. galleys.

¶ Their churches are very fayre and sumptuouse, specially the Cathedrall churche of. S. Laurence, whose fronte of whyte and blacke marble seemeth a very rare peece of worke.

Their

¶ Their houses are exceadynge fayre, the frontes two stories hygh, for the most part of fine marble curiously wrought: For their lawe alloweth none to decke hys house any higher with that kynde of worke, (vnlesse it be in respecte of some notable seruice) because it would requyre an infinite charge to garnish them of that sort to the toppe, their houses beyng for the most part .vi. .vii. and some .viii. stories hygh. And yet are they so fayre, that I wote not vnto what cities I maye compare their buildynges. And not onely within the citee, but all a longe the sea coastes, called La Riuiera, euery village is so furnished with gallaunt and sumptuouse houses, that it is a world to beholde.

¶ Amongest all other the palaice of Andrea Doria, without the gate of .S. Thomas, is a notable thinge, very fayre, sumptuouse and large: And aboue his house (a thing wonderful) he hathe made his slaues to hewe out of the harde rockie mountayne, as muche space, as hath made .vi. gardeins one aboue an other: and hathe caused so much earth to be caried vp, as suffiseth for the growth of all maner fruites and herbes, very pleasant to beholde.

¶ Lykewyse within the towne, Andrea Doria hathe the goodliest house that any man hath buylded in oure dayes.

But the stretes of the citee for the moste part are so narow, that it is a great defacyng to the rest. Whyche I thinke the stipe descent of the hyll causeth, that they haue not roome enough to make their stretes large.

Halfe a myle without the towne Eastwards, they haue a very fayre watch toure, called Torre della Lu-

minaria, wherin nightly burneth a greate lyghte for a marke to theim that be on the sea, because it maye be discerned verye farre of.

Finally they haue a very fayre conduite of water conueighed on arches, muche after the auncient Romaine facion, for the space of.6. myles or more, oute of the valley of Bisagnio: notwithstandinge that they haue diuers fayre springes, and one specially that cannot be drawen dry.

Of their dominion and gouernaunce.

Their dominion is not very greate, it passeth not the boundes of Liguria, which is scarcely.80. miles in length, and nothinge so muche in breath. And may dispend in publike reuenew not fully.400000. crownes by the yeare: as I haue been enformed. In deede in tyme past they had muche greater dompynon: So that the common rent hath been verye great: but the Turkes prosperitee hathe muche abated that. Neuertheles it is thoughte, the priuate citesins were neuer more wealthie than they be at this present.

Of their trade and customes.

All the Genowales in maner are merchant men and very great trauailers of straunge countreis For I haue ben reasonably persuaded, that there be.5. or.6 thousand of them continually abroade, either merchauntes or factours: so that they leaue few places

of the worlde vnfraught: where anye gaine is to be had. For the merchaundise that they bring home hath spedy dispatche, by reason they ly ere is as a keye vnto all the trade of Lumbardy, and to a great part of Italie. They at home make such a nomber of silkes and velvettes, as are hable to serue many countreys: whyche is the chiefe merchaundise that they sende forthe. Indeede they are commonly noted to be greate blarers. One thing I am sure of, that if Ouide were nowe alyue, there be in Genoa, that could teache him a dousen poinctes De Arte Amandi. For if Semiramis were euer celebrated amõgest the Assirians, Venus amõgest the Greekes, Circes among the Italians, sure there be dames in Genoa that deserue to be celebrated & chronycled for their excellente practise in loue. And truelye the Genowayes them selfes deserue that their wyues should be praised, because I saw in no place where women haue so muche lybertee. For it is lawfull there openly to talke of loue, with what wife so euer she bee. Insomuch that I haue seene yonge men of reputacyon rõdyng in the streete talke of loue with yong mistresses beyng in theyr wyndowes aboue: and openlye reherse verses that they had made one to the other. And in the churches, specially at euensong, they make none other prayers. So that he that is not a louer there, is meete for none honest companye. Many men esteme this as a reproche to the Genowaies, but they vse it as a policie: thinkyng that their wiues throughe this liberte of open speache, are ridde of the rage that maketh other women to trauaile so much in secret. Indede the women there are exceding faire and best

apparailed to my fantasie of all other. For thoughe their vppermoste garmente be but plaine clothe, by reason of a law, yet vnderneth they weare the fineste silkes that may be had, and are so finely hosed and shoed, as I neuer sawe the like, open faced, and for the moste parte bare headed, with the heare so finely trussed and curled that it passeth rehersall. So that in myne opinion the supreame court of Ioue is no where to be sought, out of Genoa.

¶ But like as the women are excellent in this, euen so doe the men excede all other in superstition. For there be within the citee. 20 scholes or companies of disciplinantes otherwise called Battuti, whose maner is whan they are called to deuocion, as euery good fridaye, or in the middest of a plage, of famine, of werre, or of other like occasion, that requireth or rogacions such processions, thei assemble and cloth them selfes in sacke, linnen or buckeramme; with their backes naked, and their faces couered, sauyng litteli holes to loke oute at. And hauynge certaine skourges or whippes (some of wyer) in their handes, they goe about the towne whyppynge theim selfes, that the bloud shall renne from the backe downe to the heeles, so painefullye, that it mouth the poore people to compassyon. For whan this is done, they thinke God must nedes fulfil their prayer. The lyke wherof is vsed in all other places of Italy, but because I thinke no two citees are able to match Genoa in the noumber of these Battuti, I thoughte good to make mencion of theim here.

¶ Finally, the astate is holden by a duke, chaungeable euerye .ii. yeare: who with .viii. gouernours and .viii. procetours

proctours assigned vnto hym, ruleth the whole for the tyme. Neuertheleſſe Andrea Dorta the emperours admyrall for the myddell seas, dieth all at hys will in matters of peace or warre, and almoſt in euerye other thynge.

The buildyng of Genoa.

OF the edification of Genoa be dyuers opinions: but because no certaintee is written thereof, I will omitte theyr saiynges that ascribe it to Janus, or to Genuus the sonne of Saturne, and agreeing with the opinion of the bishop of Nebio (that particularlye wrote the Chronycle thereof) I thinke it to be of such antiquitee, that neyther the tyme of foundacion, nor yet the authour thereof can wel be knowen. As for the name, it is not vnlyke, but that (because it is the verye entrie from the seas vnto Lumbardy) it was fyrſte called Ianua (a gate or dooze) & afterwardes corruptely Genoa. But howe or whan it was buylded, or for what cauſe it was so named, this is cleere, that in the Romaines time, almoſt 300. yeres before the comynge of Chriſt, this cities ruled the countrey about it, as appeareth bothe by a table of braſſe lately founde in the vale of Poceuera, and also by the mencyon that Liuie maketh of the deſtruction of it by Mago Anniballes brother, and of the repairynge of it agayne by the Romayne Conſule Lucretius Spurius.

¶ From whiche tyme to the comynge of Charlemayne into Italie, I find nothyng notable of Genoa, saue that it was one of the fyrſt citees, that openlye profeſſed the

Christian faythe. But after Charlemayne was crowned emperour, and his sonne Pepine made kinge of Italie, Ademaro, a baron of Fraunce, was sente thyther to be capitaine: who by commaundement of kyng Pepine, fought by sea with the Saraslines: and thoughe he was taken prisoner in the battaile, yet the Genowayes ouercame theyr enemies, toke. xiii. Saraline shyppes, and the Ile of Corsica, which in maner euer sens hathe remained vnder the Genowaies dominion: and so continued Genoa obediente to the emperours capytaynes the space of. 100. yeres.

In the yeare. 526. there happened in a litle Crete than called Fontanella, now Bordigoto, nere to the piere of the hauen, a litel spryng in stede of water cast forth bloud, and ranne so a whole daye, to the great wonder of the people: wherupon followed, that the Saraslines armye came sodeinely vpon the towne, and takyng it by force, sacked and rifled it, sette it on fyre; and caryed away the people, men women and children, in such wise, that they lefte the towne as a playne wilderneffe. But the Genowaies armye, whiche was than abrode, mette wyth these Saralines on the sea aboute Sardegnia, where they fought with theim, cutte them in peces, and recouered their prisoners with double praye, and so restored their cites.

After this the emperoure Berengario graunted them certaine priuileges, with full dominion ouer the townes that they than possessed. By reason whereof they shortly encreased, not onely in welth but also in such power that in the voiage made into the holy lande by Godfrey of Bolaigne and other princes, the Genowaies armye

was

was one of the notables of that company, first at the wynning of Antioche, and after at the getting of Jerusalem, in comyng to which seconde enterpris the Genowaies were faine to drowne they? owne ships in the hauen of Iaffo, because they were not able to resist the Soldanes armie, that came vpon them: thought better to drowne them, than to encrease the enemyes power with their losse and shame both: how be it they first discharged all thyngs that might be had out of them, whiche they caried with them vnto the siege of Jerusalem, and there behaued them selfes so worthily, that almoste none other company of the christian army was comparable to them. Policie. 1109.

¶ After this they armed .27. Galleis and .vi. shyppes, and sent them into Soria in ayde of Boemonde than kynge of Jerusalem, where they gatte the citee of Cæsarea in Palestina, and leauynge it in possessyon of the christians, retourned home with greate tryumphe and praye.

¶ Finally within the space of .13. yeres the Genowaies sent .vii. seuerall armies into Soria, by whose meanes the principal townes from the golfe of Laiacia southwardes, to the golfe of Rissa, that is to wete Malmistra, Solino, Antioche, Laodicia, Tortosa, Tripoli, Baruti, Accon, sometime called Ptholemaida, Acres, Ghibelletto, Cæsaria, Assur, Iaffo, Acaron, and Ascalon, were gotten oute of the Turkes handes. For which great seruice Baudewyn than king of Jerusalem next after Boemonde, gaue to the Genowayes dyuers notable priuileges through al his dominion, whiche they enioyed longe time.

After

After these many victories returnyng to Genoa, the warre that ceased so farre of, sprang vp nerer home. For the Pisani contended with the Genowaies for consecration of the bishop of Corsica, & for the ile of Sardegnia. Wherupon followed sharpe warres betweene them, for the moste parte to the disauauntage of the Pisani: so that at last beyng plainely ouercomen, the Genowaies entred into Pisa by force, & raced all the houses therof downe to the fyrst floore.

1146 Thus finishing those warres, and wanting occasion where to be occupied, they made out an army against the Saracines, & firste ouerranne the ile of Minorica, and after assaulted the cities of Almeria and Tortosa, in the confines of Granata, which they toke by force, with the slaughter of an infinite nomber of people, besydes 10000. slaues that they caryed with them to Genoa, and suche a quantitee of treasure and bootes, as fewe syth had ben seen in those dates: diuidyng the pompyon that was gotten into three partes, the Erle of Barcelona (chiefe of this enterprise) had two to hym selfe, and the Genowaies the thyrde.

The glorie and wealth of which victories were such to the Genowaies, that for many yeres after they enterprised no great matter farre from home, but such sedicion fel among them selfes, that theyr owne brauling many times gaue courage to forein princes to worke against them. For the emperour federike the fyrste after he had conquered Lumbardie) thought also to subdue them: and made open preparacyon for it. Whyche was cause of theyr vnion agayne. For whan they perceiued an outward ennemie, than were they inwardlye

soone

soone agreed: and assoone as they were sure of peace abroade, incontinētly they warred againe within themselfes. Neuertheles they vsed the emperoure so well with giftes and fayre woordes, that he not only suffred theim to continue in theyr libertee, but also encreased theyr common wealth with a nounber of priuileges: and was occasion, that after long cōtention with them of Pisa, the Genowaies at length entoied quietlye the one halfe of Sardegnia, whiche before the Pisani had wholly to themselfes.

About this time the Soudan of Aegypt gotte Jerusalem, and dyuers other cities in Soria out of the Christians handes. 1190

Wherfore kynge Richarde of Englande, and kynge Phillip of Fraunce made their viage into those parties, and kyng Richarde arryued at Genoa with .xv. galleys, where he taried but one daye. Richarde kynge of Englande

After whom the Genowaies sente .30. saile, wyth men and municion to the siege of Acon or Ptholemaida. To the succours of which citie the Soudan sent a shyp charged with vittails and armure, and amongest other a cage full of fleeyng serpentes, purposely sent to be set forth in the Christian army, that with theyr venim they myght plage it. But it was mette by the englysh nauie and taken. And the emperour federike comming towardes the same enterprise, beyng al ready entred into Soria, by mischappe was drowned in a riuer.

After whose death his sonne Henrie next emperoure came to genoa in his owne persō, requiring their helpe to the conquest of Sicilia, promisyng theim the prefyre, so that he myght haue the honoure. Whyche so muche enflamed the hertes of the people, that they made suite 1194.

a great number of galleis and other vesselles, and dyd so much seruice, that the emperour (in maner by their power) gaue the whole Ile of Sicilia, whyche he vnthankefullye considered. For whan they had done their best for hym, he rewarded them with all the spyte he coulde, threatnyng to oppresse their libertee, and to make them his subiectes: insomuche that the Pisani, through coumforte thereof, molested the genowayes of new, and fortifyng Poggio di Bonifacio, fel to spoylyng and rifelyng of the Genowaies goodes by sea.

But at lengthe the losse tourned to theim selfes. For the genowaies armed theim, and takyng Bonifacio by force, not onely sacked and munited it for theim selfes, but also toke a number of Pisane shippes, as they could fynde theim. Whereupon it folowed, that the Pisani made out their power, and so fought diuers times with the genowayes with diuers fortune.

The inhabitauntes of Vintimiglia breakynge the articles of accorde betweene the genowayes and theim, were faine to come barefoote with crosses in their handes to Genoa and aske pardon, for feare of the preparacion that the citee made againste theim. And the yeare folowynge, the genowaies purchased the dominyon of Gaui, of the vnheritours therof: and the inhabitauntes of the vale of Arocia submytted their countrey to the Genowayes dominion. 1201

And because the Pisani prepared to assayle certayne genoway shyps, comyng out of Soria, laded with riche merchandise, the citee armed certaine galleis & shippes to conducte them safely: whyche metynge togethers in the mouth of the Adriatike sea, determined to attempte 1204.

to wynne

to winne the citee of Saragosa in Sicile lately gotten by the pisans. In ỹ enterprise wherof they toke certaine Pisans shyppes: and without greate feight wonne the citee, leauynge it fortified and gouerned for the common welth of Genoa. Than the Pisans made out a newe armye and besieged it, and of lyklyhod shoulde haue put it to great aduersite, if Henry erle of Malea in Greece, with certayne galleys of his owne, and other shippes of the Genowaies, that came from the east, had not comen to the succours: who foughte with the Pisane armie, and with helpe of theim that were within the towne, obteined the victory, to the great slaughter and losse of theim of Pisa.

¶ And because the erle Henry of Malea had done the Genowayes great seruice dyuers waies, therfore they 1209.
ayded hym to their great charge, with galleis, shippes, men, and horses to defende Candia, which he had vsurped vpon the Venetians: so that the Venetians beynge therwith agreued, immediatelye publyshed the Genowaies to be their ennemies, wherupon folowed sharpe warres betwene theim many yeres after. 1216.

Here is to be vnderstand, that from the yere. 1080. vnto the yere. 1190. the citee was gouerned freely by the citezins vnder the name of Consuls without entermedling of straunge rulers, and so in maner to this time, though for the space of. 26. yeres some straungers had ben now and than brought in as Potestates (the consules neuer theles remaynyng after the olde maner) but from this time forward the Consulles ceased, and straunge Potestates bare the rule a great tyme after.

¶ The generall armye of the Christians lyynge at the 1220
siege

syege of Damia in Aegypte was relyeued wyth. 10. galleis sente by the Genowaies: throughe whose helpe the citee was gotten, with wonderfull ryches and an infinite number of slaues, besides the multitude of infidelles that were slaine: howbeit the chrystians kepte not the citee long, for the yere folowyng the Saralines recouered it agayne.

1222 They of Vintimiglia rebelled against the genowaies, so that after many light bickeringes, at laste an armye was sent out against them, which lay longe at siege before the towne, and could not preuaile: so that the Potestate to be assured of that enterprise, edyfyed an other towne betwene them and the sea, and wyth a garryson held them so streight, that at last they yelded, wherupon the towne being recouered, the genowaies builded ther two fortresses for the more suretee of the same.

1237 In like maner they of Sauona and of Albenga rebelled, and were to their despyte reduced to their former obedyence. But the warre that happened betwene Alexandria in Lumbardy, and Genoa, for the dominion of Capriata and other townes in the confines betwene them, was not so sone appeased: thoughe in effecte the genowaies at length preuailed.

1238 Gregory the .ix. bishop of Rome trauailyng to sende an armie into the holy land, agreed the Venetians and genowayes togethers for .x. yeares, and bounde them to kepe peace on payne of cursynge. But lyke as his enterprise came to naught: so his curse coulde not kepe those two astates from renewing of their malice, as by their ofte fightyng wyth variable fortune appered after. And beyng than in cõtention wyth the emperour fede-

rike, and

rike, & calling a counsaile in rome against themperour, he sent to the genowayes, prayinge them to conueyghe in sauetee the legates and prelates that came oute of the west parts towardes that counsaile. Wherfore they armed .27. galleis, and receiuing two Cardinalles, and other prelates to the noumber of .40. at Niza in Pro-uãce, brought them solemnely to Genoa, & goinge from thense with them towardes rome, mette wyth Ansaldo admirall of the Emperours nauye: who foughte wyth them, and toke .22. of those galleis, withall those goodly prelates, and diuers of the chiefe of the Genowayes: and after vered the common wealth fore in diuers partes of their dominion. And because the emperoure had intelligence with diuers of the citesyns, who withstode the maintenaunce of bysshop Gregorie: therefore were they for the moste parte banyshed, and manye of theyr houses raced to the earth, and as banyshed men procured many displeasures to their countrey diuers waies. And though the most part of the imperialles were thus banished, yet diuers of that affection remayned in the citee closely, insomuch that the commons deuided them openlye by name, callynge the imperialles Mastarati, and the papistes Rampini: whiche names contynued til the comyng vp of Guelfi and Ghibellini, that deuyded the whole Italian nacion, as is mencyoned in the Florentine history.

Than died the bishop gregory, and Celestine his succes- 1243.
sour lined but .18. daies, after whom succeded Innocence the .iiii. a Genowaye borne. He folowynge the trade of hys predecessours contendyng with the emperour, & beinge in his daunger at Sutri in the realme of

Naples, wrought so wyth the Genowayes, that they privily made out certaine galleys, whiche came to Civita Vecchia beside Rome, to receiue the bysshop, who as secretly as he could came thither, and toke shipping to Genoa, where he was receiued with Gloria in excelsis, as reason wolde: not a little to the emperours displeasure, that before accompted him selfe in maner sure of hym. And Innocence restynge hym selfe a certayne space in genoa, he departed towardes Lions in fraunce and there helde a general counsaile agaynste the emperour Federike, during whose life he durst not retourne into Italy: but immediately after the emperours death he came backe againe by genoa, and was there no lesse triumphantly receiued, than he was the firste tyme.

1251 ¶Upon the death of this emperour the Genowayes also recouered Saona and dyuers other townes, that by the emperours tyme rebelled agaynst them, and had dooen them notable displeasures, as wel by sea as by lande. And bysshop Innocence beynge departed from genoa to Milaine wrought so, that the banished Mascarati were restored to theyr countrey againe: & .10000 pounds paied them of the communaltee in recompence of theyr goodes taken away before.

1257 ¶And not long after the people made a commocion against the office of the Potestate, so that ỳ rumour ceasyng, they elected Guglielm Bocanigra, a citezin, to be theyr captaine & superiour vnto the Potestate, and all other magistrates, who beynge placed in that office for .x. yeres, by lyttle and little vsurped the dompynon ouer the whole, and so prouoked the chiefe citezyns to conspyre agaynste hym: And though he beyng aduer-

tised

tised of the fyrst conspiracie prevented his fall, by banishyng of dyuers of the conspyratours, and by reconciliyng of the rest: Yet his tyrannie so muche encreased: that at length, not the chiefe citesins alone, but also the commons openly rebelled, and deposed hym, reducyng the citee to the former order of theyr straunge potestate

¶ In his time the citee happened to haue great warres 1258
specially with the Venetians, who hauyng like priuileges in the citee of Acon, and in other partes of Soria, as the genowaies had, vpon a light occasion brake the peace, that bishop Gregorye before had made betwene theim: so that both the Venetians and the Genowayes made out notable armies into Soria, either of theim to maintaine his party there, and after diuers skyrmishes and light bickerynges, at last the armies met & fought before Acon, where the genowaies were discomfited, & xvb. of theyr galleis taken. So that those Genowayes that than were in Acon, were constreigned to flie.

And therupon the Venetians tokt, sacked & rased their houses to the earthe: and for a more despite, rooted vp a verie fayre toure of the Genowaies, and made a ponde of that place, and settynge botes therupon, wolde saye in scorne: See where the genowaies toure swymmeth.

¶ This ouerthrowe caused the Genowayes to enter in 1261
leage with Michael Paleologo emperoure of Constantinople, than enemie to the Venetians: who gaue to the Genowaies the citee of Lesmirre, and the yle of Sio, as some affyrme.

¶ Either of those common wealthes yerely made out a noumber of galleis, which most commonly mette togethers and fought: but the notablest conflict of all was

before

before Sicilia, betwene Trapani & Mazara, where the
266. Venetians toke .xxbii. genowayes galleis, withall the
booti and prisoners that were in them.
¶ And thaugh the Genowaies many times gotte from
the Venetians dyuers of theyr armed galleis, & manye
of theyr merchaunt shippes richelye laden: yet all thyn-
ges reckened, the Venetians had the better, whether I
shuld ascribe it to fortune or force, I cannot wel iudge.
¶ Lewys the French kyng waged a certaine noumber
370 of galleis and shippes, with .10000. men of the Geno-
waies, which serued him in his enterprise made to Tu-
nise in Afrike, where the kynge hym selfe, one of hys
sonnes, and dyuers other princes & a noumber of soul-
diours died of the plague: so that Charles kyng of Na-
ples, than lefte chiefe of the armye, fell to composicyon
with the kyng of Tunise, and vpon the receipte of cer-
taine money, with promyse of other thynges, dissolued
the army, and retourned homewardes without any no-
table acte: in which retourne he metts wyth Edwarde
our prince, that with a goodly companye was departed
out of Gascoyne towardes the ayde of that enterpryse,
and offered hym part of the money gotten towards his
charges: but the prince refused it. Wherefore the rest
of the armie, (that were sore tourmented wyth a great
tempest, in which a noumber of shippes and men were
lost) seeyng the englishe armie cleere, and safe without
losse: affyrmed, that it was onelye because they woulde
take no parte of money receiued of the infidelles.
¶ And thoughe the Genowayes bothe for shyppes and
noumber of men deserued mocke in this viage: yet had
kyng Charles so littel respecte to them, that these that

remay-

remained, retourned to genoa not onely without gaine or rewarde, but gladde wyth theyr greate losse to be at home againe.

¶ About this time, by reason of the Guelfe and ghibelline parties, that corrupted al Italie (as in the Florentine historie appeareth), diuers of the chiefe houses of genoa likewyse diuided theym selfes into those sectes: insomuche that they of the houses of Doria and Spinoli, with helpe of theyr partetakers, by force erpulsed the Flischi & Grimaldi out of the citee, and banyshed those two families, with a number of others, which banished mē, with helpe of a Cardinal of the Flischi, prouoked Charles than kynge of Naples, to make warre againſt the genowaies, whych endured not longe. For Oberto Spinola, & Oberto Doria, that toke vpon theim the absolute power, and ruled the citee certayne yeres, keping theyr aduersaries out, were by sure meanes so entreated of Innocence the .v. than bysshoppe of Rome, that the banished men were quyetly reconciled and called home: the gouernaunce of the citee neuerthe lesse remaynynge in the handes of the Oberti as it did before. 1376

And than the common wealth bought of Nicolas De Flischo certaine townes and territories to the value of 25000. pound, which they wel and truely payed hym. But the Flischi and Grimaldi continued scarcelye .vii. monethes at home, but they were accused of conspiracie againſt the estate, and so banished of new.

¶ And though kyng Phillip of France had before this tyme made peace for a season betweene the Venetians and genowaies, in hope of an enterprise that he entended to

ded towardes the holy lande: yet the auncient hate was ſuche betweene theim, that the one coulde ſcarce meete with the other on the ſea, but that they would fight togethers, and take that aduauntage that they would doe in warre.

1282. Giudice

¶ Than began Giudice di Ginercha in Corſica to trouble the genowaye veſſels, and at length he to declare him ſelfe open enemie to them. Wherefore they made out a power againſt him, and expulſed hym out of hys aſtate. But by theim of Piſa he was by force reſtored agayne: for the which the warre renewed betwene the genowaies and the Piſani, one of the blouddieſt warrs and greatteſt by ſea that hath lightly ben heard of betwene two commons wealthes. For within the ſpace of thzee yeres their armies foughte .iiii. battailes, and they: diligence was ſuch, that whan the one army was diſcomfited (whiche for the moſte parte hapt to the Piſani) they wold within a moneth or .vi. weekes repaire their number of galleis as ſtrong as at the fyrſt, not of olde galleis, but of newe tymber. And it wolde ſeeme incredyble to hym that knoweth thoſe two cities, that they ſhould be able (hauyng ſo little dominion) to make ſuche powers one againſte an other, as by their chzonicles appereth they did.

1284

¶ For the Genowaies vpon a ſodeine tidynges of the Piſanes landing in Porto Venere, armed .70 galleis in leſſe than .iii. dayes, and ſente them foorthe to the ſea, and in the ſame yeare was .58. galleis, and .viii. Pamphiii (whyche be boates of .140. or .160. ores) made readye in Genoa in a daye, which with the reſte of the armie, is the noumber of .88. galleis, beſides other veſ-

ſelles,

felles, sayled forthe before the hauen of Pisa, where after a cruell and blouddie battaile the Genowayes had the victorie, toke. 28. Pisane gallets, boulged seuen, put the rest to flight, and ledde with theim. 9272. prisoners, whose raunsome yelded vnto the genowayes no small summes of money: and though this ouerthrow shoulde seeme almost sufficient to be the destruction of a great prince, yet did that one citee of Pisa so beare it, that after a little dissembled peace they declared & contynued enemyes a longe while after againste the Genowaies, and fought many battailes by sea with diuers fortune.

¶ The nobilitee of genoa conspired againste the gouer- 1289
nours and people, to take from them the rule, because the citee was gouerned more after the commons wyl, than the gentilmens. And this conspiracy was so close kept (notwithstandynge that in maner all the chiefe families, as Grimaldi, Flischi, Negri, Malloni, Saluatici, Embriaci, & others were confederates in it) that it was neuer knowen, tyl they were in the streetes armed on horsebacke & on foote, and had taken the churche of saincte Laurence: But folowyng to the Abbotes house (for so was the chiefe ruler called) the people assembled and resysted the conspiratours in suche wyse, that the nobilitee was fayne to laye downe their weapons, vpon promyse to be pardoned of lyfe and goodes. By reason wherof the commocyon ceased, and certaine of the principal causers were banished for a time.

Upon examinacion, what power the genowayes were able to make by sea in tyme of nede, it was founde they 1290
had. 120 gallets, furnished with their owne chosen men. Wherof. 40. were immediatly sent forth against Pisa,

whiche entred the hauen, destroied the great toure that the Pisanes had made there for theyr defence, toke the towne of Ligorno, and raced it to the earth: and finally brake the great chaine that crossed the water, a greate parte wherof they brought with theim to Genoa, and there openly hanged it vp for a perpetuall memorye of their victories.

¶ Where as the commons the yere before had defended their rulers from the conspiracie of the nobilitee, nowe they them selfes began to moue and to make rumours against theim: so that the capitaines of their owne accorde gaue vp their offices to the people, wherevpon a newe order was taken, that they shoulde haue a straunger to be their capptayne, and the reste of all the officers, as the counsaylours, the Antiani, and such other, should be made halfe of the gentilmen, and halfe of the people.

1202. ¶ Not longe after vppon a lyghte occasyon, the truce was broken betweene the Genowaies & the Venetians, and either of theim armed a certaine number of galleis to the sea, and in the Leuaunte seas before the hauen of Giacia mette and fought, where the lesse number, the genowaies ouercame the greater number, and toke 25

1294 of their galleis.

¶ Here it is to be noted, that wythin the space of .viii. yeres, from the beginnyng of the last warres agaynste Pisa, it appereth, that the genowayes at sundrye tymes had armed .627. saile, besides the merchant shippes and galeis, that yerely amounted to .70. or moe. And the customs of comers and goers, with the tare of salte, yelded yerelyonto the comminaltee aboue an. 140000

pounces

pounds(euery pounde of theirs beyng two ounces,or therabouts)whiche semeth a thing incredible.

Than were the Pascharati and Rampini of the citee (whiche were also as guelfi and ghibellini) made at one,after they had contended as ennemyes moze than 50.yeares. Wherupon(hearyng of a great preparacion that the Venetians made to reuenge theyr losse the yere beforе)the genowaies armed.165.galleis whereof 105.were new,in the which they had 45000 feighting men,all of their owne subiectes,vnder the leadynge of Oberto d'Oria,admirall for that vyage, who wente into Sicile,thinkyng there to mete the Venetians,but they met not,so that the army returned without doing anye feate:and their wealthe was suche, that. 8000. men of that armye were cloathed in clothe of golde and sylkes. 1295

¶The olde enuye betwene the Guelfi and Ghibellini renewed,so that the citee was deuided,that is to wete, the families of Spinola,& Doria, with their followers on the one parte,& Flischi and Grimaldi, wyth theyr secte on the other parte:so that they foughte from the later ende of December,vnto the.vii.of Februarye daie by daye,and burned diuers goodlie houses: but at laste Spinola and Doria preuailed,& the other were driuen out of the towne and banyshed. By reason whereof.ii. capitaines of those.ii. houses were elected to the rule of the citee after the olde maner,and the straunge capitayne,with the Potestate discharged. 1296

¶Lamba d'Oria beynge one of the capitaines of the towne, and admyrall of the armye by sea, entred the Venetian golfe,fought with the Venetiã army,burned 1298.

77. galleis, and brought. 18. with .7400. prisoners to genoa, and neuertheleſſe shortly after made peace with the Venetians, and graunted truce to theim of Pisa for 27. yeares. For the whiche the Pisani, yelded to the genowaies the ile of Corsica, and the citee of Sassari in Sardegnia, with. 135000. pounds in money.

1304 The emperour Adronico Paleologo of Constantinople, for the greate amitee betweene hym and the genowaies, gaue theim the ground, wheron Pera standeth, a myle distant from Constantinople, where al the christians now dwel, first builded by the Genowaies.

¶ Within two yeres after beganne the discorde, that 1306 caused so much mischiefe betwene the houses of Spinola and Doria, (whyche before tyme had been stroñge frendes together) and endured the space of xv. yeares with much bloudshedyng, till the comyng of the emperour Henrie the. vi. to genoa, who agreed both parties, and so behaued hym, that the citezins bounde theim selfes by feaultee vnto his obedience for terme of. xx. yeares: which was the first tyme that the citee submytted hir selfe to the dominion of anye straunger. Notwythstandyng whan the emperour was departed, those two parties Spinola and Doria fought openly in the citee so that at length the Spinoli (beyng the weaker) were 1315 driuen out with well nere al their partetakers, and yet the warre continued betwene them the space of. 24. yeres, aswel within as without the citee, to the great domage, and almost destruction of the common wealth. For many times the banished mẽ by meane of frendes were reconciled againe: and whan they were ones returned, than did they worse than euer they did before.

This

This discension was not onelye betwene those two fa-
milies of Spinola and Doria, but also betwene the sec-
tes of Guelfes and Ghibellines: into whyche partyes
the whole citee was likewise diuyded: so that the Ghi- 1318
bellines, whiche than were banysshed by helpe of the
Visconti of Pyllayne, and of other ghibellines, made
a great armie: and vnder the leadyng of Parke, sonne
to Mathewe Visconti, came before Genoa, toke the
suburbes, & streigned the citee so sore, that if it had not
been succoured by kyng Robert of Naples (who in his
owne person, wyth .25. galleis entred the hauen) the
Ghibellines had been lyke to haue taken it. Wherfore
they of the citee, to make theim selfes strong, yelded the
dominion into the handes of the bishop of Rome, and of
the forsayd kynge of Naples, for the space of .x. yeres:
in whiche time were so many ciuile battailes stricken,
so muche bloudshedde, so many townes and houses de-
stroied and burned, so many galleis and shippes broken
drowned and lost, and so great summes of money spent,
that it seemeth a wonder how so little a countrey shuld
bringe forth so great furniture, and all to mischiefe. 1331
¶ Finally kynge Robert (to whom the rule of the citee
was prolonged for .vi. yeres) called the ambassadours,
aswell of the Ghibellines as of the Guelfes, to Na-
ples: and there made theim to conclude a peace, so that
the ghibellines were reconciled home, where they liued
not longe in quiete, as hereafter shal appeare.
¶ In the time of this warre one notable policye was Policie.
vsed by sea. The peare before conclusion of thys peace,
federike Marabotto, capitaine of .ix. galleis of the Gu-
elfes (whereof .ii. were drowned in Sardegnia) was
chased

chased by Aitono Doria, capitayne of .xiiii. of the ghibelline galleis, and came so neere with the nighte, that they were within a flight shotte together, so that Federike could by no meane escape: Wherefore in the darke of the nyghte, he set forthe a little emptie vessel, with a burnyng lanterne in it, and caused all the lightes of his galleys to be put oute. This dooen he lette the little vessell lose: whyche the wawes of the sea by lyttle and little draue towardes the lande: so that Aitono thynkynge it to be the galleis that he had in chace, folowed, and by that meane was so farre from Federike er it was day, that Federike easily escaped the daunger.

1332. Than beganne the Catalaines to make warre to the genowaies vpon a veraye light occasion, which continued a great while, with many notable battailes by sea more to the losse of the Catalaynes than of the Genowayes: though the better of bothe had no cause to triumphe. But those forein warres were nothing so hurtfull to the citee, as theyr owne ciuile sedicion, whyche shortlye after renned betwene the guelfes and Ghibellynes: so that within the citee they foughte a certayne space with variable fortune, till at length the Ghibellynes preuailed, and chased away the Guelfes: and so an other whyle tooke the rule vpon theim. Wherefore the guelfes fortifyed theim selfes at Monaco, and made out diuers armies by sea, whiche were diuers tymes mette withall, by the contrary parte, thoughe in effecte there happened no notable battaile betwene them.

1335

1338. Not longe after the Frenche kynge warrynge wyth Englande, hyred .40. galleis of the genowayes: whereof .xx. were of the Ghibellines in Genoa, and .xx. of

the

the Guelfes in Monaco, whyche whan they had serued him a yere, retourned not wel contented with their payment, so that the mariners and other meane souldiours toke the rule of the galleis from theyr capitaines: 1339.
and were growen to suche a courage, that whan they landed, they moued the commons to rebell against the rule of the common wealth, & subuertynge the citee of Sauona, with moste parte of the countrey theraboutes, the commons of genoa toke courage therupon to arme them selfes, and to renne to the palaice cryng, that they wold haue an Abbot made of the people, and would no more be ruled by the capitaines. Wherfore the nobles (seing theyr power inferiour to the peoples furye) assembled together, & fel to counsaile for chosinge of thys new Abbotte, in whiche counsayle they taried so longe within, that the people without were wery, and vp start a poore wyredrawer or a goldesmithe (to geue hym the better name) and asked the people, whether they would be ruled by him? Whervnto many answered, yea, wel (quod he) and than shal Simonine Bocanegra be our lorde and ruler. Be it (quod one) and be it quod an other: so that the people with an whole voyce cried, Abbotte Bocanegra. But he (who was a good man) did what he could to refuse it: and they seyng that, amended the matter with cryng not Abbotte but Duke: so that in conclusion, whether he woulde or no, the absolute power was put in his hande, and he called Duke: beyng the fyrst that euer had that title in Genoa. Than was a law made, that none should be called to any rule or office of the common wealthe, vnlesse he were a Ghibelline.

1340 ¶The Turke at this tyme wared greate, and had certaine galleis goyng vpon the sea called Mare Maggiore (otherwise Pontus Euxinus) whyche had robbed certaine merchaunte shippes of the genowaies, wherefore they armed them selfes in Caffa, and meetynge fought with the Turkes army, and recouered not onely their owne goodes, but also toke .x. Turkish galleis and a shippe with great bootie.

¶Likewise the emperour of the Tartares made warre
1344 on the genowaies, and besieged them in Caffa (a towne situate in the confines of Tartarie) oute of the whyche the Genowaies issuyng by night, burned the Tartares engines, and slewe .5000. men: so that their emperour sent to genoa for peace, and vnder coloure thereof (obteignyng it) did them much more hurt by treason than he had done in open warre. For he spoyled them at one time of .200000. poundes.

¶The Nobilitee of genoa (that than were banyshed) seeyng the astate ruled all by the people, assembled their powers, and came before the citee, so that Bocanegra (seeyng also the nobilitee and people within the citee in maner at an open contencion for the same) deposed him selfe of his dignitee, and departed oute of the citee: In
1345 whose place John di Morta was by the people elected, and the nobilitee kepte out, til by the award of Lucchino Visconti, lorde of Millaine (to whose iudgement the matter was committed) they were restored to the citee and to parte of their goodes, the rule remaignynge neuertheles at the peoples will.

¶Al this while, they of Monacho mainteigned warre
1346 against Genoa, & had newly armed .34. galleis where-

fore

foze they of Genoa armed also.29. so that because they wold not meete togethers, they of Monaco wēt to serue Philip the french kyng against oure kynge Edwarde the.iii. in whiche warres they had so good succesſe, that one galley of theim neuer retourned home agayne: but the other army of Genoa, vnder the leadyng of Simonde Vignioſo proſpered verey much. For after diuers enterpriſes atchieued in the realme of Naples, he entred into the Archipelago (otherwyſe called Mare Egeum) and there gat the ile of Scio, which in proceſſe of tyme hathe been occaſion of wonderfull gayne and wealth to the Genowaies, and beſydes that at the ſame time he gat the two citees called Foglie Vecchie.

Than renewed the warre betwene the Venetians and the genowaies, wherin were diuers battailles fricken, 1350
one before Conſtantinople, where the Venetians were diſcomfited, with the loſſe of.30. galleis: an other in Sardegnia, where the genowayes were diſcomfyted, with the loſſe of.41. galleis, and an other at the ile of Sapientia, where the Venetians loſt.40. ſayle, beſides diuers others of leſſe importaunce.

And though it ſeeme, that the Genowaies got moſſe in theſe laſt warres with the Venetians: yet their gaine 1353
was ſo bloudy & coſtly, that in maner of neceſſitee they ſubmitted them ſelfes to Johan than archebyſhop and lorde of Myllayne. Under whom it continued ſcarce- 1356.
ly.iii. yeres, but that the people (beynge offended wyth the taxes that the biſhop required of theim) reſtored Simonde Bocanegra to the eſtate of duke wherof he had depoſed him ſelfe before: and he in recompence thereof, depoſed all the nobilitee, and gaue the offices amongeſt

the people. For whiche were dyuers conspiracyes wrought against hym: and (as some holde opinion) at length he was poysoned at a banket made to the king of Cyprus, as he passed that way into Fraunce.

¶ Gabriell Adorno was made Duke next after hym,
1363 who continued the space of .v. yeres, till the people mislyked his rule, and by force deposing him, created Domenike di Campo Fregoso in hys roome. In whose
1370 time happened the busines in Cyprus betwene the Ve-
1372 netians and Genowaies for goyng on the vpper hand, whych afterwardes was occasion of cruell warres.

¶ It happened vpon the death of king Peter of Cyprus (who in the night was slayne by his brethern) that as his sonne Peter should goe to the cerimony of his coronacion, the Venetians and genowayes than presente, contended veray earnestly for the vpper hand, whych at length by order of the kynges counsaile was geuen to the Venetians, so that the genowaies, preparyng themselfes to be reuenged, were discouered, taken, & slayne, that of as manye as were in Cyprus, there escaped but one to bryng home newes of this matter: whyche at length caused the destruction of that lande.

1373. ¶ For the Genowaies made out an army, and the same daye .xii. monethes, that they were beaten, they entred by force into Famagosta (the chiefe citee of cyprus) and toke all the nobylytee of the Realme. iii. of the chyefe they put to death, because they had been their enemies, and hauynge all the realme at theyr disposicion, they restored it to the yong king Peter, reseruing Famagosta to them selfes, with a tribute of .40000. florines: whyche they enioyed vnto the yere of our lorde. 1464.

and

and beſides that they brought diuers noble men & gentilmen of the cipziottes pziſoners vnto genoa, amõgeſt whom was the kynges vncle Iames Luſigniano, who beyng kept in the tower Capo di Faro, begat a ſonne 1378
called Iano, and was afterwardes kyng hym ſelfe.

¶ And albeit that Domenyke di Campo Fregoſo (who foz the ſpace of .viii. yeres had ben duke) ruled the ſtate ſo well, that no man could iuſtly repzoue hym, yet the inconſtant multitude, with a little ſtirynge of ſome that were great, made a commocion againſte hym, and not onelye depoſed hym, and put hym and hys bzother Peter (general of the enterpziſe of Cypzus) in pzyſon, but alſo banyſhed all theim of the houſe of Fregoſo: who foz a greate ſpace had ben notable miniſters of the common wealth.

But this ingratitude of the people can be no wonder to theim that haue redde hiſtozyes. Foz it is almoſt ozdinary with the people to render yll foz good. Ingratitude of people.

¶ Than was Nicolas di Guarco elected Duke: By whoſe tyme happened that notable warre betwene the genowayes and Venetians, wherin after dyuers foztunes and victozies on both partes, the Venetians loked to be beaten oute of theyz houſes. Foz the genowayes with helpe of theyz colleges ſo foze oppzeſſed theyz power by ſea, that they were dzyuen into theyz owne hauen, and Peter Doria came with the armye befoze the two caſtels at Lio, within two mile of Venice, ſo that if the Site of the place made not the citee impzeuable: of likelihode the Venetians had been ſubdued. Foz they ſent their ambaſſadours to peter Dozia to requyze peace with large condicions, who (not beyng contented

to haue the honour with a reasonable aduantage) wold needes they should yelde theim selfes and they? citee to be at hys discreation. The extremitee of whyche aunswere made the Venetians so desperate, that straynyng their vttermoll powers togethers, at length they discoumfited the genowaies army, slew Peter Doria, toke.xix. galleis, and moze than. 4000. pzisoners: and so recouered Chiozza, with all they? other places about they? marisshes, that were befoze taken from them.

And than encreased their courage so much, that Carlo Zeno, with certaine Venetian galleis, entred the riuer of Genoa, and held the genowaies shozt, till by meane 381 of the duke of Sauoye the peace was made betweene theim.

¶ Than died kyng Peter of Cypzus, whom to succede the barõs elected his vncle Iames, then pzisoner in genoa: who vpon aduertisement therof was not only put at libertee, but also (after great feastes and honoz) sent home with. x. galleis of the common wealthes: fyzste binding him selfe to certaine articles aswel foz the paiment of a perely tribute, as also foz the citee of Famagosta, which remained in the genowaies possession. 1383

¶ About this time were so many commotiõs in the citee, foz chosing of they? Dukes, that I thinke there was neuer so much alteracion of rulers in one cõmon welth foz the tyme. And because the rehersall thereof wolde occupie a greatter roume than my purpose doeth here allow: it shal suffice to saye, that as longe as the rule of the common wealth consisted in the wyll of the multitude, neuer was so inconstãt an astate as that of genoa. Foz ambesst other in the chaũge betweene Domenyke

di Cam-

di Campo Fregoso and Nicolas Guarco were.iiii. dukes in a day: Fregoso deposed in the mornynge, and Adorno incontinentlye made, and at after noone Adorno deposed, and guarco made. Wherfore as superfluouse to treate of all the Dukes elections, I woulde henceforth speake no more of theyr chaunges, wythoute great cause.

¶ The Moores of Barbarie in this tyme scoured all the middle seas, robbing and spoiling all that euer they 1389
coulde take. Wherefore the Genowayes wyth dyuers others made suite vnto the Frenche kyng for an enterprise to be made against the kyng of Tunise. Whyche the French kyng graunted, and sent the duke of Bourbone as a generall, not onely wyth a greate power of Frãce, but also with a de that was sent him out of englade, in whose company the Genowaies sent.40. galleis, and.xx. shyppes of theirs, vnder the leadynge of John Centurione. And theyr Chronicle maketh mencion, how our Englishe archers behaued them selfes at theyr landing in Barbarie so wel, that the Moores gaue theim place: wheras withoute theim the armye shoulde haue had muche adoe to lande. The ende of whyche iourney was, that the king of Tunise released all Christian slaues, whereof there were a nounber in hys realme, and payed the Christyans. 10000. ducates, with promyse to trouble the seas no more.

¶ From the yere.1390. till.1396. was so muche a doe 1396
for makyng and deposyng of Dukes, that Antoniotto Adorno had beene.iiii. tymes Duke, besides.viii. or ix. others, that had been put in and out the meane time, with so much bloudshed, burnyng, and spoilynge, that at length

at length for verie desperacion the citee sent ambassadours to Charles the.vi. Frenche kyng, besechyng him to take the dominion therof into hys handes. Who at theyr requeste sent the Counte of sainct Paule, and the byshop of Meaux to be rulers there, and to receyue the
397 fortresses into his possession, whych immediately were deliuered to them, & leaulty sworne by al the subiectes.
398 ¶ The Frenche Gouernour had not been there fully a yere, but the sectes of Guelfes and ghibellines renued so sore, that after much burnyng, spoilyng and kylling in the countrey theraboutes, the ghibellines entred into the citee, and from the.xvi. of Julye, to the.v. of September fought daye by daye wyth the guelfes, and fortifiyng the one halfe of the citee, against the other, they neuer ceased, tyl bothe parties were tyred with the fury of theyr owne bloudde and slambe. For amongest their feightyng it was a common matter to set one anothers house on fyre: so that the losse that the common wealth sustayned in this rage, was esteemed much more than a myllion of golde.

¶ The bishop of Meaulx, than gouernour of the citee, for feare of his owne lyfe, fledde in the myddest of this
399 furye. So that whan it was past, the Frenche kynge sent thither in his stede one Collarde, a counsailour of hys, who by the Genowaies was honourably receiued.
400 He gouerned not much more than a yere, but by meane of a new sect, called La Scorzola, he was faine to habandone the citee, leauing theim together by the eares
401 after theyr old maner, feightyng and burning amongest theim selfes day by daye: whiche ceased not, till the comyng of Bouciquart marshall of Fraunce, who being

the

the kynges lieuetenant, entred into genoa with a thousand souldiours, & incontinently proceded against the seerrers of the common wealthe, causynge two of the chiefe of the citee Battista Boccanegra, & Battista de Frauchi, to be taken & brought to the palaice, & beheaded Boccanegra: vppon whose death the people began such a crie, that they whyche had the other in keppynge, lette him go: so that whan the rumour was past, Bouciquart in a greate rage, caused the chiefe officer of the wardes head to be stricken of, because thoughe hys mens negligence, happened the escape.

¶ Than did Bouciquart also fortifie the little castell, 1402
now called Castelletto, and put a garrison into it: and whan he had taken aswel from the men of the countrei as of the towne, all kynde of armure (they? swordes excepted) than spared he none of theim: But for euerye occasion of any importaunce, woulde behead the offendour without any respect to his qualitee or kinne: And his procedynges were such, that the French kyng confyrmed hym in that office for terme of life, to the greate contentaciō of the citesins, who in his rigorous iustice founde greater ease, than in the sokte procedynges of the other gouernours: whose gentilnesse gaue liberee to the presumptuouse multitude to do what they wolde, whych was they? owne destruction.

¶ Than Jano kyng of Cyprus (who had been borne, 1403
bredde vp, & wel intreated in Genoa) laied siege to the citee of Famagosta, intēdyng to get it from the genowaies: but an army of. 18. saile was incōtinently made thither, vnder ỹ leading of Bouciquart, who not onely rayled the siege, but also constreigned the kyng to pay

their charges, & atchieued diuers other enterpryses on the costes of Soria: neuertheless in hys retourne the Venetians mette with hym, and puttyng him to flight, toke .iii. of his galeis: and yet was the matter so handled, that the warre betweene the Venetians and Genowaies ceassed for this tyme. In dede Bouciquart in his owne quarell defied the duke of Venice, and Carlo Zeno, capitaine of the venetian galleis, to feight either hande to hande, or number for number, but he was not aunswered.

Bouciquart. This Bouciquart, for the space of .viii. yeres ruled the common wealth of Genoa, by whyche tyme the citee of Serezana, with the countre aboute came to the obedyence of the genowaies. Because they were of them selfes no more able to resiste the Florentines, and Bouciquart solde the common wealth, the Porte of Ligorne beside Pisa for .26000. dukates.

By his time also Benedict the .xii. Scismatike bishop of Rome, came to Genoa, and was there triumphantly receiued. And the office of .S. George was than deuysed, whych endureth to this daye.

The Siotes also rebelled, in so muche that Bouciquart, with .vi. galleis went thither, and reduced them to their former obedience.

Finally couetyng to haue the ruler of the astate of Millaine, he made an armie of .6000. footemen, and .5000 horsmen, & (not mistrusting any alteracion in Genoa) passed the freicte into Lumbardye. But the meane while the people murmured against him, & at last rebelled and slew all the Frenchmen they could finde within the dompnyon, and than receyued the Marques of

1409.

Monfer-

Monferrato, wyth a certayne power of men into the citee, who was made captayne & presidente there, with a stipend of. 15000. pound by the yeare. So that whan Bouciquart wolde retourne, it was to late. For than the Genowates wouldbe no longer subiectes to the Frenche kynge.

¶ The Marques continued not fullye .iiii. yeares, but they rebelled, and expulsed hym out of theyr dominyon, partly by force and partly by agreement. For they gaue him. 24500. duckates for the restitution of those townes and fortresses that he had of theyrs in hys handes. And than fell they to a newe order with the election of a Duke much after their olde maner: so that George Adorno was made duke for that time. 1413

¶ And albeit there coulde no fault be found in him, for he was a good iusticer, and a man endued with muche humanitee, yet was he scarcelye .ii. yeares in that office, but Battista Montaldo conspired agaynste him. Wherof folowed so muche ciuile warre betwene parties in the citee, that there were aboue. 100. men slaine, and that many of the best sort, and. 146. houses burned, spoiled and destroyed: and so muche hurte done besides, that it were to lamentable to tell. 1415

¶ Finally both parties weeried, they fel to agremente: so that george Adorno willingly renounced the astate of duke, and Barnabas di Goano was elected in hys stede. Who within the space of a yeare was also deposed, and Thomas Di Campo Fregoso made Duke in hys place.

¶ This man immediatelye after his election, to get the loue of the people, dysbursed. 60000. duckates of hys 1416

owne, to the relieue of the common wealth: whyche at that tyme was farre in debte. And yet for all that the common wealth was brought to such powertee, by their ons ciatle sedicion, and resisting duke Phillyp of Pyllaine, who than made sharpe warre vpon them, that for verey necessitee they solde the porte of Ligorno to the Florentines for. 120000. duckates.

And to encrease their calamitee kyng Alfonse of Aragone (goyng out of Spaine to gette the realme of Naples) landed in Corsica vpon the genowaies dominion and there besiegeyng Bonifacio put them to no smalle charge in the rescue thereof: wherein surely the Genowayes bare theim selfes wonderful valiauntelye, notwithstandyng that by their continual warres specially against the Duke of Pillaine, they were brought to suche powertee, that they were fayne at last to submitte them selfes to the duke of Pillayne, and in recompence of the depolyng of their owne duke, gaue him. 30000. Florines, with the lordeship of Serezana. Than was capitaine Carmigniola made ruler of the citee for the Duke, in whose tyme an armie was made out into the realme of Naples against kyng Alfonse, vnder the leadyng of Guido Totello, who by composicion toke the cities of Gaetta and Naples, and dyd so much, that the Spaniardes forsoke the realme, and so had the duke of Pillaine his purpose there, though he vsed it but easely for by faire entreatie he restored to Lucene Johan, all that the Genowayes had gotten from hir. Besides that the Duke suffered the common wealth to decay, by reason that dyuers (partely by his appoynetmente, and partly by his consent) occupied certaine townes & pos-

1421.

1422

sessions

sessions to their owne vses, whyche before belonged to the commynaltee. Wherewith the genowayes were muche offended, thoughe for that tyme they durste not sturre.

¶ And albeit that the genowaies serued hym notablye in his warres againste the Venetians, specialiye in the cõflicte betwene them on the riuer of Po, nere to Cremona, where the Venetians receiued a great discomfiture: yet whan the Venetians made warre againe vpõ the Genowaies, onely to be reuenged of their losse on the Po, Duke Phillip nothyng ayded the genowayes: so that the Venetians discomfited their army before the church of sainct Fruttuoso, where the Venetians toke viii. galleis: and pursuyng their victory, seeynge the genowiaes scarce able to arme theim, and the ile of Scio vndefended, made thither: and gaue diuers assaultes to the citee, thinkyng to gette it. But the Sciotes, wyth helpe of a fewe Genowaies that they had there, defended theim selfes so valiauntlye, that the Venetians were faine to retire with great losse of their men. 1431

¶ Than retourned kynge Alfonse of Aragone into the realms of Naples, and besieged Gaetta, to the rescue wherof Blasio d'Asseretto was sente, wyth. xb. sayle, and not fully. 3000. men: who mette and foughte wyth the king. the sorest battaile that hapned in those dayes, for so small a noumber. For the kynge set on the Genowaies armye with double the noumber of men, and with great aduauntage of shippes and galleis, yet dyd the genowaies so obstinatelye feight it oute, that of the kynges part they slew aboue. 5000. and toke the king with his. ii. brether, a noumber of dukes and Erles, 1434

and aboue.200.knights prisoners,with so much spoile of golde,siluer,iewelles, and other treasure, that the lyke booty had not lightlye been heard of: All whyche they brought in sauetee to Genoa;sauynge the kynges person,whiche by the duke of Myllaynes commaundement was had to Sauona,and from thense to Millaine were he was not entreated as a prisoner,but at length not onely without raunsome,but also with great presēts set at libertee,and that without the genowaies consent,whyche with diuers other vnkyndnesses and iniuries dooen to theim by the duke,caused the Genowaies to retourne to theyr owne wonted wylles, so that thorough procurement of Frances Spinola,ỹ whole citee was in armes,and expulsing and sleaynge all the Dukes ministers,toke on them theyr old liberty,and made Thomas di Campo Fregoso Duke againe,who continued in the same aboute.vi.yeares. In whyche tyme Raynolde Duke of Angio (that claimed the realme of Naples)came to Genoa, and was not onelye well receiued there,but also aided with certaine armed galleis towardes his enterprise,and Nicolas Fregoso sent for capitaine with him:by whose helpe he gatte the Castel Nouo in Naples,and so muche prospered otherwaies, that it was a great whyle doubted,who shoulde enioye the realme,either Raynolde, or kynge Alfonse. But at last Raynolde for lacke of men and money was faine to leaue the enterprise,so that the genowaies retourned without any recompēce of their great charge,sustayned in that quarel.And than was kinge Alfōse in theyr raile by sea;so that they were no sooner vnarmed, but that he ouerranne all the Genowaye costes.The like whereof did

of dyd the Duke of Appliaine by lande: and so was the
common wealth in maner besieged on both sides.
¶In the middest wherof beganne a conspiracie against
the duke, who was deposed and Rafael Adorno setled 1443
in hys place. Than peace was obteined of kynge Al- 1444
fonse vpon certaine condicions, as the necessitee of the
time would allow: amongest whiche one was, that the
Genowaies shoulde yerelye sende hym a basen of golde
as a present, or rather as a tribute, as he toke it.
¶Rafael Adorno beyng persuaded, that the common
wealth should amend, if he renounced the Duchie, lefte 1447
it willyngly. Wherupon Barnabas Adorno toke vpon
him: but Janus di Campo Fregoso entred by nyghte
into the citee, and depesing Barnabas by force: toke the
astate vpon him, and died within two yeres.
After whom succeded Lewys Fregoso, and after him
Peter Fregoso. In whose tyme the dominion of Cor-
sica, with the profittes comyng out of Caffa, and oute
of the other places, subiect to the genowaies in the east,
were all conuerted to the magistrate of sainct George:
and the citee of Pera against Constantinople (whyche
apperteined before to the genowaies) was yelded to the 1454
Turke, whan Constantinople was gotten.
¶John duke of Angio, sonne to the forenamed Rayn-
olde, came this yere vnto Genoa, where by accorde of 1458
the citesins, he receiued the citee into the dompynyon of
the frenche kyng, and therupon toke their feaultes. But
than came king Alfonse before the hauen with a notable
army, & so sore streigned the citee by siege, that if death
had not taken hym the rather out of the waye, he muste
needes haue gotten it. Wheras his death vnlooked for,

caused

caused the whole armys to skatter here and there: by reason whereof the Genowaies were delyuered, euen whan they despaired of all mercy, knowyng how much the kynge was bent to their destruction.

Than incontinently they made out an army in fauour of Duke Iohn towardes the recouery of the realme of Naples, whiche did hym notable seruice, thoughe in effecte his purpose proued not.

¶ This meane whyle Peter Fregoso, that had been Duke, seeyng the power of the citee wel abated by sendyng out of this armie, made a power, and imageninge howe he myghte recouer his astate, entred the citee by nyght. But this Duke Iohn with the citesins resisted, fought with hym all nyght and a part of the daye, and at last repulsyng his men, by chaunce locked hym with a fewe moe within the gates, where at last he was slaine and some of his alies and confederates taken and beheaded.

1459

1490

¶ But Duke Iohn after this victorie rested not long, til the commons beganne to contende for paiemente of tares, and findynge faulte with the burdeine that was laied vpon theim, toke their weapons in hand, and constreigned the duke with all his frenchemen to flee into the Castell. Where they besieged him: and than made Prospero Adorno theyr duke: so that Raynolde, father vnto the besieged Duke (wyth helpe of the frenche kynge) made a great army by sea and lande, and came to Genoa, where he was well fought withall, discoumfited, and losse. 2500. men: so that the Genowayes remained in theyr libertee: and yet were the ennemies no sooner retyred, but ciuile sedicion sprange vp amongest them

theim within the cities. For the Duke Adorno could not be cõtented to suffer the Fregosi to tarie within the citee, wherupon either of them made what power they could: And the Fregosi hauynge the better hande, expulsed Adorno, & made one of theyr owne name Duke.

¶ This overthrow was so displeasaunt to the Frenche kyng, that keping Sauona a certaine space in his han- 1462
des, and seeyng the maintenaunce therof overchargeable for hym, gaue it vnto Fraunces Sforza than Duke of Myllayne, withall hys ryghte vnto the affaire of Genoa. Wherevpon Sforza sente an armye thither vnder 1464
the leadinge of Gaspar di Vicomercato, and easelye obteined the dominion of the citee, by reason that paule Fregoso, than bothe Duke and archebishop of Genoa, fledde without makyng any resistence, knowynge that the people hated hym for his great tyrannie.

¶ Thus Gaspar beynge in the dukes name placed in the rule of the citee, the genowayes sente .xxiiii. of their chiefest citesins in ambassade to Myllayne, to gratifye the duke: that amiably receiued them. And glad were the genowaies, that they had gotte̅ him to be theyr lord because the good gouernaunce of hys owne subiectes made them to hope for like wealth and rest: as it proued in deede. But he lyued not fully .ii. yeres after.

¶ Than succeded his sonne Galeazzo: In whose tyme 1466
the Turke gatte the citee of Caffa, with dyuers other townes in the easte parties, appertaynyng to the genowayes: Which was not onely a great hyndraunce to 1475.
theyr wealth, but also to theyr reputacion.

¶ And because this Galeazzo shewed hym selfe somewhat vnthankeful to the Genowaies (beyng in deede a wilful yonge man) therefore the people murmoured a-

gainſt him, ſ ones rebelled by procurement of Ierome
1476 Gentile: wyych neuertheleſſe without much a doe was
pacified: ſo that Galeazzo continued tyde thereafter
vntil he was ſlayne in Millaine throughe a conſpiracie made
1477 agaynſt hym. As in the Milaneſe hiſtorye appeareth.
But incontinently vpon hys death the commons aroſe
againe, and expulſing the gouernour therfore the duke
toke a new order for the rule of their common wealth.
Wherfore incontinently a great armie was ſent from
Millaine, whiche by the helpe of the Adorni, with theyr
parttakers diſcomfited Obietto di Fliſco, with ſ comy
mynaltee, and ſo beyng entred into the citee, Proſpero
Adorno was eſtabliſhed, as the duke of Millains lieu
tenaunt there. But he continued ſcarcely one yeare,
vntil by meane of new practiſes, that he held with Ferdi-
1478 nando kyng of Naples, he was had in ſuſpicion to the
Milaneſe; who willynge to depoſe hym, raiſed a newe
commocion of the people, ſo that where he was before
the dukes lieutenaunte, now he was made gouernour
abſolutely of the commen wealth. Wherupon a newe
armye was ſente from Millayne to Genoa, and there
foughte wythall, and ſo diſcomfited, that of. 15000. men,
whyche departed from Millaine, retourned not fullye
3000. the reſt, ſome were ſlaine, but the moſt part taken.
This battaile being thus atchieued, the genowaies had
no rather recouered their libertee, but that their old ci-
uile ſedicion renewed. For the Fregoſi could not ſuffer
the Adorni to rule, wherefore within the citee they fell
together by the eares. And albeit that for a ſeaſon the
Adorni preuailed, yet at length they were oppreſſed and
conſtreigned to flee, and Battiſta Fregoſo made duke
after

after their olde maner, who the.iiii. yere after hys elec-
tion was deposed by the procurement of cardinal Fre- 1483
goso, and the Cardynall made Duke in his stede, by
whose tyme the Florentines made warre agaynste the
Genowaies, and gat from them the townes of Sereza-
na and Pietra Santa, whych with the countreis about
theym, were of notable importaunce to the common
wealth But it is no meruaile, though the Florentines 1487
preuailed: For the genowaies were at that time haban-
doned of all the allates aboute them. Wheras the Flo-
rentines were in leage with the bishop of Rome, wyth
the Venetians, and diuers others.

Than were the commons so wery of the Cardynalles
rule, that Obietto Fliſco, vpon comfort therof, entred
by nyght into the citee, and after much fight and longe
contencion, made the Cardinal to renounce: so that the
citesins (remembring how they were best in quiet, whā 1488.
they were subiectes to the Duke of Millaine) returned
of newe to be vnder the Milanese dominyon: and than
was Antony Adorno made gouernour of the citee for
the duke. By whose time truce was taken with the flo-
rentines, to the genowaies disauauntage: and Charles
the.viii. Frenche kynge was ayded by the genowayes 1495.
towardes the winnyng of the realme of Naples, but in
his retournethense, they not onelye discomfited a good
parte of his army by lande, but also toke.x. galleis, and
a great gallion, that were retournynge into Fraunce
from the kings sayd enterpryse of Naples. Wherupon
diuers townes that before rebelled agaynst the commō
wealth, retourned thā vnto them, as Vintimiglia with
others. And Serezana was braughte of the Castellane 1496

there for.25000.duckates.

¶ The emperour Maximilian came also to Genoa and was there honourablie receiued.

1499 ¶ This time was Lewys, surnamed Moro, Duke of Millaine, and sins the last submission of the estate of genoa vnto the duke, the house of Adorni had borne al the rule. And because they had persuaded the common wealth to aide the duke against the french kynge wyth 1000. men payed for. iii. monethes, therefore when the frenche kynge had chaced the duke from Millayne the citesins toke occasion to expulse the Adorni, & sente ambassadours to kyng Lewys the. xi. thā being at Millaine to offer them selfes to him: who amiably receiued them, and made hys cousen Philip of Cleues their gouernour, who with. xviii. saile French and Genowaies together, toke his viage towards the enterprise of Meteline, to the whych the Venetians also sent. 34. galleis But they returned al without atchieuing their purpose

1501

1502 ¶ Than came kyng Lewys to sporte him at genoa, and makyng greate preparacion to receiue him, the nobles contended with the auncientes of the commons, who should goe before, whyche for that time was iudged by Rocabertino, liuetenaunt for the gouernor, that they should goe by age, and nother by bloud nor dignitie.

1506 And albeit that this contencion was appeased for that time, yet for this & other light causes there grew suche hate betwene the nobilitie and commens, that at length the multitude arose, and constreignyng the gentylmen to flee oute of the citee, spoyled and robbed dyuers of theyr houses.

¶ Upon knowlage of whych rumour, the French king sente

sente the gouernour thither. Who with .150. horse and 750. footemen entred the citee, thinkyng wyth his presence and power to oppresse the peoples fury.

Than Aloise di Fliſco, with most part of the nobilitee had assembled a power, and were come to Quarto, in hope by the gouernours meanes to be reconsyled. But than beganne the Artisanes, with the rascal of the citee (whych for their pouertee were called Capette), to assemble together in companies, some of oure ladye, and some of saincte John Baptist, with other lyke, and so to renne about doyng infinite harmes, that the gouernor durst no more offer to beare any auctoritee. For they made them viii. rulers by the name of tribunes, against whom no man myghte speake, so that the gouernour, seeyng his auctoritee cleane taken from him, departed.

A little before whose departure kyng Ferdinando of Spaine, with .x. galleis and .vii. foystes entred the hauen, and tarryng there a daye, departed on his way to Naples.

Than dyd they of the citee sende .iiii. ambassadours to the Frenche kynge, who scarcelye would loke upon them: beyng determined by force to chastise them, and therfore sente commission to the Castellane that kepte the Castelletto, to domage the citee all that he coulde, who therupon secretly made an issue (whan he knew he should finde the chiefest in the church of S. Fraunces) and toke a number, and ledde them prisoners in to the castell, where for their raunsomes the capitayne gatte above .10000. duckates. But that letted him not from the execucion of his maisters commaundemente, for he neuer ceased, but shot of all maner of artillery into the

citee and into the hauen, to the greate terroure and annoyaunce of the people.

¶ Yet for all that these rascall Capette were so obstynate in theyr rebellion, that wyth helpe of theyr newe tribunes they made them a duke, one Paule da Noue a dier of spike.

¶ And though that the Cardinal Finaro, wyth dyuers of the best citesins, did what they could by counsaile to cause the people to submitte theim selfes to the frenche kyng (who than newly was entred with an army into Lumbardy) yet would they neuer stowpe, tyll the frenche kynge with his owne armie and with suche power as the nobilitee of Genoa could make, came before the citee: where the commons made a little resistence, but at length he entred in armes, made hys armye to passe thorough the citee, putte dyuers of the principall offenders to death, receyued homage of the citesyns spityng in his magistree, placed the nobilitee in their accustomed dignitees, burned the bokes of couenauntes, in steede wherof he graunted them some priuileges, made them pay. 200000 crownes for his costes, i. 40000. to the buildyng of a fortresse at Capo di Faro, encreased the garrison with. 200. souldiours, & finally bound them to kepe. iii. galleis contynually armed at theyr costs and charge. And thus (to his semyng) establisshyng all thynges, retourned towardes Fraunce. And at Sauona was ouertaken by the king of Spaine, who in his retourne from Naples landed there to visite and salute the frenche kynge: that lykewyse receyued hym with solemne cheere.

¶ After this the Genowaies rested scarcely. ii. yeres in

quiet

quiete vnder the French kynges dominyon (Radelfo de la Noi beynge gouernoure) but there ſpryng vp a companye in the citee called the ſelew ſhip of the toũne, which betokened, that as the barell ſtaues of the toũne were perfectly ioyned, ſo were they knitte togethers in one wyll. And theſe wared ſo ſtoute, that they ſente ambaſſadours to the frenche kyng, requirynge (amongeſt other thinges) a change of theyr gouernour, whom they reputed to be an extortioner and a tyrranne. But they ſpedde not of theyr purpoſe.

The meane whyle the byſhop of Rome tempted an alteracion of the aſſate, in ſo muche that the byſhoppe of Vintimiglia came to the citee, to the entent to ſlea the gouernoure, and to make a commocion. And though he myſſ of his purpoſe, yet did the greate biſhops purpoſe proue at length. For Iano Fregoſo, with a certayne nounber of men ſent from the biſhoppes campe, entred the citee, without any reſiſtence thorough the gouernours cowardly flight. And beyng made Duke, forced the caſtel ſo ſore, that the caſtellaine for. 12000. duckates yelded it. Neuertheleſſe the Caſtell of Lanterne helde ſtyll the Frenche, and was beſieged of the Fregoſi. But the Adorni reſcued it; and by commyng of the frenche kynges armye by ſea, entred the Citee: 1513 Wherevpon the Fregoſi fledde, ſo that the aſſate returned frenche, and Antoniotto Adorno, by the kynges ſpeciall commiſſion was made gouernour.

In whiche office he continued but. 22. dayes. For aſſone as the frenche nauie was departed (whyche by reaſon of the great diſcomfiture that the french kyng had at Nouara, could tary no longer) the Fregoſi, with

ayde of

ayde of the kynge of Spaine, came so strongely to Genoa, that the Adorni with theyr parteners were layne to gene place, & than was Octauian Fregoso made Duke: so that wythin the space of one yeare, the estate of Genoa altered. iiii. tymes.

This newe Duke paied the Spaniardes, that had ayded him. 80000. crownes out of the common treasure, and made Andrea Doria capitaine of. iiii galleis, and than besieged the Castel of the Lanterne, which for the quantitee was excellent fayre and stronge. Neuertheless assoone as he had gotten it (by composicion paying 22000. duckates to the capitaine) incontinently he rased it to the earth.

The Adorni, with the Flischi than conspyred against the duke, and with a certaine noumber of men sodeinely entred into the citee: Where they were not onelye soughten with, and theyr men repulsed, but also they theim selfes taken prysoners. Wherupon the Duke, seeyng the instabilitee of his estate, to eschewe further inconuenience, sent ambassadours to the frenche king, and yelded the citee to hym: and sent hym. 2000. footemen, whych did him no small seruice in the battaile besydes Marigniano.

After the notable victorye whereof, this Octauian (beyng from the duke chaunged to gouernoure) wyth viii. other of the chiefest citesins, went to visite the frech kyng at Mylayne, and there sent hym. 80000. crownes towardes hys charges.

About this time Cortogoli a Turke, scoured the seas, and did muche harte to the Christians, whereof an armye was made out against him, vnder the leading

of the

of the archebishop Fregoso, with Andrea Doria, and others: who sailed into the coste of Barbarie, and found .v. foystes, and certaine galleis of Cortogolies vnarmed before Biserti, which they might haue burned or brought awaye, if they had not tended to muche to the spoyle. For that by reason of a sodeine tempest they were driuen to forsake the costes, & returne home with out ought doinge.

The Cardinall Sauli (a Genowaie borne) was vpon suspicion empoysoned by Leo than bishop of Rome, and by his parentes raunsomed at .25000. duckates: and yet for all that (it was thought) that determinate poyson was geuen hym in prison. For within a certayne space after his deliuerance he sickened, and in lesse than a yere dyed. 1517.

Poison that worketh not till a tyme.

The Moores of newe troubled the seas. Agaynste whom Andrea Doria went oute with .vi. galleis, gaue the on set on .ix. sayle of theyrs, whyche he discomfyted with sore feight, and toke .vi. of them. 1519.

All this while the faction of Fregosi ruled the citee vnder the frenche kynge. Wherefore the Adorni (who were than as banished men) armed .ix. galleis, thinking secretely to enter the citee, and to subuerte the estate. But they missed of theyr purpose. Neuertheles they ceased not to prouoke the emperour against Genoa, promisyng him large succours of theyr part: So that thorough theyr procurement, immediatlyafter the battaile of Bicocke (where the frenche campe was discomfited) the duke of Myllayne, the Marques of Pescara, the Signior Prospero Colonna, and the other imperiall capitaines, with .20000. men came before Genoa, and 1521.

by force wanne & sacked it, and takyng the gouernours Octauiã, with diuers others (whom they kepte as prisoners) after the departure of the armye, Antoniotto Adorno was made Duke. And so the cytee remayned imperyall. Adrian the.vi. elected bysshop passed that waye towardes rome: and the duke of Burbone wyth his bande came through to Genoa as he went to rescue Millaine than besieged of the frenche men.

1524

¶ But the frenche kyng shortly after passed the mountaines in his owne person, and not onely recouered all that he had lost in Lumbardy, Pauia excepted, but also gatte Sauona and Varagine in the ryuer of Genoa.

1525

Wherefore Don Hugo da Moncada (afterwardes Vice Re of Naples) issued out of genoa with.xv. saile, set.4000. men of the genowaies on land, thinkyng to gette Varagine, where he was mette with by Iocante Corso capitaine of the frenchemen, and the Genowaies beyng discomfited, hym selfe the Vice Re was taken prysoner. Shortly wherupon folowed the takyng of the french kyng at the battaile of Pauia, who in Maye after his taking was brought to Genoa, & from thense conueighed into Spayne.

¶ Than the bishop of rome with the Venetians entred in leage with the frenche kyng agaynst the emperour. And because the cytee rested imperyal, therfore was an armie of.37. galleys made, that besieged Genoa by sea, to the rescue wherof the emperour sent the Vice Re of Naples out of Spaine with.xvii. saile, who encountred with.vi. galleys of Andrea Doria (that than serued the leage agaynst the emperoure) and foughte together, in which feight Andrew and his men behaued them selues

1526

so valy

so valiauntly, that they sparpled the imperyal army a brode, and toke. ii. of their shyppes. For whyche valyaunt acte the emperour made hym admiral of his army and knight of his order, and shortly after in porto fino he toke. vii. galleis. iiii. of the citee, and. iii. of Spayne, so that the siege continewyng still, the citee suffered extreme famine. Wherfore partly by force Cæsar Frego 1527
so, with a bande of frenche men by land was receyued into the towne, and the citee delyuered vnto hym in the kynges name, without bloudde or spoyle (the duke Antoniotto Adorno beyng fledde into the castell) and than was Theodore Triulci Milanese made gouernoure therof. By whose time the Anion began amongest the citesins, for there had ben diuision of parties, fyrste the Guelfes & Ghibellines, than the nobles and commons, and the commons deuided in two, merchantes and artificers, and laste of all were the factions Adorni and Fregosi. So that as longe as these parties reygned, it was impossible the citee should prospere, seinge them dayly fall together by the eares as they dyd. 1528.

Finally they all agreed to extinguish these diuisions, and elected, 28. families to be al nobles, amõgest whom the offices should renne in common & chaunge without nampng any party, and so were they brought to accord that so many yeres before had continually contended.

Than the french kyng sente a notable armye vnder the leadyng of Mounser Lautrech, to the siege of Naples, and because it should be besieged by sea and land: therefore Andrea Doria, armed. vii. galleis, whereof he made his cousen Philippino doria captaine, and sente hym to Naples, where the Vice Re, wyth. vi. galleis ysued

sued out and fought with him, but Doria preuailed, and the Vice Re was slaine, & the Marques of Vasco with dyuers others taken prysoners.

Wherupon it seemed that the Frenche kynge wared vnkynd as well to the common wealth as vnto Andrea Doria. For first he suffred the citee of Sauona to be exempt from the subiection of Genoa, and furthermore to haue al maner of priuileges that genoa had with the custome of salte and other thynges, whyche at lengthe would be the destruction of Genoa.

And though the Genowaies made diuers complaintes herevpon, yet (as thoughe they were not regarded) no reformacion was had.

Than the french kyng had taken from Andrea Doria diuers of his prysoners, and amongest all others the prince of Orenge, and besides that had payed hym hys wages but very homely: so that whan Andrewe began to murmour against this, the king wrought meanes to haue had him slaine: whyche comyng to his knowlage caused hym to dyspose hym selfe otherwayes; so that whan the tyme of his wages was expired, he bare a white baner, declaryng that he was at libertee to serue whom he wolde, and than after certaine practises with his prisoners, the Marques of Vasco and Ascanio Colonna, he became the emperours man, and was made prince of Melfi by reason whereof the citee began also to be moued against the kyng, remembryng his ingratitude. So that finally by meanes of Andrea Doria the French kings officers were licenced, his galleis by sea put to flighte, and some taken, & the citee restored to hir ancient libertee. Notwithstandyng that many thought Andrea Doria wolde haue taken the rule of it vnto him selfe.

Here-

Hereupon a counsaile was called, a new reformacion established, a duke. viii. gouernours and. viii. proctours chosen according to the order that yet remayneth: and the citee euer sens continued in peace, with increase of so muche wealth and quietnesse, that at this howre she may be reckened one of the happyest and richest citees of Europe.

¶ And albeit that some sterrynges haue bene sens that time for alteracion of the estate, as the assaulte that the Conte Guido Rangone made with. 10000. mē of the frenche kinges brought out of Lumbardy, and the conspiracy that the Conti di Fliſco made now of late (in the which he him selfe was drowned, & Jannetyne Doria slaine) yet hath the citee persewered nowe their. 26. peres in one estate, much through the great wisedom of Andrea Doria, who (refusing the dominion of it, whan he might without difficultee haue taken it vppon him) hath not only restored it to the perfect liberties of a common welth, but also with his notable seruice in themperours affaires (as in his viages to Tunise & Algier in the rescue of Coron besieged of the Turkes, in defence of Barbaroſſa his armies the yeres. 37. and. 38. and in oppressyng of the great corsales or pirattes by sea (hath so mainteigned the imperyall fauour towardes the genowaies, that no man is able to hurt them at this day. For though in dede they be not ỳ emperours subiectes, yet whan any estate shoulde happen to moue warre against them, it should wel appere, that he tendreth them no lesse than as the dearest subiectes he hathe. For the which they likewise at all times haue and yet doe serue him for his money to the vttermoſt of their powers.

1536. 1546 Andrea Doria.

¶ The description of Myllayne.

AMongest other peticuler astates of Italye, the Duchie of Myllayne hathe been one the most notable. ¶ For while the house of Visconti reigned, the same valiauntly maintened warres of great importaunce against most puissaunt princes and powers. And for the interest thereof, the notablest warrs of ourr dates haue happned betweene the emperour and the french kyng: in so much that Fraunces the fyrst of that name, feighting before Pauia against the imperyal armye (leadd by the Marques of Pescara, and the duke of Bourbone) was taken prisoner, and conueighed into Spaine: where for his raunsome, after a yeres imprisonmēt, he was faine to pledge his two sonnes, and consequently to marie the emperours sister, with other couenauntes to longe to reherse.

And no meruaile, though these two most mighty princes of Christendome so much contended for this oneiye astate. For thoughe in name (beynge but a Duchie) it should not seeme great, yet in verye deede bothe for the wealth of the countrey, and for the quantitee, the thing hathe been of as greate reputacion as some realmes of Europe. Oute of doubte there haue been some Dukes of Myllaine muche greatter in territorie, wealthier in reuenewes and treasure, more puissaūt in warres, and finally more honourable in peace, than diuers of theim that had kyngly tytles.

¶ As for the richesse and beautie of the countrey, I am

a feare to speake of, least to hym that neuer sawe it, I
shoulde seeme ouerlarge in the due prayspnge of it, and
least vnto him againe that hath practised there, I shuld
seeme vnwise to treate of that, that myne knowlage is not
able woorthyly to set foorthe. Neuertheleſſe betweene
feare and shame this much woull I saye, that furthe an
other peece of ground for beautiful cities and townes,
for goodly riuers, fieldes and pasture, and for plentye
of flesshe, foule, freshe waterfishe, graine, wine and frui-
tes, is not to be found againe in al our familiar regiõs.
I thinke the emperour, that now is lord therof, woul
confesse, that he draweth more mony yerely to his purse
out of that onelye estate, that oute of some of hys real-
mes. And yet his Millanese dominyon is not halfe so
much at this present, as that that diuers dukes of My-
laine haue had. For wheras the emperour, besydes the
citie of Millaine hathe nowe. vii. or. viii. cities, as Pa-
uia, Lodi, Cremona, Alexandria, Mercelli, Nouara,
and Como: Dukes of Millaine haue had, some. xx. and
some. xxx. Cities, and vpwardes. Yea and some so
great, that they haue aspyred to the dominion ouer all
Italie: as in the bricke history folowyng more plainely
appeareth. Neuertheleſſe he that nowe shall happen
to see the companye of noble men and gentilmen, that
ar in waner continually attendaunte on the emperours
lieutenaunte or deputie in Millaine, shall saye, that the
same representeth rather the court of some puissaunte
kynge, than the traine of a deputie.
And I thinke verily, that Don Ferrando Gonzaga,
now lieutenant there, rideth many times more hono-
rably accompanied, and with a greater presence of ma-

gistie,

Wyues of Millaine.

gilles, than the emperour him selfe doeth in Germany ¶ The like whereof with rather the moze is to be sayde of the Mylanese gentilwomen, who in sumptuouse apparaile may compare with the best: specially in the ornamentes of theyr Charlottes, with couerings of cloth of golde, of velnettes, of silkes, and a thousande sortes of embroideries. There is almoste no craftesmans wyfe in Myllayne, that hathe not hir gowne of silke, and hir chayne of Golde. A thyng that should seeme rather meruailouse than credyble. But the craftesmen there are so excellent in theyr doynges, and the women so experte in silke wozkes, that it is no wonder though their gayne grow to the biyng of gaye geare.

Myllayne Situate.

¶ Finally the estee of Myllaine standyng in the herte of the pleasauntest and fayrest plaine of all Christendom, is serued of all delectable and necessarye thynges that are to be desyred for mans sustentacion. Honourable for the courte, gallaunt for gentilmen, herbozoughe for souldiours, delicate for dames, riche for merchauntes, and wealthy for artificers. But for notable or sumptuouse buildynges, it maye not be compared with Venice, Rome, or Florence. For all be it, the houses be great and fayre within, yet outwardly it is nothing of that beautie and pompe, that those other cities bee: by reason that for the most part the Mylanese buildynge is all of bricke, because harde stone and marble is not to be had by a great waye of.

¶ Neuertheleste the Domo of Myllaine (beynge theyr Cathedrall church) is one of the rarest wozkes of ours time, built all of fine marble, so well grauen and cutte, that the wozkemanshyp is wonder. But it is of so

vnmea-

vnmeasurable greatnesse, that most men doubte, whether euer it would be finished or not: thoughe it haue many thousande duckates of yearely reuenew in good land towardes the contynuaunce, and a noumber of workemen dayly labouryng theron.

¶ But what speake I of the churche, the castell of Myllaine being so neere, which in mine opinion is the worthiest and strongeste of all Europe. For it hathe warde within warde, fortresse diuided from fortresse, that one may holde against an other, walles of endeles strength and large dyches wel watered, as fayre buylte ouer all as nedeth to bee, and so well fortified, that withoute fawyne it is impregnable. And this concernynge the countrey, citee and people of Myllaine in general, shal suffice. Castel of Myllaine

¶ The beginnyng and successe of the Date of Myllayne.

AS Liuie and diuers other authors write, the yere before the comynge of Christe. 259. from the edyfication of Rome. 460. and from the beginning of the worlde, 4360. in the tyme of Assuere, otherwyse called Cirus and Longimanus, sonne of Xerses, and nephewe to Dario kynges of Perside: The citee of Myllaine was rather augmented than newly buylte by certaine frenchmen called Senoni or Insubrii, people of low Britaine, now called Semans, where likewyse is a towne called Myllayne. These were the frenchemen that fyrst passed the mountaines, and setled them selfes in Lumbardy, that afterwardes went vnder the leas-

by kyng Attila, called of the Italians Flagellum dei. Attila
¶ And albeit that it was after reedified, yet by Totila and the emperour Justinians capitaines, it was for the more parte agayne and againe destroied. And by the Lumbards also it was many times sore vexed. But last 1162
of all Galuano, (who beyng taken prisoner by the emperour Barbarossa, by escape was returned) seing afterwards the same Federico occupied with the french warres, reedified it of new, and dyenge without issue, left it to his citesins: who (with fauoure of their neyghbours) gouerned the same as a common wealthe, the space of. 52. yeres, tyl Giouanni Torrigiani, a principal citesin vsurped the dominion by force. Giouanni Torrigiani. Tranny

¶ This Torrigiani (as he that was cruell and desyrouse to make his astate durable) feigned daylye newe crimes and offences against his citesins, and specialtys against the Visconti, to ridde them out of the way. And though he cloked his cruelitee with the best colour of iustice that he could imagine outwardesly, so that no man for feare durste withstande him, yet God takynge vengeaunce suffered hym to be discomfited, and slayne before Parma, where he had ben two yeres generall of the emperours army against the bysshop of Rome.

¶ Newe vpon the death of Torrigiani, the Milanese began to contend amongest them selfes, so longe, that at last Martino Torrigiani toke the dominion vpon him, and kept it two yeres, in whych time beyng aduertised, that Ezelino, lord of verona, with many banished Milanese came in armes against him, he issued out into the field with his power, fought with Ezelino, harte, and toke him prisoner, and so beyng victorious, and of the Martino Torrigiani.

age of.80.yeres,dyed at Souzino.

Phillippo Torrig

¶After hym succeded his sonne Phillippo,who beynge but weake herted and grosse witted,made neuertheles warre against the Cremonese,sacked Como,toke Bergamo and Nouara,and finally expulsed the familye of Tornielli. After whych enterprises he died,leauynge the estate to his sonne Napoleone,that after happened to be slayne . Unto whom succeded hys sonne,named Philippo,that by meane of the archebyshoppe Ottone Visconti was afterwardes expulsed.

Napoleone

Visconti

It is to be vnderstand,that before the time of Giouanni Torrigiani , the house of Visconti was equall wyth the best of Millaine:beyng descended of the erles of Angiera,that before time had ben lordes of Millayne: for the name of Visconti,was taken of Ottone Sonne of Elipandro,who by reason he was lord both of Angiera and of Millaine called him selfe Visconte,as who sholde say,twyse Erle.

Ottone

This Ottone being gone in a croisy with other princes to conquere the holye lande,fought there with a Sarasine hande to hande,and ouercame him,and because the Sarasins for his enseigne caried on his creest an adder, wyth a lyttel childe in his mouthe, Ottone as a perpetual memory of his victory, vsed the same euer after in hys armes.

¶But now to come to the purpose,aboute the yeare of grace.1262.there remained.iiii.brotherne of the house of Visconti on line,that is to wete, Ouone before named, Vberto ,Iacopo,and Gasparo,sonnes of Vberto de Visconti.

Ottone Visconti

¶This Ottone(the archebyshop being than a banished man)

man)through helpe of his kinsman Gregory bysshop of Rome, by force expulsed oute of Millayne the foresayde Philippo Torrigiani, sonne of Napoleone, and finally became lorde therof: beynge afterwardes confyrmed in the same as vicare of the empire.

Within two yeres after Ramõdo Torrigiani bisshop of Como, and Patriarke of Aquileia, retourned with a great army to dryue Ottone out, and did much hurt in the Milanese territorye. But at laste he receiued a sore discomfiture by Ottone, throughe helpe of the familyes of Duarosi & Palauisini, whyche houses together wyth those of Lampugnani (descended of the Gotti) and those of Pietrasanta (comen out of Tuscane) those of Porri, of Caimi, of Bossi, of Parliani, & of Triulsi, were al at that time most noble and puissaunt in Millaine.

After the death of Ottone, his brother Iacopo hauing a sonne named Tibaldo, and Tibaldo, a sonne named Matteo (who for his lucky courage and deedes was surnamed Magno) the reputacyon and state of the Visconti beganne to grow more and more. For this Matteo gat Alexandria, Pauia, Tortona, and many other townes. Matteo Magno.

Finally this Matteo putting Pietro Visconti in pryson (whom after he deliuered) beynge aduertised, howe the same Pietro conspyred with the chiefe of the Torrigiani, to dryue him out of his astate, & mistrusting his owne power to defẽd the same, committed the whole to Alberto Scoto, lord of Piacenza: and fledde him selfe into the marisches of the lake of Garda, where he lyued longe time of his onely labour of fishynge. He had. iiii. sonnes by his wife Bona Cosa, the fyrst named Gala-

azo(so called because in the nyghte of his birthe the cockes crowed moze than they were wonte)the seconde Giouanni,the.iii.Stefano,and the.iiii.Lucchino.

Galeazo. This Galeazo succeded his father, and goynge afterwardes with Henry the emperour to Rome,was there made capitaine of the lighte horsemen,and aboute that tyme begat two sonnes,the one called Azone, and the other Marco.His courage was so great,that whan the emperoure Lodouico di Baniera required a certayne summe of money of the Milanese,Galeazo withstode it. Upon displeasure whereof Lodouico toke hym prysoner,and banysshed his sonnes Azone and Marco.

But at lengthe, at the instaunce of Castruccio Lucchese,Galeazo was deliuered. And finallye beynge in company of the same Castruccio at the siege of Pistoia sickened and dyed in the towne of Pestia.

Azone. After whose death Azone and Marco(for a certayne summe of money paied before hād) obteined of the emperour Lodouico the restitucion of the state of Mylayne. And so Azone as elder brother haupnge the dominion, Marco in hys name gatte the cities of Lucca, and his vncle Lucchino the cities of Bergamo,Brescia and Pauia:wherby Azone became great, and so hyghe of stomacke,that remembrynge the iniuries doen to him by the emperour Lodouico(what he woldr haue passed throughe Mylayne (as lorde of all Italye)he closed the gates against him:refusyng to accepte him for his better. Therefore not without good cause was he bothe feared and estemed,specialye for hys approued valyantnesse:for beyng sent of his father to helpe Castruccio,he fought with the florentines neere to Fucecchio,

discom-

discomfited, and pursued them euen to the gates of Florence: and laying siege to the citee, remayned there .xl. del certayne daies, for no man durst issue out to meddle with him. Whiche was the fyrste enterprise of the Uisconti against the Florentines.

¶ After whyche Azone, throughe helpe of Castruccio, became lord of the Alco Pascio, and of Bologna: and as some say, beyng in the campe on a daye, after he had broken his fast: puttinge his sallet on his head (whyche before had lien on the earthe) there issued out an adder, that glyded downe alongest his face, without dooynge hym anye hurte: whereof it folowed, that the Uisconti bred the adder in theyr armes. And thoughe it so may wel be true, yet this seconde opinion of the adder dooth not so much satisfie me as the fyrst.

¶ Finally Azone dyeng without issue, his vncles Lucchino and Giouanni rested in his place, and were confirmed in the estate by Benedetto the .xi. bishop of rome as vicares of the Churche: with condicyon, that after the death of the Emperour Lodouico di Bauiera, the state of Myllaine shoulde be holden of the dominion of the churche. Lucchino

Lucchino as elder brother, take vpon him to gouerne, and proued a verey righteous and mercyfull man. He granted recōcilement vnto many of the citeins before tyme confyned by Azone; and buylded manye deuoute places in Myllayne. He gatte manye townes parte by force and part with loue, and in maner renued the walles of Bergamo at hys owne coste. He reformed many thynges in Bressa, and so finally dyed.

After him his brother Giouanni succeded, who incon- Giouanni.

tinently

tinently called home Mattes, Bernabo, and Galeazo, sonnes of hys brother Stefano, before time banysshed by Lucchino.

¶ And albeit, that this Giouanni was an archebishop, yet being more geuen to armes than to the church, thorough the valiantnesse of Galeazo he gat Parma, Lodi, Cremona, Bergamo, Genoua, Sauona, and manye other townes: and finally died, leauyng his estate deuyded betwene Bernabo and Galeazo.

Bernabo

¶ This Bernabo held warre longe tyme with the bysshoppe of Rome for the citee of Bologna, that together wyth Genoua had rebelled agaynste hym: and finallye toke for Bologna a great summe of money, and forbare Genoa, because it had been before redemed at hys handes for the summe of. 600000. duckates. But some saye, he was enforced to lette it alone, by reason that in one selfe tyme he was troubled of the Romish legate, of Philippino di Gonzaga, and of Cane della Scala, for the thynges of Brella, where he had been ones discomfited.

He had no wyfe one of the daughters of Mastino della Scala, a woman that for hir vnreasonable pryde was surnamed. La Reina, the Queene. And had by hir. 14. children, whereof. viii. were sonnes. To Lodouico the eldest he gaue the citee of Cremona. To Carlo, Parma: To Rodolfo, Bergamo, and to Mastino, Lodi.

¶ The rest beyng daughters he maried on this wyse.

La Verde, vnto Leupoldo duke of Austria, graundfather to the emperour Federico the thyrde.

La Taddea, to the Duke of Bauiera.

La Va-

La Valentina, to Peter kyng of Cypzus.
La Catherina, to Giangaleazo Milconti his nephew
L'Antonia, to Federico kyng of Sicilia
La Maddalena, to the duke of Bauiera againe.
L'Agnesa, to Francesco Gonzaga.
La Lisabetta, to Ernesco duke of Monaca in Bauiera.

L'Angiolella, to Federico the younger: and La Lucia to Lodouico Duke of Angiers, eldest sonne to the Frenche kyng. And after to Baldasar Marques of Pisna, and finally to Edmond, Erle of Kente, sonne to the kyng of Englande. And with the maryage of euerie of these daughters he paied an. 100000. duckats. Besides these he had. iiii. bastarde daughters, Bernarda, Ricciarda, Lisabetta, and Margherita. And fiue bastarde sonnes, Ambzosio, Nestoze, Lancilotto, Galeotto, and Sagramozo.

On the other syde Galeazo begatte on his wyfe Bisanca, daughter of Amone duke of Sauoie, a sonne named Giangaleazo, and a daughter named La Violante whiche afterwardes was maryed to Lionell Duke of Clarence, and sonne to the kynge of Englande. At the sumptuouse feaste of whose maryage Petrarcha happned to be pzesente. How be it, some haue wzitten, that she was maried to the Frenche kynges sonne, with the dower of an. 100000. crownes. But how so euer it were, his husband lyued not passyng fiue monethes after the mariage, and shortlye therevpon the father Galeazo also dyed. Galeazo. Giangaleazo.

After whose death his sonne Giangaleazo growen to sufficiēt yeres diuided the state with his uncle Bernabo

on this maner. He kepte to hym selfe Pauia, Tortona, Alexandria, Nouara, and the other townes neere vnto the Alpes, with the one halfe of Millayne: and gaue vnto Bernabo Parma, Piacenza, Cremona, Lodi, Cremona, Bergamo, Como, and the other halfe of Millayne, with this aduauntage: that for as muche as Bernabo was the more auncient, he shoulde dwell in Millayne, and Giangaleazo in Pauia. Thus beynge agreed after a certaine time Giãgaleazo was aduertised by his wyfe, how Bernabo hir father & hys vncle, had syuers tymes sought his death, to ridde hym oute of the state: so that Giangaleazo incontinently determined to preuente hym, and goyng vnto Millaine vnder pretence of pastime or of some other busynesse, Bernabo (to honour hym the more) issued out against him, and so was taken died in prison, and parte of his sonnes slayne, parte banyshed. Whyche acte onely excepted (thoughe it was not yet all agaynst reason) this Giangaleazo in all hys doynges was accompted so worthy, noble, and valiaunt a prince, that of the people he was called. Il Conte di Virtu, that is to say, The Erle of vertue. For he was not onely beautifull of personage, but also learned, eloquent, wise, hardy, & liberal And was the first that euer was inuested duke of Millayne, payeng therefore to the emperour Vinceslao an. 100000. duckates. After the obteinyng of this honour he encreased his estate by the getting of Verona, Vicenza, Padoa, and Bologna.

He discomfited the armies of the leage made betweene the Florentines & Bolognese with other their confederates at Casalecchio, & brought the Florentines at length to that sayenge, that had he not died the rather, they

they muſt nedes haue ȳelded to bene his ſubiectes. He ouercame Antonino della Scala, and buylded the fayre palayce in Pauia, with that goodly librarye, that yet is ſeen there, walled the parke aboute, beynge of a great circuite, and edified the Charterhouſe, that to this houre amongeſt the beautiful buildynges of the worlde, may be rekened one of the rareſt.

He brought Italy into ſuch feare, that the Piſani, the Seneſi, the Perugini, the Aſceſiani, and the Lucheſi willyngly became his men, ſo that he founde hym ſelfe lord ouer .29. cities, and thought to haue bene kynge of Italy, if death had not ſo ſone taken hym.

He had two wiues, the one called Liſabetta, doughter to the kyng of Boeme, by whome he had a doughter named la Valentina, maried afterwardes to the duke of Orliens, with the dower of the Eriedome of Aſte, that hath ben cauſe of no ſmall trouble in Italye: and the otherwife named Caterina de Viſconti, by whom he had two ſonnes Giouanni, and Philippo Maria. He had one baſtarde called Gabriello, who afterwardes ſolde Piſa to the Florentines.

Finally this notable prince at Marignano dyed: and 1402
accordyng to his owne order was from thenſe caried to the ſayd Charterhouſe beſides Pauia, and there buried. Than ſucceded in the eſtate Gianmatia the eldeſte ſonne, whoſe dealinges were ſo greuouſe to the Milaneſe, without any their deſeruing, that hearynge maſſe on a day in the churche, through the furye of the people and of his owne men together he was ſlayne, firſt cauſyng his mother to die in priſon, for ofte warnyng him of that that happened in dede. Giouanni Maria.

He was wonte to say many times (in excusyng of his errours) that in a greate house it was necessarye there should growe men of diuers sortes, and that he therfore vsed the cõtrary of his fathers doinges, so that throughe his crueltee and his death together, many citees rebelled, in such wise that the Milanese were constreigned to cal the sonnes of Bernabo to the Douchy, who enioied the same bargl that Philippo maria recouered the dominion, and driuing them out mette with one of theim called Nestore in a skirmish, and slewe hym.

1433

This philippo was first lord of Pauia, and had maried Beatrice the doughter, or (as other say) sometime wife of Fazino Cane della Scala: for none intent but because she was enheritour of many fayre lordeshippes beyonde the Po, and had also very much money.

Philippo Maria

By meane wherof sleayng Crabrino lord of Verona he gat that citee to hym selfe.

He was constreigned to yelde Bologna, Furli, and Imola to the byshop of Rome. Neuertheless he gatte Genoa, though afterwardes he lost it agayne.

He lykewise toke Brescia, whych beyng recouered against him by the venetians, caused betwene them very longe and cruell warre. Wherein on the Venetian side were capitains Frãcesco Carmignuola, Giouãni Malauolta, Gianfrancesco Gonzaga, and Nanni Strozzi, a Florẽtine knyght. And on the side of Philippo agaynst the venetians were Francesco Sforza, Agnola da Pergolette, the one and other Nicolo Guerriero e Piccinino, & one Fierauãte da Perugia, with the helpe also of Alfonso kynge of Naples, who beynge before tyme brought prisoner to Philippo by the genowaies, and by

hym

hym restored to lybertee: lyke a faythfull friende (for a great whyle after) succoured hym in al his businesse.

¶ Thus whan Philippo had finyshed the enterprise against the Venetians, and by meane of those his captaines gotten Placenza, Como and Lodi, he made the Marques of Monferrato so afearde of hym, that wyllyngly he yelded vnto Philippo's hand Vercelli, Alexandria, and Aste. And Nicolo da Este of Ferrara came to visite hym, renderinge Parma, that before had ben taken from Ottone, and knowlageynge hym selfe to holde the citee of Reggio in fee of Philippo.

The citee of Florence fearyng the power of this man, entred in leage with the Venetians, whose two armies vnited togethers were foughten withall by certaine of Philippo's capitaynes, in the Countie of Farenza, and there ouercomen.

¶ Notwithstanding that the same victory was of much lesse importaunce, than that which the noble florentine Cosmo di Medici obteigned in the plaine of Anghiari against the armye of Philippo, led by Nicolo Piccinino, towardes the Florentine damage: for the whyche victory Cosmo at hys retourne to Florence was called father of hys countrey.

¶ But for all that those warres had neuer ende as long as Philippo lyued: who finally fell oute wyth the forenamed Alfonse kynge of Naples, and by force restored the Queene Gionanna to hir possession.

He receiued into Myllayne Martine the .v. bysshoppe of Rome, as he retourned from the counsayle of Constance: and maried his daughter Bianca vnto Francesco Sforza,

¶ Finally findyng hym selfe fallen in great aduersities what throughe blindenesse that toke hym in his age, what through the losse of Genoa, and what through the discomfiture of his armye at Casale Maggiore: In folowyng the victory wherof the Venetians had alreadie passed the riuer of Adda, and scoured the countrey euen to the gates of Mylaine, he at laste a litteli before his death, bequethed his estate by testamente vnto the kyng Alfonso, as to one the dereste friend he had.

Philippo Maria described.

¶ This Philippo had ben a prince of a subtill nature, wittie, a louer of trauayle, couetouse to learne and to haue, and yet liberal in geuyng, easie of pardoning, but suspitiouse out of measure, & so lighte of credence, that many tymes he wrongefully ridde out of the waye the deereste friendes he had. Wherof it folowed, that in his moste businesse he founde him selfe vtterly habandoned, leauyng the state of Mylaine in maner naked.

For the duke of Orliens in the righte of his wyfe Valentina, daughter of Giangaleazo, enforced hym selfe to atteine the possession, whych the emperour Federico for his parte in tytell of the empyre denyed.

Testament broken

But Francesco Sforza, as sonne in lawe of the deade Philippo, withstode them bothe, insomuche that throughe this rumour the Mylanese rent the testament in peeces, and toke on them theyr libertee, electynge.xii. men to diuise order for the gouernaunce of theyr cities, wherevnto they had the helpe of Carlo Gonzaga, who beyng lately departed from the campe of Sforza, was present in Mylaine the same time. And so the new officers beyng ordeyned, there were manye of those nobles slaine, that were knowen fauourable to ye part of Francesco

cesco, whose power & courage the Mylanese feared muche the more thã the puissance of france, or of themperour. Francesco Sforza

¶ The father of this Francesco, named Mutio, was borne besydes the castel of Cotignuola: and folowyng the warres fyrst serued the souldiours with caryng of woode and water. Than gettyng a litle with sackynge here and there, became so strong and hardy, that many tymes he would by force take the bootie from his owne companions, and therfore was called Sforza. Mutio father to Francesco Sforza

¶ From whiche base condicion he beganne to ware an aduenturer, and to feight on horsbacke, so that finallye he became a capitaine: and in short space was iudged equal vnto Braccio Montone, the valiauntest and honourablest general of those dayes.

¶ But at last (after he had long time serued the Quene Giouanna against kinge Alfonse in the Realme of Naples, and in other places dooen manye notable enterprises) couetyng to saue a lakey in the riuer of Pescara, he was drowned hym selfe, and couldc neuer after be found nor heard of.

¶ Than was this Francesco his sonne fyrste waged of the forenamed Quene, and after the Venetians, than of Philippo, and after Philippo of the Mylanese agaynste the Venetians, and lastlye of the Venetians agaynste the Mylanese. In all whyche doynges as well in the realme, as in Lumbardie, he euermore shewed great proufes of his worthinesse: and at last with helpe of the Venetians came against Myllaine and besieged it. Insomuche that after longe resistence, constreigned with hunger, & deceyued of theyr promysed helpe from the Venetians, the Mylanese (fyrste sleayng the Venetian

tian ambassadour) accepted Francesco for theyr prince Who not longe after (stablishyng the thynges of Mylaine at his pleasure) made warre to king Alfonso, and to the Venetians bothe: in whiche warres he was serued of these valiaant capitaines, Tiberio Brandolino, Nicolo Guerriero, Dolce dell' Anguillara, Carlo di Cãpo Basso, and Jacopo Piccinino, whyche Jacopo was promised to haue to wife his daughter Drusiana, before time maried vnto Iano Fregoso duke of genoa How be it, the duke Francesco afterwardes for suspycion caused this Jacopo to be slayne.

¶ Aboutes the same time, whilest Eugenio bishoppe of rome was occupied at the counsaile of Basile, Francesco (as hys enemie) attempted to take the state of Marca from hym. And there kept warre longe time wyth kyng Alfonso, whom the sayde byshop had sent thither against him: where they saye Francesco was defied by Nicolo Piccinino, & beynge chalenged to feight hande to hande, would in no wyse accepte it. What notwythstandyng he was vndoubtedly a worthy man of armes, the most happie and valiaunte of all other in hys tyme. For in those.xxi. yeares, that he reigned Duke, he in maner extinguished the sedition of the parties of Guelfi and Ghibellini, insomuche that the Genowayes fallen in dyscorde amongest theim selfes, seeyng the good gouernaunce of this duke Francesco, with the louing entertainemẽt of his subiects, willingly embraced him for theyr lorde. He loued muche Cosmo di Medici of Florence, by whose helpe and counsaile it is thought he prospered not a litel in the beginnyng of his astate: seeyng that Cosmo (assoone as he was made Duke) sent

ambassa-

ambassadours vnto hym, reioysyng at his prosperitee. For the frendshyp wherof francesco afterwardes succoured Piero di Medici in the cõiuracion made against him by Luca Pitti, whom Borso duke of Ferrara fauoured.

¶ This Duke francesco reedyfied the little forte in the Castell of Myllayne, called Giove, and builded manye deuoute places. Neuertheless in hys age he was somewhat blamed for hys disordinate loue to women, more than hys astate, hys age, and hys passed vertues dyd allowe.

Finally finisshyng the course of this lyfe, he lefte (by his wife Bianca) .v. sons Galeazo, Lodouico, surnamed Moro Ascanio, Philippo, Ottauiano, and a daughter named Hippolita Maria that afterwardes, was maryed to Alfonso duke of Calabria.

Galeazo. When Galeazo beyng in the warres in france wyth kynge Lewys, heard of his fathers death, he retourned to Myllayne: where he was receyued as duke. And all be it, he was expert in armes, yet dyd he neuer shewe any honourable prouffe thereof: as he that entred into an astate ouermuche wealthye and quyete. And because he had so muche felicitee, that he thought it impossible euer to decay, he set so little by men and by vertue, that many of his owne citesins and seruauntes hated hym. And they whom he fauoured most conspyred his death and slewe hym. The principall whereof was one Giauãdrea Lampugnano that with his owne hãdes fyrst strake him, in the churche of saincte Stephen, when Galeazo had his garde of Halberders rounde about hym. Whyche Halberders incontinentlye slewe

the same Glauādrea(that sleeping through the women happened to be tangled by the spurre)muche after the maner as he was serued,that slew Alzuball in spaine.

¶And albeit that this Galeazo through his delycate or wanton life, became odiouse & vnworthy to theim that delited in chiualry,and also hated of them that had the fairest wifes and doughters,with whom he wold be familiar (as the same went) yet the commons lamented him a great deale more than many of his predecessours because that duryng his life they remaigned in peace.

For in peace whan the souldiour doeth begge,the plow prospereth:and in warre whan the plow man is fledde, the souldiour plaieth the swyne.

Giouanni. ¶These thinges beyng thus happened,Giauanni,the sonne of Galeazo,thā but a child,succeded in the astate, vnder the gouernance of his mother Bona,and of one Cecco, that longe tyme had bene broughte vp in that house.

This Cecco was borne in Calabria of very low degree. But through his wisedome he became noble and of so good credite with Francesco Sforza,that he gouerned most thinges in Mylaine.

¶Finally,whan Galeazo was deade,to the entent that Giouanni might the more quietly enioy the dominyon he sent away his other brethern into exile. But at lēgth Lodouico Moro,vncle to Giouanni was reuoked by the people:and incontinently vpon his retoure Cecco beheaded,and Bianca the mother exiled.

¶After whych time Giouanni remayned in the astate aboute .xii.yeares. But his prouse was so simple, that in maner by force he committed the rule of all thynges

to Lodo-

to Lodouico. By whose meanes (as he that was not yet contented) some say Giouanni at length was poysoned, and dyed in Pauia, leauinge issue a sonne called frãcesco Sforza begotten on his wife Isabella doughter of Alfonso kyng of Napies.

Now incontinently as Giouanni was deade, this Lodouico Moro both of the people, and also by consent of the emperour Maximilian was proclaymed Duke, and shortly after maried his neece Bianca, doughter of hys brother Galeazo vnto the same Maximilian, takynge also vpon him the protection of his nephewe the yonge Francesco Sforza, and of his mother Isabella. Lodouicus Moro.

Than maried he Beatrice the doughter of Ercole duke of Ferrara, and begat on hir Francesco Sforza, with a secounde sonne, in whose birth the mother dyed.

¶ This Moro was a wittie man, of verey good disposicion, and one that delyted muche in the administracion of iustice, in peinteyng, and in cunnyng men.

¶ In the begynnynge of his estate he entred in amytee with the Florentines, the Senese, the Bolognese, with Ercole da Este, with the Marques of Mantua, wyth Lewis king of fraunce, and with Alfonso kyng of Naples. But lyke as he was easy to enter into frendeshyp, so for a trifle wold he sodeinly breake with the best of theim.

He helped Charles Duke of Sauoy against Lodouico Marques of Saluzzo, and confined hys brother the Cardinall Ascanio, because in Ferrara he had practysed dyuers new thynges agaynst him.

He toke Boccalino by siege, that had rebelled agaynst the Romayne churche, and therby gratyfied the bysshop of Rome.

¶ With hys great polycy he recouered Genoa, that be-
fore had rebelled agaynſte hym. He founde the meanes
to bryng Charles the. viii. frenche kyng into Italye, to
expulſe kyng Alfonſo out of Naples, becauſe he had be-
fore taken him for hys enemy, for ſekyng to maintey gne
the eſtate of Giouanni the ſonne of Galeazo, agaynſte
hym.

¶ This comyng of the frenche kynge not only anneied
Alfonſo, but alſo troubled all Italy.

Finally he made warre againſt the Venetians, whych
dured til that after the death of kynge Charles, Lewys
ſucceded in the realme of fraunce, who hated ſo muche
this duke Moro, that beynge entred in leage wyth the
Venetians: Moro was conſtreigned to flee into Al-
maine, where he remained whyleſt the frenchemen toke
Millaine, and the venetians Cremona & Gieradadda
How be it not long after the frenchmen thrꝛough their
yll gouernaunce were dꝛiuen from Millaine, & Lodo-
uico reuoked home out of Douchelande, who after his
arrꝛuall, takyng Nouara, and trauaylinge to chace the
frenche men out of Italy, was betraied of the Douche-
men, and bothe he and Aſcano taken and ledde into
fraunce, where finally he dyed.

Francesco

This Lodouico reigning in his dominion, vſed to an-
ſwere them that coũſailed him to encreaſe his treaſure
with tares and tallages, that the office of a good ſhepe-
herde was to ſhere his ſheepe, and not to flaie them.

¶ Thus Lodouico Moro taken and deade, as is be-
forſayd, his ſonne Francesco ſhortly after the battaile
of Rauẽna, being thã but tender of yeres, was eſtabli-
ſhed duke of Millayne by the emperours meanes, and

continued

continued in the estate til the coming of Fraunces the frenche kynge into Italye, who wyth the helpe of the Venetians chaced him away, and gatte the state of Millaine by force, leauynge Mounser de Lautrech gouernour of the same, so that Francesco Sforza withdrew hym to Trent, and there remained til the French men through their tyranny and yll gouernaunce, became so hated of the Milanese, that at lengthe they were chased away, and Francesco reuoked home: though in effecte he enioyed it not longe. For the frenche kynge shortlye after with a great power came in his owne person into Italy, & so chaced Francesco againe oute of the state of Millaine, and prospered much in his warres there, vntyl the iourney of Pauia, where he with manye of his nobles were taken prisoners. After whych discomfiture francesco Sforza, by the emperours fauour was ones againe restored to the douchie of Millaine, & continued in the same til through enuye and malyce of some pikethanks, the emperour was vniustly persuaded, that the sayd Francesco was not so faithful towardes hys maiestee, as his goodnesse had merited, so that the emperour conceiuyng an vnkyndenesse & a mistrust in him, constreigned him by force not onely to habandone Millaine, but also for his sauegarde to flee into the castell, whych after a verye longe siege he yelded vnto the imperialles, to depart freely with bagge and baggage.

And so (beyng letted of the imperialles from goinge to Como where he entended to sodgiourne, tyl he might clere his innocency towardes the emperour) in maner halfe desperate, he agreed with the french men: & drewe to the campe of the leage, that than was made againste

the Emperoure.

Finally he went vnto Cremona, till after the tabyng of saincte Polo, the Frenchemens doynges in Italye went all to wracke. Wherfore seeing the emperour Charles the.v. that nowe is come to Bologna to bee crowned, he went simplye thither vnto hym: and there submittyng hym selfe with iust excuses, recouered hys magistees fauour, with restitucion of the astate of Millaine, vpon these condicions folowyng: That the Duke shoulde marye the emperours neece, daughter of the kyng of Denmarke and of the emperours syster: that he should paye the emperoure nine hundreth thousande ducates in tenne yeres by equal porcions: And finally, that dyynge without issue, he should leaue his astate of inheritaunce to the emperoure.

Incontinently vpō which agrement Alexandro Bentiuogli, as vice Duke, with diuers other officers, were sent to Millaine, to leuey the fyrste paymente of this money, whyche was easilye gathered vp. For the Millanese coueryng the retourne of theyr duke (whome for his gentil & temperate gouernance in tymes paste they hertely loued) sticked not to straigne them selfes for his relefe, in suche wyse, that thoughe theyr customes and tares were doubled by reason of these paymentes, yet theyr hope of better life to come vnder their duke, made them not to esteeme theyr present charges.

Than came themperours neece, the daughter of Denmarke, to Millaine, and there was moste solemnely receiued with infinite triumphes: and finally maryed to the duke in presence of the Cardinal of Mantua, wyth such sestes and plaies afterwardes, as so greate a ma-

riage

riage requyred.

¶ But ere a yere went about, the Duke (through great infyrmitee, blinded of one eye) dyed without issue: leauyng the estate of Myllaine wholly to the emperoure, who euer sens hathe gouerned the same by his lieuetenauntes. The fyrst whereof was named Antonino di Leua, so lame a man of his limmes, that he vsed to be caried on men shoulders: but on the other syde so prudent and ware a capitaine in his doinges, as in his daies was not lightly to be founde agayne.

¶ Nexte vnto whom folowed the Marques of Vasco a very honourable and courtlye man, but not altogether so happye in hys procedynges as suche noble men couuette to be.

Finally after his death the emperoure hathe placed there the famouse Don Ferrando Gonzaga, vncle to the Duke of Mantua, whose prosperitee hathe not onelye been greate in feates of warre, but also wonderfull in purchasing of fame, through the sincere and rare administracion of iustice, that he vseth.

I call it not rare for other cause, than for the rare correction he hath vsed against the offendours, whereby he hath wonne the hertes of them that loue iustice.

As for the progresse of the thynges happened in the state of Myllaine, sens the death of Francesco Sforza (in whome it semeth the house of Visconti to haue taken his ende) I shal not needе here to make any rehersall, because on the one syde the dooynges of the same haue not been very great: and on the other side they are present and familiare.

Of

of Monferrato, that the last Duke had by the mariage of his wyfe, so that now the Duke of Mantoa's rentes by estimacion are reckened at .130000. duckates or there aboutes.

And as for notable buildynges in Mantua, other than suche as be vniuersall in the goodly cities of Italie, I finde none, sauyng certaine proper lodgeinges that the duke Federico deceased, hath made on the south parte of his palaice, whych vndoubtedly are galaunt and riche. Wherfore proceedyng nowe to the originall of the citesins and citee, with the succesle therof hitherwards.

¶ The Originall of Mantua.

By agrement of moste auctheurs I finde, that the people of Mantua are descended of those auncient Tuscanes, that before the siege of Troy departed out of Lydia in Asia, and vnder the leadynge of their prince Tirreno, came and enhabyted the region of Italye. Parte of whyche Tuscanes, cholsyng afterwardes the place of Mantua for their habitacion, buyloed the citee, before the comyng of Eneas into Italye, and before the edificacyon of Rome, more than .300. yeres. The capitaine of whyche people at that tyme was named Ogno, a very expert man in Astronomy, or in the science of diuinacyon. For his vertue in which science, folowynge the Greke worde Mantis, he named the citee Mantua. How be it, Dante (speakynge thereof) referreth the beginnyng of Mantua to Manto, daughter of Tiresia, kynge of Thebes: whom the poetes feigne, lost his sight for iudgeing betwene Iupiter and Juno,

that the woman in the vse of nature had moze pleasure than the man: taken for iudge in this matter, because (through the killynge of certayne serpentes) he before tyme had ben chaunged from a man to a woman, & had vsed in bothe kyndes. So that Iupiter in recompence of his sight (that Iuno had taken from him) gaue hym the science of diuination, and he haupnge a doughter afterwardz, according to that science named hir Manto who comyng into Italy was aucthour bothe of the beginnynge and also of the name of Mantua. But howe soeuer it were, I find, that ones it was destroied by Attila kyng of the Goti, and after by Agilulfo kyng of the Lumbardes, thyrdly by Cacciano king of Bauiera, and lastly by the Hungaryens. And than being redified

1063 Nicolas the second bysshop of Rome held a generall counsaile ther, in the which these holy Pilates (I wold say prelates) decreed, that from thenseforth the bishops of Rome shulde be elected by the college of Cardinals, to the intent the emperours should haue no moze to do wythal. At the tyme of which counsaile, Matilda doughter of the Conte Bonifacio, was lady of Mantua.

This Conte Bonifacio was lord of the cities of Luca, Parma, Reggio, Mantua, and Ferrara, called altogethers at that time. Il Patrimonio, and was so greate a man, that he obteygned vnto wyfe Beatrice, sister of Henry the secound emperour of Almayne. Whiche Beatrice after hir husbands death gouerned the whole dominion prosperes, and was finally buried in Pisa: leuyng hir doughter Matilda before named with an husband named Godfrey in the affate.

Matilda Matilda after the death of hir husband Godfrey ma-

ryed a

rſed againe, and at length found meane to be diuorſed: inſomuch that dying without iſſue ſhe lefte hir whole eſtate vnto the church of Rome, and was buryed in the abey of. S. Benette de Bondeno beſides Mantua.

After whoſe death the citee of Mantua was gouerned by Romaine vicares & legates, vntill aboutes the yere of grace. 1220. one Sordello founde the meanes to be principal gouernor therof: the myghtieſt man of bodye and ſtrength that was in thoſe daies, inſomuch that being prouoked many times to feight, he alwaies remained vanquiſher. Through the notable fame wherof the Frenche kyng ſent for hym, and beyng arriued in hys preſence, merily ſayd vnto him: he beleeued not that he ſhuld be Sordello: wherwith Sordello being offended, incontinently tourned his backe without ſpeaking any word: and beyng called againe, was demaunded by the French king, what he meaned ſo ſodeinly to tourne his backe, he aunſwered: I wolde haue retourned to Mantua to bryng witneſſe, that I am Sordello. Sordello

He maried one of the doughters of Ezelino da Romano, who firſt being enamoured on him, vſed ſecretly to departe from hir fathers houſe, & goe to Mantua vnto him. Whereof Ezelino at length hauynge knowlage, tempted by meane of his doughter, that Sordello ſhoulde haue betraied the Mantuanes into his handes, but Sordello wolde neuer conſent therunto, inſomuch that at laſt Ezelino came him ſelfe and beſyeged Mantua, hoppynge to gette it by force. But all in vayne, for after he had lien before it certaine daies, he finally was conſtreigned to raiſe his ſiege, and not long after dyed. So that ỹ Mantuanes prouoked through that example

immediately endeuored them selues to fortify their cities with diches and water, to the ende that in time to come their victailes might not easily be cutte from them. And in short space after fel in contention with the Cremonese for the possession of the ryuer of Oglio. In which time the notablest families of Mantua were the Poledroni (that had chaced awaye the Crabroni) and next them were the Ariotti, the Caccialodi the Grassolani, and the Agnelli, but at length the Buona Colsi became most puissant of all the rest, the heade of which house was named Pinamonte, who beynge conspired against by all the other forenamed families, founde the meane to ouercome all their forces. And beyng elected with an other named Ottonelso, vnto the chiefest office of iudgement vppon life and death for terme of .vi. monethes, he founde the meane also to slea hys colleage, and vsurpe the dominion ouer the citee by force.

Pinamonte. Neuertheless afterwardes he behaued hym selfe so well, that throughe his gentle and iuste dealynges, he gatte the citesins fauoure, and continued in the estate 18. yeres. After whom succeded Bardelaio, yll beloued of all men: and next him Botticello indifferentlye well beloued: on the other syde. But last of all Passerino enioied the domynyon, whose sonne named Francesco, Passerino. caused the destruction of his father, of him selfe, and of their other kinne and frendes by this meane.

Amongest his manye friendes Philippino, sonne of Luigi Gonzaga was one. Of whom this Francesco began to conceiue a ialousy touchyng his wyfe: and so much encreased this suspicion, that beyng on a day (as the maner is) greeted by Philippino, he churlishly answered,

swered, that he wolde be euen with hym, by forlynge his wyfe againe openly in the marbette place. The arrogancye of which aunswere so much enflamed the innocent hert of Philipino, that incontinentlye he began to imagine how to be auenged: not on Francesco alone but also on the father Passerino considerynge that the one coulde not be well done without the other. And so, declaryng the terrible wordes of Francesco, lamented the case vnto hys brother Guido Gonzaga, & to dyuers other of his friends and kinne: who all togethers with the helpe of Cane lord of Scala, determined to dispatch Passerino. And at the daye appoynted assembled in armes in the market place, and there slew Passerino, as he fledde towardes his owne house to haue saued hym selfe. So that whan Passerino was slayne, the house of Gonzaga toke on it the dominion, banished diuers of the contrary part, beheaded Francesco, & therwith ceased from further cruelties against their ennemies: by commaundemente of the forenamed Luigi Gonzaga, that first of that name was lord of Mantua.

¶ This familie of Gonzaga had his beginninge of one Luigi Tedesco an Almaine of royall bloudde, who (in the tyme that all Italy was in armes, and so many armies about Rubicone) had taken place for hym and all his familie at Mantua. Of whom afterwardes descended this Luigi Gonzaga before named, that aboute the yere of grace. 1328. began his dominion ouer Mantua, and gouerned the same afterwardes the space of 53. yeres. He had three wiues, and by euerye wyfe three sonnes: By the first he had Guido, Philippino, and Feltrino. By the second Currado, Alberto, and Federico,

Gonzaga.

Luigi. Gonzaga.

derico. And by the thyrd, Azo, Iacopo, and Glouanni. Iasomuche that there hapened in Mantua thre notable mariages of that house in one time, Luigi him selfe to his last wife of the house of Malespini: Currado hys son to the sister of Mastino della Scala, & Ugolino his sons son borne of Guido, vnto a little girle of Beccari di Pauia. At which mariage there assembled a wonderful number of people: insomuch ỹ Luigi him selfe gaue away amongest nobles & gentilmen. 120. goodly horses. ¶ After the succesle of these thynges whilest Philippino was followyng the warres, in seruice of the kynge of Hungarie against the kyng of Naples, there hapned a mischaunce vnto the house of Gonzaga.

¶ Isabell wyfe of Lucchino Visconti: lorde of Mylaine, a verie fayre woman, feigned to hir husband, that she had made a vow to goe in pylgrimage vnto Venice and vnder that colour, obteignynge lycence, she toke Mantua in hir waye, where she lodged in the house of Gonzaghi, auncient frends vnto hir husband. And after she had supped, secretelye sente for Ugolino, vnto whom she declared, that for the feruent loue she bare to him, she had taken on hir that iourney: prayynge hym therfore to kepe hir company vnto Venice.

This thing came to the eares of Lucchino, who prouoked therby, laied syege to Mantua. Neuertheless findyng the frendes of Vgolino innocent of the fault and that Guido the father did his best to correct him, Lucchino, through intercession leuied the syege: And shortly after Luigi Gonzaga, of the age of .93. dyed, hauynge led an happie life, to see so many forewarde persones to the .iii. and fourthe degree of hys owne generacion.

After

After whom Guido his eldest sonne entred into the state, and whilest the empyre was vacant, by the helpe of his brother Philippino, gatte Lamporeggio, and contended longe tyme in armes with Obizone Matques of Ferrara: who at lengthe was ouercomen by Philippino, and with great losse constreigned to withdraw hym home vnto Ferrara. Guido

This Guido had, iii. sonnes, Vgolino, Francesco, and Luigi. And because the two younger perceiued, that the father fauoured more the eldest, they tokynge counsaile together, determined to ridde hym out of the waye: and so biddynge hym to supper on an euenynge, slew hym.

This vnnaturall parte of the sonnes was suppozed of the poloyonse father as well as nature wolde suffer it. But because the correction therof should haue drawen moze blondde of his awne, he therfoze sought to abate his passion with the new mariage of his sonne Francesco vnto the doughter of Guido Polenta, lozde of Rauenna, Neuertheleste Bernabo Visconti, vncle to the wife of Vgolino, to auenge Vgolino's death (after he had first sette away his neece) laied siege to Mantua: by reason wherof Guido was constreygned to sue foz helpe to the emperour Charles, that than warred in Italye: who befoze time going towardes hys coronacion, and passyng through Mantua, had ben there moste honourably receiued, by Luigi father of Guido: so that by the emperours meanes the matter was remedyed, and within shozt space after died Guido and his sonne Francesco bothe.

And than came the estate clerelye to Luigi, who buyl- Luigi
ded the

ded the palaice, wherin all his succeſſours to this daye haue dwelled. He begatte on his wyfe Alda, a ſonne named Franceſco, whom he maried verye yonge vnto Agneſa, doughter of Bernabo Miſconti, and at laſte being knowen openly to haue committed aduoutrie, the people aroſe and cruelly ſlew hym.

Franceſco. After whoſe death the aſtate deſcended to his ſonne Franceſco, than beynge of the age of .xiiii. yeares. But growen afterwardes to more yme, he ſo muche loued peace that he refuſed to enter into confederacion, with Giangaleazo Duke of Myllaine. And vppon diſpleaſure therfore folowyng betweene them, Franceſco cauſed the adder (that for the great amitee and alyance betweene thoſe two houſes had in tyme paſt been foygned to the armes of Mantua) to be cleane taken oute therof. For whyche deſpite Giangaleazo beſieged Mantua, and laye before the ſame an whole yere, in whyche meane time there periſſhed many notable men on both ſydes, and ſpecially of the houſe of Gonzaga. 4. that is to wete, Guido, Torello, Bartolino, and Galeazo. Which Galeazo Gonzago amongeſt al other was reputed the ſtrongeſt & hardieſt man of his dates, hauing fought oftentymes bodye to bodie, and remained euermore vainquiſher, namely againſt Buccialdo a notable ſtronge man the gouernour of the Frenche kynge in Genoa. Theſe buſineſſe at length beynge pacifyed, and Franceſco somwhat awakened in armes, he enterpriſed warre in the name of Giangaleazo agaynſte the Bologneſe, and againſt Giouanni Bentiuogli, in the thicke whereof he toke Jacopo Carraro of Padoa priſoner, and led hym to Mantua, geuyng hym ſuche curteyſe li-

teyse libertee there, that yeldyng vnkyndnesse for kindnesse Iacopo escaped awaye: whereof solowed muche adoe afterwardes. For allone as the Duke of Myllaine was dead, the Venetians (considryng the prouoked displeasure before rehersed) elected the sayde Francesco to be their generall in thenterprise agaynste the Carrari, and were so well serued of hym, that after he had chased the Carrari out of Padoa and Verona, he reduced bothe thosecitees to the Venetian obedyence: And so after a glorypouse lyse dyed. 1407

Leauinge after him hys sonne Gianfrancesco in the domynyon of the age of. 14. yeares, who by hys wyfe Paola, daughter of Malatesta, lorde of Rimini, had. 4. sonnes, Luigi, Carlo, Lucido, and Alexandro. To the fyrst wherof he obteyned for wyfe Barbera daughter of the Marques of Brandenburghe, and kinneswoman vnto the emperour Edmond, who at his comming into Italy, and passing through Mantua, was there honourablie receiued by Gianfrancesco, insumuche that before his departure he made hym Marques, and gaue hym in his armes the ensigne of the empire. Gianfrancesco.

After the atteigning of whych honours he was thre seuerall times made generall of the Venetians, and in euery enterprise gat the vpper hande. And at lasse forsakyng them, he was waged againste them by Philippo Duke of Myllaine; and in that seruice in companye of Niccolo Piccinino was part of the occasion, that the Venetians than lost the citee of Verona: with many other townes of the Brescane and Vicentine: so he died leauynge his dominion diuided in iiii. partes vnto hys foure sonnes. To Luigi (as eldest) the citee of Mantua, 1443

with those other townes that he had aboute Verona, to Carlo (who was an excedynge stronge man) Lucera, with the rest of those lands that he held on Cremonese territorie. To Lucido (ill shapen and weake of person) Capriana, La Volta, and Ciregiata: and finallye Alexandro (who was crokebacked, and becomen religious) Canneto, with that land that he had on the Brestane.

Luigi ¶ Thus Luigi the eldest toke the astate vpon hym, and continued not longe in the same vnuexed of his brother Carlo, whose myghtynesse and force of bodye was coupled with such an haultenesse of mynde, that for despyte of astreigning his elder brothers astate, he coulde not be contented to liue in peace.

¶ And al be it that in the warres betwene Francesco Sforza, & the Milanese he fled from one part to another and backe againe: yet by his brothers meanes he recouered the fauour of Sforza, at whose hands he receiued dyuers benefytes. But Luigi, seing now the ill disposition of his vnquiete mynde, finallye toke from him all the landes that his father lefte hym: so that Carlo fledde to the Venetians, and became their captaine, so long till at length throughe their helpe he assembled a power of men, wente againste his brother, and foughte with hym to the ieopardye of the lose of the Mantuan astate. But in conclusion the right of Luigi preuailed againste the force of Carlo, who beyng discomfited and fledde, died afterwardes very poorely in exile.

¶ This enterpryse beynge thus ouercomen, and the thynges of the astate quieted, Luigi triumphantlye receiued the emperoure Federico the thyrde, as he passed

through

through Mantua to Rome, and beyng than a widower by the death of his first wife, maried Margarite doughter of the duke of Bauiera, and consen to the forenamed emperoure.

¶ He was so great of body that he was commonly called the Turke, so well exercised in armes, and so beloued specially of the Dukes of Millaine, that duke Philippo called him sonne, Francesco called hym brother, and Galeazo called him father.

¶ He was noble of courage, fine of wytte, and somewhat learned, which thinges together with his liberall and courteise lyfe, made him beloued of all men.

¶ Finally through some disorder in liuyng, as he that loued to liue in pleasure, he dyed somewhat before the full course of his naturall terme. Leauing by his first wife Barbara. v. sonnes, Federico: Francesco made Cardinall, Luigi, Gianfrancesco, and Rodolfo, all notable and vertuouse persons.

Federico as eldest, succeded in the estate, and was afterwardes generall to the duke of Millaine, and maryed La Margerita Tedesca, on whom he begat a sonne named Fräcesco: and in the Venetian warres against the duke of Ferrara, hauing gotten Asola which after warues he was constreigned by force to restore, sickned for sorow and dyed. Federico

¶ By reason wherof his sonne Francesco, of the age of 18. yeares, entred into the estate, & at the age of. 38. was made generall of the Venetians, in whose seruice he did wonders: specially against Charles the eyghte French kyng, nere vnto ỳ riuer of Taro beside Parma, as the same kyng retourning from the conquest of the realme Francesco

of Naples, laden with great richelle, was goynge into Fraunce. In which enterpryse Francesco so behaued him selfe, that he led manye noble men pryseners with him at his retourne, insomuch that the Frenche kynge made verie greate offers to haue had hys seruyce, but al in vaine. For continuing his ennemy he afterwards fought with the french men in Puglia and so discomfited them, that he restored the kyng Ferrantino vnto hys astate. And leauyng three sonnes by his wife Beatrise, doughter of Ercole, duke of Ferrara, that is to wete, Federico the nexte succeded him, Ercole made Cardinall, and Don ferrando that nowe is the emperours general at Millaine, finally he dyed.

Federico. 1520

After whose death, Federico toke the astate vpon him and was made generall of the Romaine churche by bishop Lyon the.x. confirmed by Adrian the.vi. and continued also vnder Clemente the.vii. And as the emperour (that nowe is) retourned from hys coronacyon at Bologna, passinge throughe Mantua (where he was moste honourably receiued) his maiestee, for the vertue, worthinesse, and nobilitee knowen in this Federico called hym frō the degre of Marques, & created him duke. He maried Margerite doughter and heire of the lord Guglielmo Paleologo, Marques of Monferrato, in whose right by fauoure of the emperours maiestee, he obteigned hir fathers astate, that is to say, the dominion of Monferrato. And so notably fortifynge the citee of Mantua, he died, leauinge .iiii. sons, Francesco Guglielmo, Lodouico, and federico.

1539

Francesco

Francesco after his fathers death entred into the dominion, but because he was than of very tender yeres,

and

and passeth not yet the age of.14. his father by testamēt committed the gouernaunce of hym vnto his wife, with the helpe and counsaile of his brother Ercole the Cardinall, vntil the yong duke shal be growen to sufficient yeres: who by the parentes consente, and by the emperours procurement, hathe bene contracted vnto one of kyng ferdinando's doughters, and shal mary hir very shortly, as the sayinge is.

¶ Of the state of Ferrara.

Ferrara is one of the notablest Cities of Lumbardye, aswel for the beautie and greatenesse, as also for the stronge sites and fortification. ¶ First for beautie, it that part, that is called La terra nuoua had ben thoroughly finished: as it was deuised, it should haue bene worthie for faire stretes, to haue bene preferred before any other cities that I haue seen. And nowe as it is, I thinke it no lesse worthy. For you shall finde aboue a douzen strectes so iust and euenly sette forthe, that I warrante you there is not so muche as the corner of a house to let a man of his ful sight from the tone end to the tother. Some of whyche strectes lacke lyttell of a myle longe, with the goodly houses and buildynges on bothe sydes so fayre and vniforme, that it semeth all dooen at one tyme and by one agrement, as no doubte the most part hath been in deede. And than in the myd-

deft it hath a very fayre greene, appointed oute for the market place. But the Duke that now is, hath had no mynde to folow it, although his father Alfonfo beftowed the moft trauaile of all his dates about it, to his wonderful charge: as he that fhall fee it maye well confider. So that the moft habitacion of people refteth ftyl in the olde parte of the cytee, whyeh is alfo indyfferente fayre, but nothynge comparable to the newe. Than as touchynge the greatneffe, I thinke the circuite by the walles be lyttle leffe than .6. myles. And finallye for ftrength it hath the goodlieft and ftrongeft wal, and the largeft diche, well watered, that I haue feen: fpecially for three partes to the lande warde. And as for the fourth part, though the wall be not fo ftronge, yet is it reputed of no leffe force on that fide, than on the other, by reafon that within .20. yardes of the wall, the great riuer of Po, hathe his courfe downe towardes the fea: whyche renneth fo fwyfte, and is fo broade and deepe, that it is not to be paffed of any enemy to geue aflaults to the downe.

¶ The duke hath vnder his dominion two other cittes that is to wete, Modona, and Reggio, wyth a good part of the low countreys of Romagna, and may difpende yerely by eftimacion betwene .200. and .250000. ducates: and is eftemed verie riche, becaufe he hathe had no warre, nor other charge of importaunce, for the fpace of .xiii. yeres or more, that he hathe gouerned the eftate.

The

¶ The Originall and succesſe of the Citee.

LIke as of other places be oyuers opinyons, euen ſo is there of the beginnyng, and name of Ferrara Some woull, that the name therof hath growen of a certaine quantitee of yron, that the ſame citee ꝑlded for a tribute vnto the lorde of Rauenna: as Argenta, and Aureolo haue alſo doen of the payemente of ſyluer and golde. Some other woull, that it be ſo called of the mynes of yron that haue bene founde there, whyche opinion is moſt ſenſible, conſidering that Ferrara (after the vſe of the latine tounge) ſignifyeth none other but the place where yron is digged, forth, as Cæſar in hys commentaryes, the.viii. boke of the Frenche warres, and as Liuie in the forthe of the Macedonycall warres doe affyrme.

But to paſſe ouer theſe antiquitiees, and come nerer to our purpoſe, I finde, that the ſaid citee of Ferrara was firſt cloſed with walles by one Smeraldo, captaine for the Greekiſh emperour in Rauenna: and long time after (beyng a certaine ſpace vnder the obedièce of Henry the ſecound emperour of Almaine) it was recouered by the counteſſe Matilda, doughter of the Cõte Bonefacio as hir right enheritaunce, through helpe of the Venetians, and of the lordes of Rauenna, out of the handes of Henry the thirde than emperoure: whiche Conteſſe at hir death, with other hir poſſeſſions, lefte it vnto the vſe of the Romaine churche: inſomuche that longe tyme it was gouerned of vicares & of legates, vntill the houſe of Eſſe gatte the rule thereof. Who firſt obteigned it

700.

1020.

vnder

vnder condicion, that they should for euer hold it in fee of the churche of Rome.

And to reste the beginnyng of that house, some thinke the same is descended of those auncient Troianes, that came with Anthenor into Italy: and some other would, that their stocke shoulde be of a certayne towne called Este, nowe vnder the Venetian domynion, lyynge. xv. miles frō Padoa, on the southside of the Padoan hilles From which towne (they say) this family of Este came to dwell in Ferrara. But howe soeuer it be, the fyrste notable man of that house, that ruled Ferrara, was named Azo, who at his death lefte issue two sonnes, Aldobrandino, and Azo: the fyrste entred in possessyon, an lyuing but a shorte space, lefte the estate vnto Azo the second his younger brother.

Azo. 1 Aldobrandino.

Azo. 2. This Azo was driuen out of it by Federike the emperour, and one Salinguerra put there in his place: insomuch that Azo for succoure resorted vnto a certayne Ferrarese named Gregory Pontelungo being at that time Romysh legate in the citee of Bologna: by whose meanes, with helpe of the Venetians, of the Mantuanes, and of Ezelino, than lorde of Verona, brother in lawe vnto this Azo: Salinguerra was by force expulsed, and Azo restored vnto his estate: vppon condicyon that he shoulde hold it for euer as vicar of the churche, and none otherwyse.

Now this Azo the second hauing by his firste wyfe a sonne, named Fresco, maryed agayne the secounde daughter of the kyng of Naples, named Beatrise: whiche mariage so much offended his sonne Fresco (as he that was desirous to reigne) that prysonyng his father

Cruelte

put

put hym vnto death, and after with helpe of the Venetians toke on him the estate.

But his owne citesins, abhorryng so greate a cruelte, procured so much the Romish legate Palagurra to the vengeaunce of Fresco, that both Fresco and the Venetians were excommunicated, and war moued against them: the generall wherof was named Diego Catelano a Spanyarde. Fresco.

Now Fresco warynge more cruell throughe these businesses than before, put to death all those of his subiectes, that were contrarye to hym, and after burned the one halfe of the citee, purposynge to destroye the whole. But the furie of the people was so moued therby, that takynge weapon in hande, they sought hym, and as he woulde haue fled out at the Lyon gate, slewe hym. And Rinaldo his brother (to whome of right the estate ought to haue descended) was also dead in prison. Cruelte

So than Obizone, sonne of Rinaldo, toke on hym the estate: and was the firste that began to enlarge hys dominion through the gettyng of Modena and Reggio. Obizone

And after Obizone succeded Azo his sonne, the .iii. of that name, who delited much in armes: many times attemptyng to conquere Parma and Bologna: and at lengthe dyed without issue. Azo. 3

Leauynge hys estate vnto his nephewes Rinaldo and Niccolo, sonnes of his brother Aldobrandino. Rinaldo.

This Rinaldo desirouse to encrease his dominion, with the helpe of Passerino Buona Colsi, than lord of Mantua, obteined Argenta, & after ioignyng his power with an army of the lordes of Scala, laied siege to the towne of San felice on the Modenese. Which towne the king

Reggio, wherof ther folowed so sharpe warre betwene them, that Obizone, mistrustyng his owne power, yelded the citee of Parma into the handes of Lucchino Visconti, and finally leauyng issue two sonnes, Nicolo and Alberto, dyed.

After whom Nicolo the eldest succeded, beyng alwaies fast frende to the Romaine bysshoppes, in whose fauour manye tymes he soughte with Bernabo Visconti, and had the better, specyallye in that notable iourney that happened betwene them on the Brescane territory nere to the hyll Mozlano. Nicolo

He purchased also of Giouanni Aguto, an English capitayne, the citee of Faenza, for 20000 duckates, and boughte also the towne of Baguacauallo, thoughe he kept it long, for Astorgio Manfredi gatte it from him by treason.

Finally he dyd muche for hys citeslins, and greatly augmented Ferrara.

He was eloquente, mercyfull and learned, constante both of nature and of countenaunce, and so liberall, that he neuer repulsed person that soughte benefyte at hys handes. At laste dying wythout issue, he lefte his astate vnto his brother Alberto, who also at hys deathe, hauyng no lawful chylde, left it vnto Nicolo his bastarde sonne, than beyng but a chylde. Alberto

Nowe was there one Azo of the house of Este, that seing Nicolo yet tender of yeares, vnder the gouerne of tutours, and vnapte to rule, dis as much as he could to prenayle hym selfe. But with the helpe of the Venetians, of the Florentines, and of the Bolognese, Nicolo was not onely maintained in the astate, but Azo for his Nicolo

presumpcion confined also into Candia. And afterwardes beyng growen vnto age, this Nicolo became so mortall ennemye vnto Ottone, Lorde of Parma, that feignynge at lengthe to mete with hym for a treatye of peace, caused him secretly to be slayne by the waye, by meane of Sforza Cotignola, & so recouerd the cities of Reggio & Parma, that Ottone before had occupied.

¶ After the which, being all geuen vnto the commoditee of Ferrara, he builded the great palaice or castell in the herte of the cite, wherin the Dukes euer sens haue dwelled: and besides that the palaices of Ficcarolo, and of Bellosguardo, and toke vnto wife the doughter of Francesco Vecchio da Carrara. By reason whereof he became enemie to the Venetians, and prouoked against his selfe a daungerouse warre.

¶ But finally in feates of armes he became excellente, and in the gouernyng of his affaire verye prudente, and of suche reputacion, that he caused the generall counsaile of that time to be kepte in Ferrara. At the whyche the emperour of Grece happened to be present: and not long after he died, leauynge two bastarde sonnes, Lionello and Borso, and two lawful sonnes by his second wife, of the bloud of the Marqueses of Saluzo, named Ercole, and Gismondo.

¶ Of whom, Lionello beyng the eldest succeded in the affaire, by what reason I cannot tell, but that the father wolde so.

Lionello.

This Lionello was a verye wyse man, and in his time made of new the wall of Ferrara on the side of the Po, and amended the houses and stretes on that part of the cite. And because his sonne Nicolo, whom he had begotten

gotten on the doughter of Gianfrãcesco Gonzaga was a verie childe at the time of his death, on his death bed he committed his estate to his brother Borso, beseching him, that whan his sonne Nicolo shulde be growē vnto sufficient age, he wold vouchesafe to restore it vnto him.

¶ Thus entred Borso into the dominion, and incontinẽtly reuoked his bretherne Ercole & Gismõdo, whom Lionello had before cõfined into the realme of Naples, and to the entent there shuld grow none enuy betweene them, he alwayes nourished them together a like. Borso,

He fortified Ferrara with stronge walles, and builded the Charterhouse of the same: and was of so good a nature, that he wolde offer no man wrong, but rather forgetting those that were done vnto him, he was wont to saye: That soner and with more ease shuld a man ouercome his enemye by benefytes and curtesye than by swoorde or vengeaunce.

¶ He delited much in rennyng men, and kepte syners about him, as well of learned as of others. And finally was so worthy a man, that the emperour Federico passing through his dominion, of his owne motion created him Duke.

After the death of Borso, Nicolo the sonne of Lionello, according to the couenaunte made betwene Borso and his father, succeded in the estate. Nicolo,

¶ He ruled not longe, but the right heyre Ercole, before named, with helpe of the Venetians, by force expulsed hym, in suche wyse that for succoure he fledde to his vncle to Mantua, where after the terme of thre yeres, assembling about an. 800. banished men, he attempted to recouer Ferrara: & watchynge his time whilest Ercole,

Ercole was forth of the citee, by night skaled the walls and came to the market place, crying Vela, Vela (whiche was his enseigne) but there was none of his frendes so hardy, as to arise to succour him: so that Gismondo brother to Ercole (seyng the weakenesse of Niccolo's succours) gathered together suche power as that hasty rumour allowed, and not only discomfyted Niccolo's companye, but also toke hym, with .xx. of hys men prysoners, and broughte hym vnto Lionora the wyfe of Ercole doughter to Ferrando kynge of Naples: who sente for the Duke vnto Bellosguardo. And so within iii. dayes after (the Duke beyng retourned vnto Ferrara) Nicolo lost hys head, and was neuertheles honourablie buryed amongest hys auncestours.

Not longe after the Florentines (at that time troubled by the bishop of Rome, and the kynge of Naples) elected thys duke Ercole for theyr general, who accordingly serued them very honorably.

Finally fallynge out wyth the Venetians for the breache of certaine articles betwene them, what with war and wyth hunger he was so oppressed, that had he not obteyned the bishop of Romes fauour, he myght easily haue lost hys estate. After whyche enterprises, beynge generall of the Venetians, and of the Mylanese both, and vtterly suppressing his aduersaryes the erles of sayncte Bonifacio, at last he disposed hym selfe altogethers to religious workes: and amongest all other with his owne handes he dayly distributed to .13. poore men for goddes sake, two poundes of flesshe, a measure of wyne, three loues of breade, and a little peece of money, vnto euery one of them, and than dyed.

Leauyng

Leauyng hys astate vnto hys sonne Alfonsa, who proued so worthy a man, that notwithstanding he had maried Lucretia, daughter of Alexandro bishop of Rome, yet whan the same bishoppe by force offred to take from hym the countrey of Romagna, he resisted so valiantely, that the byshop was fayne to forgoe hys enterpryse. The lyke wherof he dyd vnto byshoppe Leon the.x. that purposed to haue taken Ferrara from hym. Alfonso.

And thus haupnge by Lucretia hys fyrste wyfe three sonnes, Ercole Hippolito nowe Cardynall, and Don Francesco: and by Laura hys secounde wyfe two sonnes, Alfonso and Alfonsino, he dyed.

¶ After whose death Ercole as eldest sonne, entred into the astate, and at this day enioyeth the same. Ercole.

¶ And albeit, that hitherto there haty happened no notable occasion to trie hys worthynesse, yet can he not chose, but prone well. For he is a goodly man of personage, byghe of stature, stronge and well proporcyonate in all his members, bald on the crowne of the head, and amiable enough of countenance. He hath a good witte and is somwhat learned, and indifferent in the administracyon of iustice. And one thyng special I remember of him, worthy to be recited. Themperour at his being in Italy borowed money of all handes. And demaundyng amongest the rest. 100000. crownes in lone, of this duke, he brought him a bagge of. 50000. crownes: excusyng him selfe, that to lend. 100000. crownes he was not hable, but to geue his maiestee those. 50000. he could be contented with all his hert: and by this shift kept the other. 50000. crownes in hys purse.

Finally of the religion he is no more earnest than most

princes

princes are, and in his life he soloweth the court of loue, to lose no time of pleasure.

¶ He is frendly to faire women, and cherisheth change By his fathers daies he maried madame Renea daughter vnto Lewys the.xii. frenche kinge, a very gracious lady. By whom he hath two sonnes, Alfonso, and Luigi. Hitherto he hath mainteined his dominion in peace, and is therfore thought (as I haue sayd) to be very ryche. He is well furnisshed of artillerie and munition: and of deuocion is altogether Frenche. So that if there shuld happen any businesse in Italy betwene the emperour and french king, his part is like to be therin

¶ The astate of Placentia. and Parma.

PLacentia and Parma are two notable citees of Lumbardy, lynge betwene the Appepine hylles and the riuer of Po: whose territory and pastures are so fatte and swete, that it is thought no place of al Europe hable to compare with it for the excellent cheses it maketh, whych by the name of Parmesanes are right wel knowen ouer all.

¶ These two citees of late appertained vnto the churche of Rome. But Paule the thyrd, nowe bysshop of the same, a Romaine of nacion, of the houle of Farnesi, to en-

to encreaſe his owne famille, found the meane to ſepa-
rate theſe two cities wyth theyr territoryes from the
churches dominyon, & to geue it vnto his owne ſonne
named Peter Aluigi, creatyng him Duke therof. And
in recompence annexed vnto the church the Duchie of
Camerino, that he before had taken by force from the
duke of Vrbine.

¶ This Pietro Aluigi, beynge the yere of oure lorde
1546. entred into the eſtate, beganne to beare him ſelfe
ouerſtoutly againſt the nobilitee of the fame, & ſpecial-
ly towards the Signor Ieronimo Pallauicini di Cor-
te Maggiore, who rather diſdeignynge then enuiynge
this mãs dominion, was faine at laſt to flee, & to habã-
done wyfe and children, goodes and landes. In ſo mu-
che that this new duke toke all vnto him ſelfe, and fur-
niſhed the caſtel out of Corte Maggiore (being a very
ſtronge holde) with his owne men, toke all the rentes
(beyng. 12000 duckates a yeare) to his owne purſe,
except a ſmall portion aſſigned to the ladie wife of Ie-
ronimo, for hir liuynge: with condicyon neuertheleſſe,
that if ſhe relieued hir huſband with any part therof, ſhe
ſhould loſe the whole. Beſydes this, he oppreſſed hys
ſubiectes, cauſyng them to bie harneis, and to furniſhe
them ſelfes for the warre on theyr owne coſt. But moſt
of all he occupied a great noumber of labourers in his
woorkes, beginning the foundacion of a ſtrong caſtel,
in the place where the Abbey of. S. Benettes in Pla-
centia ſtode. The monkes whereof he appointed vnto
a ſpittle hous, called ſaint Lazares in Champaine. And
theſe labourers were taken vp by force from all partes
of the Parmeſane and Placentine; of whyche there pe-

ryched at one time, with the fall of an holowe banke a-boue. 50. persons, so that what with one thyng, & what with an other (beyng also a man knowen full of abhominacion in all kinde of vices, and specially in the vnnatural) in conclusion he became hated of all men, in so much that the Conti Giouanni Aguzzolo, and the Conte Augustino di Pallauicini, wyth certayne of theyr kynne and frendes, conspired agaynste hym, and at theyr time appoincted, findyng him with a smal garde in his owne house in Plancense, slew him, hangyng afterwardes the deade body oute at a wyndow for a spectacle vnto the people.

¶ Finally these gentilmen (foreseyng the daunger that for this doyng might folow vnto them, in case the state should continew of the churche) practysed before wyth Don Ferrando Gonzagá, to see whether he wolde backe them, by receiuyng the stronge cities of Placense vnto the emperours behouse: so that being at a poincte with him, the matter was so handled, that the nexte nyght after the dukes death, there were secretly receyued into the towne. 500. of the emperours men, and so the cities wonne without stroke strikynge.

All the money, plate, iewelles and stuffe that could be founde of the Dukes, to the value of 30000. crownes and vpwards, were diuyded amongste the confederates and the Conte Giouanni Aguzzolo, who killed the Duke his owne handes, allowed by the emperoure. 20. men for hys garde.

¶ Finally the bishop of rome (being hereof aduertised) incontinente caused Parma to be fortified, and furnyshed wyth men of warre, and tempted by corruption of

money

money to haue had one of the gates of Placense deliuered hym by night: but his practise was discouerre, and certaine Spanyardes therefore taken and hanged. And euer sens for more than this halfe yere, the emperours power vppon the Placentine, and the bysshoppes on the Parmesane haue kept diligente watche and warde, lokynge euery houre for open war. What it woul proue to, he best knoweth that gouerneth all.

¶ Of the astate of Urbine.

THe Citee of Urbine standeth almoste on the toppe of the Appenyne hilles, in maner betwene the marke of Ancona and Tuscane, the people wherof (as Plinie writeth) haue ben surnamed Petaurensi; & it seemeth to haue taken name of Urbes Binæ, two townes For who that wel considereth the proporcion of it, shal iudge by the mixter facion therof, that it hath beene two townes ioigned togeather, and the middell, whyrhe is a holow descente betwene two hilles, is the slendereste part of the citee.

¶ The Dukes palaice is a very fayre house, but not so excellente as the Conte Baldasar in hys Courtisane doeth commende it.

¶ The dukes dominion is two citees, Urbine and Pesaro: his reuenew passeth not 60000. crownes by the yeare. But his auncestours for the most parte serued other astates, as the Duke that now is also doth, where-

by they

by they kepte muche greatter poyntes than their owne habilitee wolde beare.

¶Amongest other this Dukes father builded an house within a mile of Pesaro, called Imperiale, whyche in mine opinion is one of the best deuised litle thinges that maye lightlye be founde. It standeth on the syde of an hyl, and hath prospect both to the citee and to al the valey, it hathe manye fine little chambers, goodlye open vaultes, and excellēt faire fountaines. But that whych most of all pleased myne eye, was that being of a great height, you may out of the highest gardeine ryde about on the toppe of the house, whiche is verye faire paued with bricke, and railed on bothe sydes with fine pillers and railes of white marble.

As for the edification of Urbine, or other notable memory before the yere. 1345, I finde nothing mete to be written. At whych time (by reason of the variaunce betweene bychop Clement of Rome, and the emperoure Lewis of Bauarie, who to make their parties stronge, made diuers new lordes in Italy) Galasso di Montefeltro was made vicare for the emperour in the citees of Urbine and Eugenio, againste the bychop of Rome and his adherentes: in which his succession contynued enheritours vnto the yeare. 1444. that Federike, after made duke, obteigned the astate. The occasion whereof was, that Guido Conte di Vrbino, hauyng no heire male by his firste wyfe, feigned, that he hadde gotten a Concubine with childe, and so secretely toke the sonne of his nere kinnesman Bernardino della Corda, whiche euen than was newly borne, and namyng it Federike, caused it to be nourished as hys owne.

Galasso di Montefeltro 1345

Conte Guido. 1428

Not.

¶ Not longe after his wyfe died, and marlyng againe, engendred a sonne named Oddo, who in dede succeded the father in hys astate. But he was so vicious of lyuyng, and so busie with gentlimens wifes, that in a sodeine rumour of the people, he was slaine, and a Protonotary, called Carpesiano with him. Oddo 1440

Wherevpon this Federike the putative sonne, by the whole voice of the people was elected their prince: who in hys youthe had ben very well brought vp, specially in feates of armes, in the exercise wherof he lost one of hys eyes. Federico 1444.

¶ This Federike was not only valiaunt, but also very well learned, and so happie a man, that in his tyme he was general of.viii. seueral armies, and died captayne of the Venetians army in the field before Ferrara.

¶ The bysshop of Rome for his worthynesse made hym duke, the kyng of England not onely gaue him mony, but also made hym of the Garter. For whiche curtesye all Englishe men haue a certaine priuilege of fredome in his dominion, and the French kynge made him also of his order. Besides that, there was none astate in Italy, but that at one tyme or other presented hym with some worthy gyfte.

And aboue all the rest his fydelytee semeth to me moste worthy of commendacion. For whan Francesco Sforza, was forsaken of all his other frendes, and pursued with .20000. men, he onely receiued him, and thereby put hym selfe and his whole astate in ieopardy, whyche he determined rather to lose, than to seme an vnfaythful frend, and in effecte maintaygned Sforza tyll time serued him to recouer.

Guido Vbaldo 1482

After the death of Federike, his sonne Guido Vbaldo, of the age of.xii.yeres succeded, who reigned quietly about.xvi.yeres, til the comming of Valentino Borgia, sonne of Alexander the.vi. byshop of Rome: that first by such craft gatte the astate into hys handes, that Guido Vbaldo was fayne to flee disguised in a plowmans clothinge. Neuertheleße throughe the good wyll of his subiectes he recouered his astate in shorte time agayne. But Valentines force was such, that at length this Duke toke suche treasure as he had, and fledde to the Marques of Mantua, whose sister he had maryed: & there dyeng without issue, ended the house of Montefeltro, that had reigned in Vrbine the space of.157. yeres

Valentino Borgia 1503

Valentino Borgia helde it but a verye smalle space, for shortly after his fathers death, July the seconde byshop of Rome persecuted him, and brought the house of Borgia to naughtes: and therupon gaue the astate of Vrbine to his nephewe Francesco Maria Prefettino della Rouere: whom he created duke there.

Francesco Maria 1504.

¶ This Francesco Maria was a very wise and valiant prince, nothinge inferyoure to Federike beforenamed: who reigned not fully.x. yeres, but Leo the.x. that succeded Iulie the.ii made a puissaunt army, and expulsed hym out of his astate, and rased the walles of the citee euen to the earthe. Wherupon he establyshed hys nephewe Juliano di Medici Duke in hys place, and after his death (for he lyued but a while) his brother Laurence di Medici: who continued in the same, tyll Adrian the.vi that succeded Leo, expulsed him, and restored the astate vnto Francesco Maria, that enioyed it til he died, the space of.xvi. yeres in so great reputacion, that

1514.

Juliano di Medici Laurence di Medici,

1522.

all prin-

all princes and astates of Italy loued and honored him and the greatest of them were glad to entertayne hym for their generall in the warres. Wherin he gat infinite summes of money. But he was so greate a builder and so liberall vnto hys souldyours, that whan he dyed, he lefte no kynde of money in his coffers.

By his life time he builded the palaice besides Pesaro, called Imperiale, and fortified the citee of Pesaro, and the castel there, with diuers other goodly buildings, and gatte Katerine daughter and heyre to the Duke of Camerine to be maried vnto his sonne Guido Vbaldo, that now lyueth. In whose right he enioyed that astate duryng the fathers lyfe.

Guido Vbaldo 1538

Alsone as Francesco Maria was dead, Paule the iii. now bysshop of Rome, seyng this Duke that now liueth a younge man, without money or greate friendes, made so greate a power agaynste hym, that for feare to lose the whole, he was contente for a lyttle money and some other smal recompences, to yelde to the bysshop the astate of Camerina, whyche the bysshop hitherto enioyeth. And yet for all this, the same bysshoppe hath founde the meanes to marie his neece to the same duke: whyche at many men meruayle not a lyttel. 1547

Finally this Duke Guido Vbaldo is generall ouer all the Venetians landes, townes, and fortresses, and hath of theim. 10000. crownes annuitee. But hitherto he hath had none occasion of triall in the warres. He is meane of stature, hard of fauour, & very graue in countinaunce. And though he be well learned, his wisedom hath had no great triall as yet, but men trust he woull prouc as vertuouse as his predecessours.

The

¶ The Conclusion.

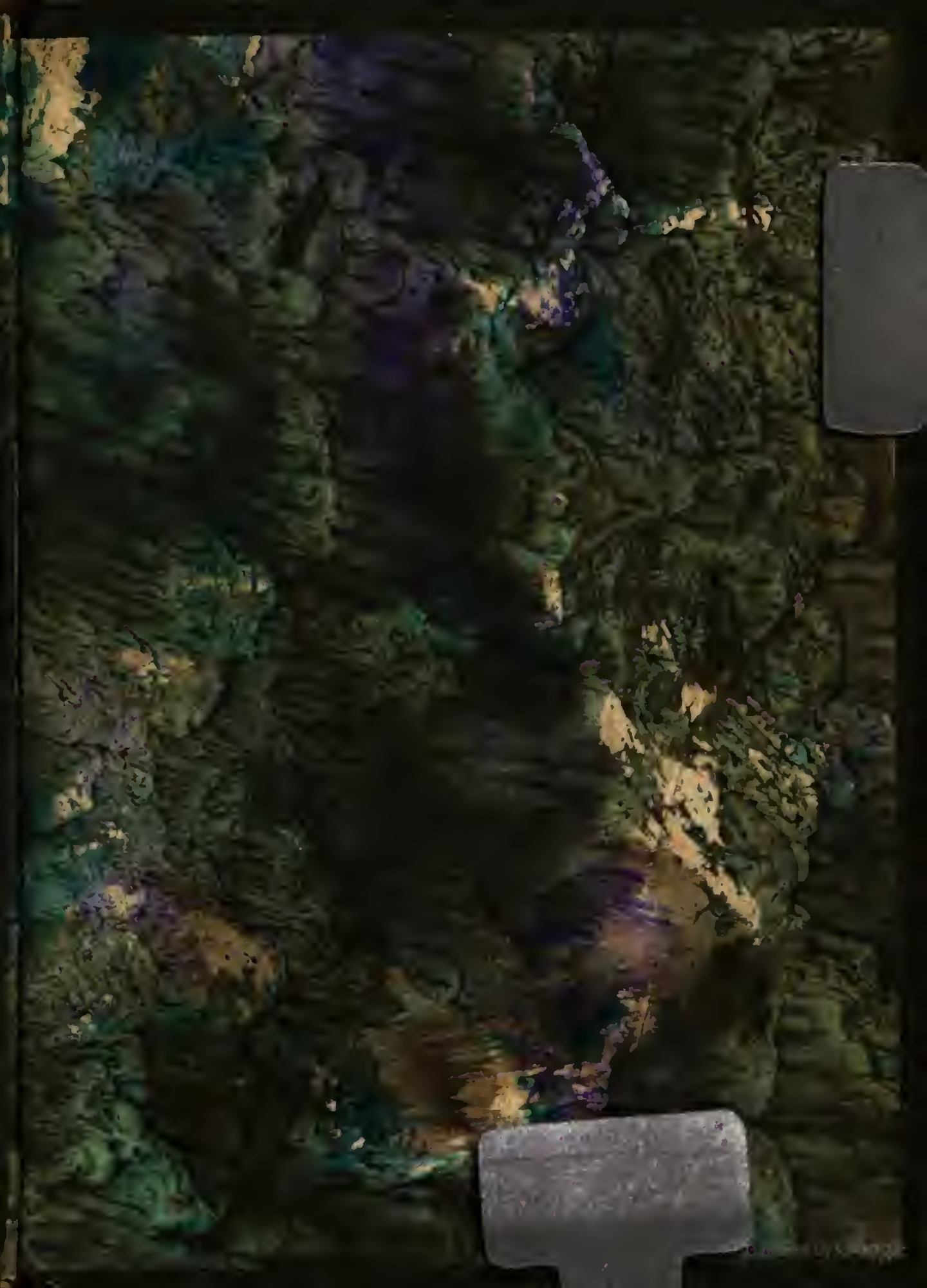
There be dyuers other astates in Italye specially the common wealthes of Siena and Lucca, the bysshoprike of Trent called Tridentum in latine, Piombino, Mirandula, Castel Geffroie, and such like, but because they are not of such reputacion eyther for dominion, power, or continuaunce of yeares, that they should be numbred amongest the principal, I haue forborne to speake particularly of theym, thoughe some in deede deserue notable prayse: beseechyng all gentil readers to accepte my trauaile and diligence, vsed in thys behalfe, as a thinge done for their commodities. And though I want learnyng and eloquence to accomplish so hygh an enterprise, as to describe pithlye the astates of countreis and common wealthes, yet sens I spared no payne, nor labour to doe profite, I wold at the least wyse for my reward craue good reporte.

In the name of th

¶ Imprynted at London in Fletestrete nere to Saincte Dunstons Churche by Thomas Marshe.

Anno Domini. 1561.

1901239 F.N
BIBLIOTECA NAZ. ROMA "VITTORIO EMANUELE"



Digitized by Google